Sakae Esuno

01

BLADE OF EXILE

PARENTAL ADVISORY
WARNING
EXPLICIT CONTENT

...ANY WISH. WHAT WOULD YOU CHOOSE?

YOU HAVE ONE WISH...

Prologue: "World x Me"
Place: Amakusa

"I WANT TO LIVE FOREVER"

SO MANY POSSI-BILITIES.

...

"I WANT TO BE A SINGER."

"I WANT MONEY."

BUT I WAS A LITTLE DIFFERENT.

THIS STORY...

DO (BOOM)

DO

DO

DO

...BEGINS WHEN THE WORLD WAS DESTROYED.

OOO (WHOOSH)

KA (FLASH)

WHAT I WISHED FOR TEN YEARS AGO...

...WAS THE DE-STRUCTION OF THE WORLD.

EVIL

01

Sakae Esuno

BIG ORDER



BIG ORDER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

001 Prologue: “World x Me”
Place: Amakusa

021 Subject 1: “Me x World”
Place: Amakusa

079 Subject 2: “Domination and Submission”
Place: Amakusa

121 Subject 3: “Origin of the Wish”
Place: Dazaifu

155 Subject 4: “Fate of the World Unfolds”
Place: Dazaifu

KYUSHU REGION:
AMAKUSA CITY

SO AS YOU CAN SEE...

THE WORLD WAS BROUGHT TO THE BRINK OF DESTRUCTION BY THIS MYSTERIOUS, CATASTROPHIC PHENOMENON.

YET WE STILL DO NOT KNOW THE CAUSE.

WHEN I WAS LITTLE...

...
I HAD ALL SORTS OF HOPES AND DREAMS.

I WANT TO BECOME EVIL RANGER AND RULE THE WORLD.

THE WISH I TIED TO THE TANABATA TREE...

...WAS YOUR TYPICAL, IMMATURE NONSENSE.

FUWA CYAWND

BUT THAT WAS A LONG TIME AGO.

THEY KNOW I CAN HEAR THEM, RIGHT?

HE'S NEVER HERE, SO I DIDN'T EVEN NOTICE.

HISO

HISO (WHISPER)

SO HOSHIMIYA ACTUALLY SHOWED UP TODAY...?

...OF WHAT WE NOW CALL "ORDERS."

BASICALLY, ABILITY USERS.

オーダー = 能力者

KA (SKRITCH)

COINCIDING WITH THIS GREAT DESTRUCTION WAS THE APPEARANCE ...

BOARD: ORDER = ABILITY USER

... BUT THAT NUMBER IS STEADILY INCREAS-ING.

THERE ARE AN ESTIMATED 2,000 SUCH "ORDERS" THROUGH-OUT THE WORLD TODAY...

APPARENTLY, HIS WISH WAS, "I WANT MONEY."

JUST THE OTHER DAY, IN YAMAGUCHI, A NEW ORDER WAS INVOLVED IN A BANK ROBBERY.

AGAIN...?

!

BOARD: WISH -> ABILITY

願い
⇨能力

THESE PEOPLE TURN THEIR "WISHES" INTO "ABILITIES."

THAT IS WHAT DEFINES AN ORDER.

ガタ
GATA (STAND)

HUH!?

HEY, HOSHIMIYA!

ZAWA (CHATTER)

HMM? WHAT'S WRONG, HOSHIMIYA ...!?

NOT FEELING WELL. HEADING HOME EARLY.

THAT HOSHIMIYA'S ONE STRANGE DUDE.

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA

TODAY TOO.....?

IT'S TRUE. I REALLY DON'T FEEL WELL.

MORE LIKE ANTISOCIAL.

BECAUSE THE DESTRUCTION TEN YEARS AGO...

...WAS CAUSED BY NONE OTHER THAN...

...ME—EIJI HOSHIMIYA—WHEN I WISHED FOR THE WORLD TO BE DESTROYED.

THAT'S WHAT EVERYONE THINKS.

"ORDERS ARE EVIL, TERRIFYING BEINGS."

THAT'S WHY I HAVEN'T USED MY POWER SINCE THAT DAY.

AND THEY'RE NOT WRONG.

...HEY.

DAISY!



I SEE YOU'RE LOOKING AS GLUM AS EVER.

OH, IT'S JUST YOU, EIJI HOSHIMIYA.

MMMM.

WHY'S THAT QUESTION GOTTA COME WITH THAT GLARE?

YOU.

DAISY...

YOU CREATED MORE ORDERS AGAIN, DIDN'T YOU?

I FIRST MET HER TEN YEARS AGO.

SHE APPEARED SUDDENLY AT MY BEDSIDE.

AT FIRST, I THOUGHT SHE MUST HAVE BEEN AN ILLUSION OR HALLUCINATION OR SOMETHING.

I WAS WRONG.

SHA (FWISH)

THAT'S MY JOB, SILLY.

ALL I CAN SAY FOR SURE IS THIS.

BECAUSE I'M LIKE A FAIRY WHO GOES AROUND GRANTING WISHES.

DAISY HAS THE POWER TO GIVE A PERSON AN ABILITY BASED ON HIS OR HER WISH.

GI (SQUEAK) ギ…

DIDN'T I TELL YOU TO STOP SHOWING UP HERE?

LOOKS LIKE YOU'RE STILL NOT USING YOUR POWER, HUH?

.....

IS YOUR LITTLE SISTER... STILL WEIGHING ON YOUR MIND?

?

!

LEMME SAY THIS MUCH... ALL THAT STUFF TEN YEARS AGO? YOU'RE REMEMBERING IT WRONG.

IN TRUTH...

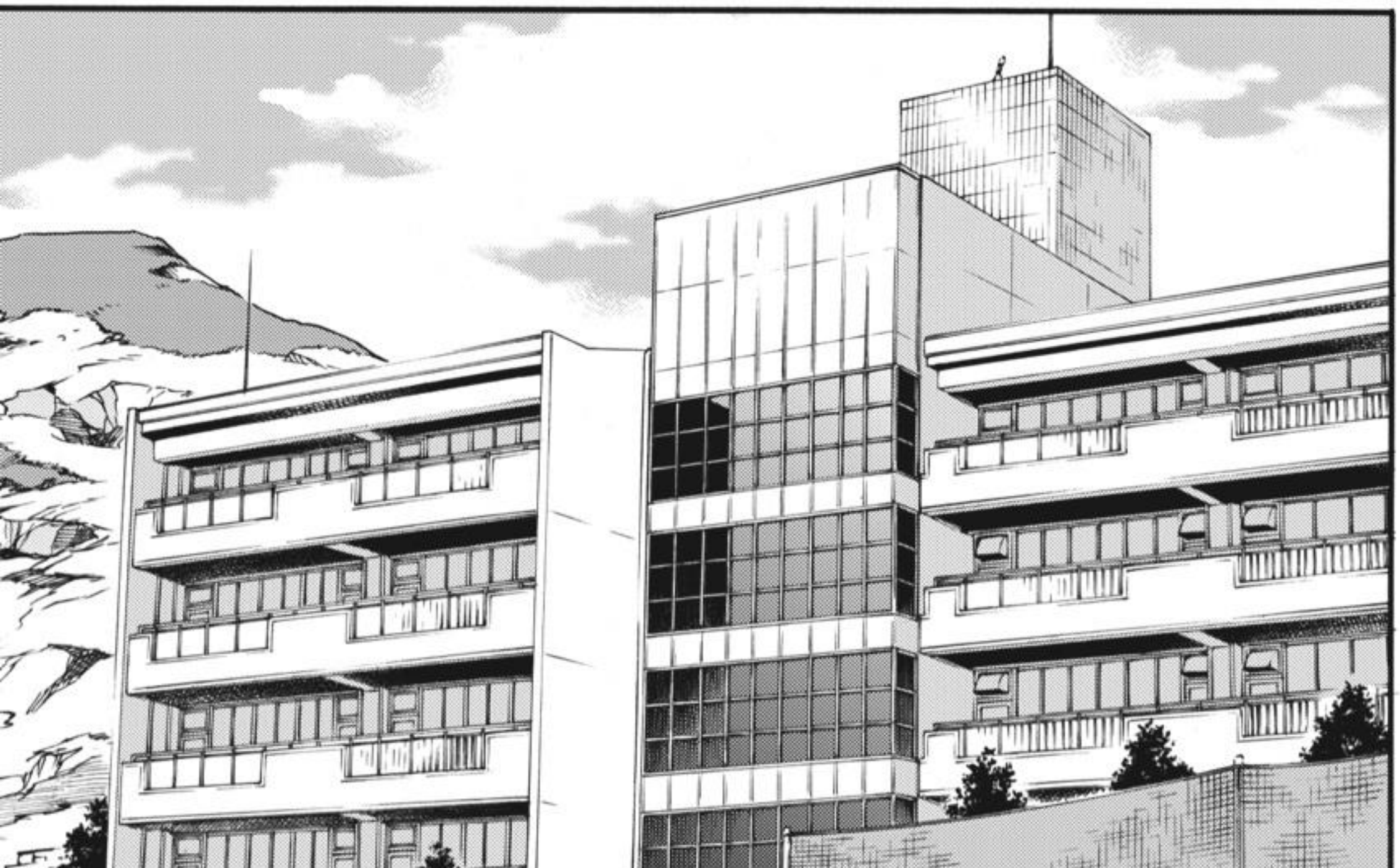
...WHAT YOU WISHED FOR WASN'T "THE DESTRUCTION OF THE WORLD."

...I'M LOOKING FORWARD TO THE NEXT TIME YOU USE YOUR POWERS.

OOO (WHOOSH)

AND PERSON-ALLY...

Subject 1: “Me x World”
Place: Amakusa







I WAS SURE I GOT THE POWER TO DESTROY THE WORLD-BECAUSE THAT'S WHAT I WISHED FOR...

THEN WHAT WAS IT OOOOOO?

NO. I WAS DEFINITELY THE CAUSE OF ALL THAT DESTRUC-TION.

WAS I WRONG .....?

MAG: HE'S SUPER STRONG! EVIL RANGER

BACK THEN, I WAS PRETENDING TO BE "EVIL RANGER."

WAIT. WHAT WAS THE PLOT OF EVIL RANGER AGAIN...?

ZAWA

SHE'S SUPPOSED TO BE CUTE AS HELL...

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA (CHATTER)

WE'RE GETTING A TRANSFER STUDENT TODAY.

HEY, YOU HEARD?

.....

WHO CARES.

WA-HA-HA.

LOOKS LIKE OUR LUCK IS IMPROVING! FINALLY, A BREAK FROM ALL THESE UGLY GIRLS! ♪

SERI-OUSLY?

MAYBE I'LL LEAVE EARLY AGAIN TODAY...

HEY, LET'S GET STARTED.

FIRST, I WANT TO INTRODUCE OUR NEW STUDENT.

DOYO

DOYO (GAB)

RIN KURENAI
紅 くれない
金令 りん

MY NAME IS RIN KURENAI.

NICE TO MEET YOU!

SH—oooooo

SHE'S CUTE

NEVER THOUGHT SHE'D BE THAT CUTE .....

HA-HA ...

SCHOOL JUST GOT A WHOLE LOT MORE INTER-ESTING.

UMM.

DAMMN.

PARDON ME, BUT...

!!?

GYO (SHOCK)

UHH...

UM.

I GUESS YOU DON'T REMEMBER ME.

THE TRANSFER STUDENT... BUT WHY !?

...HUH?

AH...!?

YOU'RE IN THE SAME CLASS AS ME, RIGHT?

NOT REMEMBER HER? YEAH, RIGHT.

WAIT, DID SHE FOLLOW ME HOME SO SHE COULD...!?

NO, I DO...

WHAT'S UP?

GOKU (GULP)

ゴクッ

UM...

AND I DON'T HAVE A CELL PHONE, SO...

COULD YOU CALL A LOCKSMITH FOR ME?

I ACTUALLY MOVED INTO THE APARTMENT UPSTAIRS YESTERDAY ...

...BUT MY KEY BROKE... NOW I'M LOCKED OUT...

OH. HER KEY ...

DUH... NOT LIKE SHE'D BE INTER-ESTED IN ME.

NO PROB. HOLD ON A SEC.

... AH. SURE.

YOU'RE A LIFE-SAVER, REALLY.

GASA (RUSTLE)

GASA

GACHA (CLICK)

WELL, WHAT-EVER. AT LEAST I GOT TO TALK TO HER.

!!?

BASHIN (ZAP)

JUST KID-DING.

バチ (BACHI (CRAKL)

DOSA (THUD)

BACHICHI バチチ!!!

UGH.....

.....

MY LIVING ROOM.....?

.....

AH.

YOU'RE AWAKE.

!

WHAT THE HELL!?

WH—

WHAT ARE YOU DOING?

RIGHT. LEMME INTRODUCE MYSELF AGAIN.

I'M RIN KURENAI.

AND I'M AN ASSASSIN HERE TO KILL YOU.

YOU'RE EIJI HOSHIMIYA— THE ORDER WHO DESTROYED THE WORLD.

YOU NEED TO DIE.

HOW.....?

I CAN TELL YOU'RE WONDERING, "HOW DOES SHE KNOW THAT?"

FU FU...

JIII (ZIP)

SU (FWIP)

TO BE HONEST ...

WITHOUT THE ORDERS FROM MY *SUPERIORS*...

...I NEVER WOULD'VE GOTTEN THIS FAR...

THIS LOOKS BAD.....

Y'SEE, MY PARENTS...

DURING THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION TEN YEARS AGO...

...THEY DIED IN A FIRE...!

...BEFORE I KILL YOU.

SO YOU'RE THE TARGET OF MY REVENGE.

HOLD ON...

JUST WANTED YOU TO KNOW THAT...

AH.....

ZU (SLICE)

!!!

ZU

GICHI (SKLIT)

GICHI

MY HANDS.....!

OWWW...!!

DOSU (STAB)

MY MOTHER BURNED UP IN THE FIRE ITSELF...

...AND MY DAD TRIED TO SAVE HER BUT GOT CAUGHT IN THE SMOKE AND SUFFOCATED...

BUT NOW, I'LL FINALLY HAVE MY REVENGE!

.....

JUST WHEN I THOUGHT THINGS WERE GOING SO WELL...

GICHI

GICHI

AH!

AHH!

AH!

DIE!

...IT TURNS OUT THAT MY CRUSH WANTS TO KILL ME...!

WA—

WAIT!

ZU (SPLURT)

SH-SHE'S REALLY GONNA KILL ME...!

IT WASN'T ON PUR— ...

THAT WAS AN ACCI-DENT.

O (WHOOSH)

ZU (DRIP)

ZU





THE SWORD JUST... ALL ON ITS OWN...!

!? BUT I DIDN'T DO ANY-THING.

DID MY POWER GO OFF ...?

DAN (THUD)

...UGH.

UWAHHHH!?

GATAN (SLAM)

NGH ……!

DA (DASH)

ドドドドドド

……AH…

UHH ……

DO (THUNK)

DAMMIT ……!

…GOTTA COME AFTER ME …!?

SO WHY'S SHE…

I DON'T WANNA HURT ANYONE EVER AGAIN.

I DON'T WANNA USE MY ABILITY ……

I...
ENDED UP
HURTING
SOMEONE
AGAIN...

HELLO
...

AH.

BIG
BROTHER
?

WHAT'S
GOING
ON?

I THINK
UNCLE IS
STILL
ATTENDING
TO THE
OTHER
PATIENTS...

I JUST WANTED TO HEAR YOUR VOICE, SENA.

TH-THAT'S OKAY...

I'LL MEET YOU IN THE LOBBY, THEN.

OKAY!

ZU (LIMP) ズズ... ZU

I'M IN THE NEIGHBOR-HOOD, SO I'M COMING BY FOR A VISIT.

GAKU GAKU GAKU

GAKU (TREMBLE)

.....HEARING SENA'S VOICE...

...HELPS ME CALM DOWN A LITTLE...

JUST RELAX...

EVERY-THING'S FINE...

YORO (SWAY) ヨロ...

I'LL GET MY WOUNDS LOOKED AT BY A DOCTOR ……

星宮総合病院
内科・外科

SIGN: HOSHIMIYA GENERAL HOSPITAL / INTERNAL MEDICINE/SURGERY


SURGERY
EAST WING
外科
東館

TOOK YOU LONG ENOUGH.

THE REAL PROBLEM IS THAT MYSTERIOUS ABILITY OF YOURS.

HOW...!?

DON'T WORRY ABOUT WHY I'M STILL ALIVE.

THEY HAVE SENA...!

B—

BIG BROTH-ER...!?

SO I DECIDED TO TAKE OUT AN INSURANCE POLICY.

ON THE ROOF, THAT IS.

OH, I WILL.

SENA'S GOT NOTHING TO DO WITH THIS ...!!

LET HER GO!

DOSU (STAB)

BUT...

IF YOU DON'T HURRY UP, THE GIRL'S GONNA DIE!

DA (DASH)

.....

DA—

DA DA

THIS WAY TOO...

WHY'RE THERE SOLDIERS HERE IN THE HOSPITAL ...!?

NEVER MIND THAT, THOUGH.

SHE SHOULD HAVE DIED, BUT SHE'S STILL ALIVE...

COULD IT BE THAT SHE...?

DAN (TMP)

TA (RAT) TA TA TA

DAMN YOU...!!!

PUSHI (F.SSHH)

YUP. SHE'S AN ORDER!

DAISY!

HMPH.

ウィイ イイン
UIIIIN (WHIRRR)

AND SHE VERY NEARLY BURNED TO DEATH HERSELF.

RIN KURENAI LOST HER PARENTS IN THE DISASTER TEN YEARS AGO.

...“REGEN-ERATION”...!

ZU (APPEAR)

ZU

ZU

STARING INTO THE ABYSS OF DEATH, SHE WISHED FOR...

カ (FLASH)

ORDER!

ZU (CREEP)

AND THEN...

...WITH HER NEWFOUND REGENERATIVE ABILITIES, RIN KURENAI BECAME IMMORTAL.

JUUU (SIZZLE)

IMMORTAL...!?

PUSHUUU (FSSHH)

CHIN (DING)

GOOO (FOOM)

REBIRTH FIRE!!!

WHAT'LL YOU DO? YOU CAN'T DEFEAT RIN KURENAI *AS YOU ARE NOW.*

5

BUT RIN KURENAI IS WAITING FOR YOU UP TOP.

HEAD DOWN-STAIRS, AND YOU'LL BE SHOT TO PIECES.

UP HERE.

I COULD NEVER ABANDON SENA...!

.....I DON'T REALLY HAVE A CHOICE.

LIKE I SAID, I WANNA SEE YOU USE YOUR POWER.

DA (TMP) DA

!

AND I FEEL BAD FOR YOU, SINCE YOU SEEM TO HAVE FORGOTTEN YOUR TRUE WISH!

DA (DASH)

.....
DAISY.

WHY'RE YOU FOLLOWING ME AROUND AGAIN?

!

EIJI HOSHI-MIYA.

THE EXTENT OF YOUR ABILITY IS LIMITED TO 1/10,000 OF ITS FULL POTENTIAL!

I THOUGHT THAT WOULD'VE BEEN ENOUGH TO PREVENT THE INCIDENT TEN YEARS AGO.

IF YOU STILL CAN'T REMEM-BER...

...THEN USE IT AND SEE WHAT HAP-PENS.

USE MY ABILITY .....?

..... NGH.

WHOOSH

I'M NEVER USING THAT POWER AGAIN!

!

NO WAY.

I PROMISED MYSELF ...!

GLAD YOU DECIDED TO SHOW ...

...BUT THIS IS GOOD-BYE.

A CHOP-PER ...!?

BA (FWOOM)

!

BA

BA

BA

NO WAY I CAN DODGE A MACHINE GUN.

SHIT...!

REMEMBER!

EVIL RANGER *WAS MY FAVORITE SHOW.*

I...

KANJI IN MAG: EVIL

EVIL

...WAS "WORLD DOMINATION."

EVIL RANGER'S GOAL...

...THEY DIDN'T UNDERSTAND HIS REAL GOAL.

ENEMIES 敵

ENEMIES 敵

EVERYONE WAS ALWAYS AFTER HIM BECAUSE OF THAT, BUT...

I WANTED TO BE JUST LIKE EVIL RANGER.

HE WANTED TO RULE IN ORDER **TO BRING PEACE** TO THE WORLD.

THAT'S WHY I MADE MY WISH.

PARA (FLIP)


I WANNA RULE THE WORLD!

DON
(BOOM)

I REMEMBER NOW.....

BA (FLIP)
BA
BA
BA
BA
OOO (WHOOSH)
IN THE END, I NEVER GOT TO FIND OUT WHAT KIND OF POWER YOU HAD...
BUT I GUESS IT DIDN'T REALLY MATTER ANYWAY.
HMM?
OO

GOOOU (FWOOM)

.....

WHY AM I...

...HEALING THIS GIRL...?

OOO (WHOOSH)

Ugh.....

?

GA (GRAB)

OOO (WHOOSH)

YOU'RE THE ONE WHO FORCED ME TO USE MY POWER.

BITA (TWITCH)

GAKU (SHOCK)

HOW ARE YOU ALIVE...?

ACK !?

WHA— ...!?

ZU (INCH)

GU (STRAIN)

GU

ZU

ZU

ZU

MY LEGS'RE WALKING ON THEIR OWN .....!?

!?

!?

ORDER!

ZU

ZU

ZU

GRR.

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

ZU (SWIRL)

ZU

OOO (WHOOSH)

GU (STRAIN)

GU!

THIS IS MY "DOMAIN."

!?

THE GROUND, IT'S.....!?

DOMAIN ...!?

GU

GU

YOU'RE NOW UNDER MY CONTROL.

I DON'T KNOW WHO YOU PEOPLE ARE, BUT...

...IF YOU'RE OUT TO KILL ME, I'VE GOT NO CHOICE BUT TO USE MY ABILITY.

YOU'RE NOT THE ONLY ONE WHO KNOWS MY IDENTITY, RIGHT?

I'M GONNA CHANGE THE WORLD!

THIS IS WHERE IT ALL BEGINS.

I WILL RULE THIS WORLD!

...BECAUSE MY ABILITY IS ALL ABOUT...

ooo (WHOOSH)

GRRRR.

...

"DOMAIN EXPANSION"!

GI

GI

GRRR ...

GRR GRR GRR.

GRR... GRR.

GI (STRAIN)

OOO (WHOOSH)

YOU WILL BE THE FIRST TO SUBMIT TO MY RULE!

RIN KURENAI.

Subject 1 : END

Subject 2

...WAS ME.

THE ONE WHO CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION TEN YEARS AGO...

INSTEAD, WE WENT TO LIVE WITH AN UNCLE WHO RUNS A HOSPITAL IN KYUSHU.

BECAUSE OF WHAT HAPPENED, MY LITTLE SISTER COULDN'T GET HER SURGERY DONE IN TOKYO.

DAMMIT!

IT WAS ALL MY FAULT...

SHE COULDN'T GET TOP-OF-THE-LINE TREATMENT HERE, THOUGH.

EIJI...

...HOSHIMI-YAAAAA!!!

THAT'S WHY I NEVER WANTED TO USE MY POWER AGAIN!

OOO (WHOOSH)

GI (STRAIN) GI
ギギ

GUESS I CAN CONTROL EVERYTHING WITHIN MY DOMAIN .....

THAT'S MY POWER, RIGHT!?

THIS IS MY "ORDER"— "BIND DOMINATOR."

CHIRA (GLANCE)
チラ

?

CAN I JUST GIVE HER AN ORDER TO DO SOME-THING, MAYBE?

GRRRR...

AND THEN THERE'S THIS FREAKY THING...

FOR NOW, I'VE GOTTA USE THIS POWER TO STOP RIN KURENAI...

HEH HEH ...

HEH.

YOU REALLY THINK...

...I'M GONNA SUBMIT TO YOU?

(FLIK) PIN

SENAAA!

CRAP.

WHA—.....?

(WHOOSH) O

A GRENADE ...!?

Subject 2: “Domination and Submission”
Place: Amakusa

DOOOOON
(BOOM)

IN THE SKIES ABOVE KUMAMOTO CITY

BA
BA
BA
BA
BA (FWOOM)

I SEE.

WHAT A SHAME.

INSTEAD OF MONITORING THE TARGET, SHE MEANS TO KILL HIM...

SO SECOND LIEUTENANT RIN KURENAI HAS ABANDONED HER SCOUTING MISSION.

BA
BA
BA
BA

BA
BA
LIEUTENANT FRAN. WE'LL BE IN AMAKUSA SHORTLY.
GREAT. HURRY IT UP.
CHI
CHI
CTICK
THOSE WHO ABANDON THEIR MISSIONS MUST BE DISCIPLINED.
CHI
CHI
CHI
WE CAN'T KEEP THE *FORMER* RULER OF THE WORLD WAITING.

OO (WHOOSH)

HER ABILITY MAKES HER IMMORTAL, THOUGH, SO SHE'S PROBABLY STILL AFTER ME.

IF I DON'T PUT HER DOWN FOR GOOD, SHE'LL JUST KEEP COMING ...!

MM...

ZUZUZU (FSSHH)

.....

RIN KURE-NAI...

...REALLY JUST BLEW HERSELF UP...!

.....BIG BROTHER?

SENA.

.....

PHEW.

WHAT HAP-PENED TO ME?

WHAT'S GOING ON...?

AH.

YEAH...

SIGN: DIRECTOR'S OFFICE

THEY'RE AFTER YOU?

YEAH. A BUNCH OF THEM CAME AND ATTACKED THE HOSPITAL.

WE'RE ON THE RUN FROM THEM NOW.

SHIN (SILENT) ...

NO DOCTORS OR PATIENTS AROUND.

MUST'VE BEEN MOVED SOME-WHERE...

IT'S OKAY.

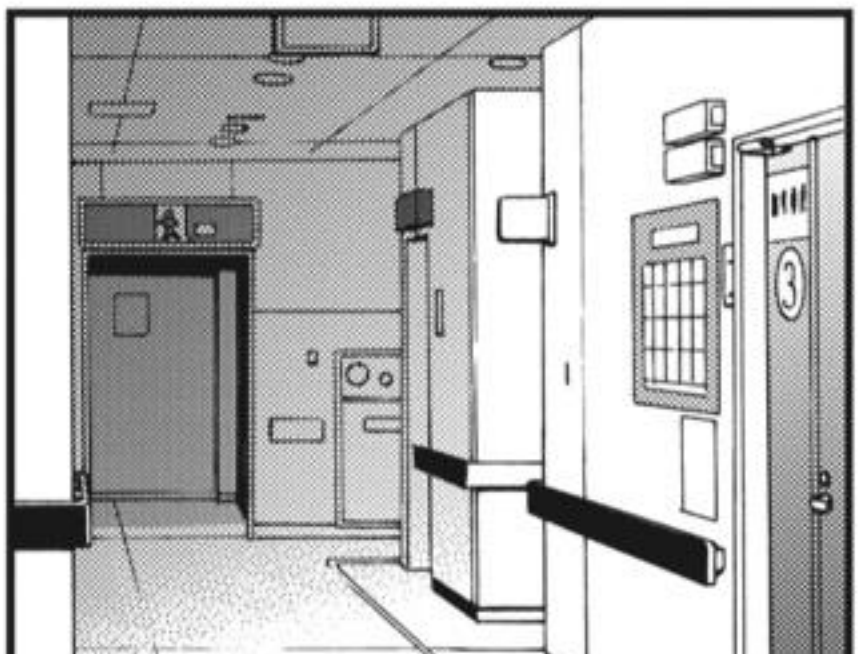
YOU JUST WAIT HERE, SENA.

DON'T LEAVE ME HERE ALONE, BIG BROTHER.

I'VE GOT A REALLY BAD FEELING ABOUT ALL THIS.

RIN KURENAI'S NOT IN MY DOMAIN RIGHT NOW...

I CAN JUST TELL, SOME-HOW.





THE PATH I WALK BECOMES PART OF MY DOMAIN...

IT'S JUST LIKE EVIL RANGER'S POWER.

WHICH MEANS I SHOULD BE ABLE TO CONTROL ANYTHING WITHIN MY DOMAIN, WHETHER IT BE OBJECTS OR EVEN OTHER PEOPLE.

FUWA (FLOAT) ﾌﾜ...

SO THE LAWS OF PHYSICS DON'T APPLY...

DON (BAM)

ORDER!

"LIFT THAT BOOK"!

STILL, HOW DO I ACTUALLY BEAT RIN KURENAI?

THE ONLY WEAPON I'VE GOT IS THIS ORDER ABILITY...

...SO I'VE SOMEHOW GOTTA LURE HER SOMEPLACE WHERE I'VE GOT THE ADVANTAGE.

SOL-DIERS DOWN BELOW ...

I'VE GOT YOU NOW, EIJI HOSHI-MIYA.

THANKS TO YOU, I'VE DIED ONCE AGAIN!

FATIGUES ... SO SHE'S A SOLDIER?

OOOO (WHOOSH)

...HOSHI-MIYAAAA!!!!!!

EIJI...

JUUU (SIZZLE)

HERE AND NOW!

BUT I'M TRULY HAPPY.

ZOKU (SHUDDER)

HERE SHE COMES!

BECAUSE TODAY'S THE DAY I GET TO PAY YOU BACK FOR ALL THAT PAIN AND SUFFERING FROM TEN YEARS AGO!

ZAN (FWIP)

...DIE.

!

KA (THUNK)

DON (BAM)

BIND DOMINATOR!

JUST ORDER!!!

DON (WHAM)

DON

DON

DON

DON

THE CARS IN THIS GARAGE ARE ALREADY IN HIS DOMAIN ...!?

..... WHAT !?

HE...

HE'S...

...

FLING-
ING

...

GOO (FWOOM)

ゴオッ

.....

TCH.

.....

EIJI...!

HE'S FLINGING AROUND THE CARS IN HIS DOMAIN ...!!!

WOW. SHE'S AVOIDING BOTH MY DOMAIN AND THE CARS AT THE SAME TIME...

STILL...

THOSE SIX SOLDIERS.

MY TRUMP CARD IS RIGHT BY THE EXIT.

SIGN: EXIT

KILL...?

THEY'RE ALREADY IN MY DOMAIN AND, THEREFORE, UNDER MY CONTROL.

THEY'LL BE ABLE TO SHOOT AND KILL HER FOR SURE.....

I ENDED UP KILLING SO MANY PEOPLE TEN YEARS AGO... EVER SINCE SENA GOT HURT, THOUGH...

...I'VE KEPT THE TRUTH A SECRET FROM HER. FROM EVERY-ONE...

I KNEW IT. YOU REALLY ARE THE DEMON WHO DE-STROYED THE WORLD!

I REALLY WANTED TO BE A HERO...

...BUT I FAILED.

I DON'T WANNA RULE THE WORLD SO THAT I CAN HURT PEOPLE!

THIS IS ALL WRONG!!

!

OH, SO HE'S TAKEN CONTROL OF MY MEN.

THE FOOL!

NEITHER GUNS NOR HIS DOMAIN WILL BE OF ANY USE AGAINST ME.

I'LL JUST BLOW MYSELF UP AGAIN AND...

DO

DO

SHIELDS !!?

DO (SLAM)

BYUO (WHIP)

"PIN DOWN RIN KURENAI" !!!

BAN (BAM)

OR DER!

(FWIP)

"GET RID OF THIS GRE-NADE"!

ORDER!

DON (BOOM)

ドーン

WHA—.....?

I WON'T LET YOU DIE.

RIN KURENAI.

THIS COULD BE RISKY, BUT I'VE GOT NO CHOICE.

THIS ANCHOR AND WIRE CAN SINK INTO ANYTHING IN MY DOMAIN. IT'S PROOF OF MY CONTROL ...

OR SOME-THING LIKE THAT.

AND ONCE I'VE GOTTEN HOLD OF SOMETHING, IT CAN'T DETACH UNLESS IT LEAVES MY DOMAIN...

DON (PIERCE)

ORDER!

BIND DOMINATOR!

"YOU WILL NOT HARM ME OR SENA"!

DON

!

THIS IS AN ORDER, RIN KURE-NAI.

"YOU CANNOT LEAVE MY DOMAIN FOR THE REST OF YOUR LIFE"!

UGH .....

I DREAMED OF THIS DAY. I BECAME AN IMMORTAL, ALL FOR THIS.

ポロ PORO

ポロ PORO

ポロ PORO (DRIP)

BUT NOW, THIS DISGRACE .....

UGH.

.....

ONE DAY, YOU MIGHT EVEN HEAR THE WORDS, "YOU'RE MY PARTNER," FROM A GUY YOU LI—

BEING ALIVE IS A GOOD THING.

I FORGOT THAT I WAS ACTUALLY ATTRACTED TO THIS GIRL...

DOSU
(STAB)

.....

HUH !?

IF I'M BY YOUR SIDE...

...THEN I MIGHT GET A CHANCE TO KILL YOU.

GAH .....

N-NO! THAT WAS...!

THAT WAS JUST AN EXAM-PLE...

GRR ...?

I'M A LITTLE ROUGH AROUND THE EDGES, BUT I'M SURE WE CAN MAKE THIS WORK.

I WILL KILL YOU!

LOOKS LIKE I FOUND MY-SELF ONE HELL OF A COMPANION ...!

AT LEAST YOU'RE EAGER, I GUESS.

SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI.

ZA
ZA (STEP)

SEEMS YOU WERE ONLY EVER SUITED FOR A SCOUTING MISSION.

AN OR—
...

KACHI
KACHI (TICK)
ZA
ZA

WHA—
……?

HE INVADED MY DOMAIN INSTANTA-NEOUSLY …!?!?

I AM LIEUTENANT ABRAHAM LOUIS FRAN.

ZAN (WHAP)

GYARU ギャル

GYARU ギャル

GYARU (RING)

CHRONO-GRAPH CALIBER !!!

ゴオオ
(WHOOSH)

YES.

ゴ

ゴ

ゴ

KYUSHU DAZAIFU
DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT
OFFICES

AND I'M HERE...

SHU
(FWISH)

...TO INVITE YOU TWO TO THE GOVERNMENT OFFICES AT DAZAIFU!

SENA!?

LIEUTENANT FRAN HAS MADE CONTACT WITH EIJI HOSHIMIYA.

CHIRA (GLANCE)

AH, BUT HE'S PERFECTLY SUITED TO THE TASK...

...ORDER-WISE. ♪

WAS IT WISE TO ENTRUST SUCH A WEIGHTY MISSION TO A YOUNG-STER...?

DON (BAM)

...PROCEED.

LET THE YOUNG-STER...

♪

UNITED NATIONS
PROVISIONAL GOVERNING BODY
KYUSHU UNIFIED ASSEMBLY

Next Stop: **Dazaifu**

Subject 2:END

BIG
ORDER

Subject 3

ZAN (STEP)

I'M HERE TO INVITE YOU TO THE GOVERNMENT OFFICES AT DAZAIFU!

EIJI HOSHI-MIYA.

DOSHA (THUD)

HOW'D HE DO IT...!?

AGAIN, IN AN INSTANT ...

SENA.....

HIS ABILITY, IT'S..!!...

!!?

DON (WHAM)

TEN YEARS AGO

...ENDED UP MARRYING ANOTHER DIVORCEE.

MY DIVORCED DAD...

I COULDN'T BRING MYSELF TO CALL THE WOMAN "MOM," SO...

...I MOSTLY IGNORED HER.

LIKEWISE, WHEN I MET HER, I DIDN'T REALLY CARE, INITIALLY.

THE WOMAN'S DAUGHTER, THAT IS.

SHE SAID HER NAME WAS SENA.

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT OFFICES

THE DAZAIFU OFFICES WERE IN USE UP UNTIL THE 12TH CENTURY.

THE ARCHITECTURE HAS SINCE BEEN RESTORED, AND IT'S NOW THE BASE OF OPERATIONS FOR THE UNITED NATIONS PROVISIONAL GOVERNING BODY IN KYUSHU.

Subject 3: "Origin of the Wish"
Place: Dazaifu

THE UNDERGROUND FACILITIES

SENA!

SENA!

SENA!

立入り禁止区域

SIGN: NO ENTRY

SPECIAL DETAINMENT CELLS

ゴ

GOOOOON (DOOM)

オオオオ

GI (STRAIN)

GI

GI

MMGH...

SHIT...oo!

WHERE AM I...!?

SU (FWIP)

!

I'M BLIND-FOLDED, SO I CAN'T TELL WHAT'S GOING ON... CAN'T EVEN GIVE ORDERS BECAUSE THEY GAGGED ME...

WHAT'S HAPPENING...!? I WAS KNOCKED OUT IN THAT FIGHT.

BOO!

MMGH...

.....!

PWAHH.

THEY'VE GOT YOU TIED UP TIGHT, HUH?

I'LL GET YOU OUT.

RIN KURE-NAI .....!?

.....HUH?

ooo

DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT SECTION...

WHERE'S SENA!?

WAIT... IS THAT THE FIRST THING YOU SAY?

THAT GIRL WAS ALSO CAPTURED BY THE DAZAIFU GOVERN-MENT SECTION

DO YOU STILL NOT UNDER-STAND YOUR CURRENT SITUATION ?

BY THE WAY, I WAS ALSO LOCKED UP NEXT DOOR IN THE FIRST PLACE

REALLY, I ONLY DISOBEYED AN ORDER, AND THESE GUYS GOT ALL ANXIOUS

WE'RE BREAKING OUT OF THE PRISON

SFX: *TWITCH TWITCH TWITCH*

TO BE KILLED BY ANYONE ELSE OTHER THAN ME,

I CAN'T ALLOW THAT

WH...

WHAT DID YOU ACTUALLY DO!?

I ONLY BROUGHT THEM TO A NEAR-DEATH, COMATOSE STATE

BO (FLIK)

ORDER!

SH- SHE'S OUT OF HER MIND.

ISN'T SHE SUP- POSED TO BE ON THE SAME SIDE AS THESE GUYS?

WHAT- EVER. AT LEAST NOW...

...I CAN GO SAVE SENA ...!

FURA (SWAY)

DON (BAM)

R E B I R T H F I R E !

KNIFE REGENER- ATION!

BURU (TREMBLE)

BURU

YUP. THAT'S TOO BAD.

ZAKU (SLICE)

LOOKS LIKE I CAN'T DISOBEY YOUR ORDERS.

DON (BAM)

UGH!?

...AND THE SECOND WAS, "I CAN'T HARM EIJI HOSHIMIYA OR HIS SISTER."

GA

THE FIRST ONE WAS, "I CAN'T LEAVE YOUR DOMAIN" ...

GA (WHAK)

THIS GIRL...!

HUP

SHE'S AN ENEMY.

SHE'S OUT TO KILL ME AND SENA...

GATA (CLAK)

RIGHT... ALMOST FORGOT FOR A SECOND THERE...

LET'S GET MOVING.

AN ORDER WITH THE POWER TO STOP TIME...

ABRAHAM LOUIS FRAN.

KUWAWA (FLASH)

HMM.

THERE'S NO WAY EIJI CAN BEAT HIM *AT THIS POINT.*

AT THIS POINT ... ...YOU SAY...?

SEEMS LIKE HIS WISH WAS, "I WOULD EVEN STOP TIME TO PROTECT THOSE I CARE ABOUT."

OR SOME-THING.

WELL, THERE IS A WAY HE COULD DO IT...

...BUT IT'D BE PRETTY TOUGH.

MIND SET

...LET'S GIVE HIM A HINT, SHALL WE?

GATA (CLANK)

ガタッ

.....

HEY.

GATATA

ガタタ

WELL...

"EFFORT, FRIENDSHIP, VICTORY"... AND ALL THAT.

GIRI (WEDGE)

GIRI

DID WE REALLY HAVE TO GO THIS WAY?

IT'S ALMOST TOO GOOD...

STILL, GOING LIKE THIS...

IT'S WEIRD. THE SURVEILLANCE GUYS DON'T SEEM TOO CONCERNED ABOUT US, BUT...WE HAVE TO ASSUME THEY KNOW WE'VE BROKEN OUT.

NO WAY WE CAN JUST STROLL THROUGH THE HALL-WAYS.

HEH HEH ...

OHHH...?

...I HAD ANOTHER REASON FOR DRAGGING HIM INTO THIS DUCT.

HEH-HEH-HEH-HEH.

OHHH.

HE'S PROBABLY GOT HIS HANDS FULL WITH THIS WHOLE ESCAPE PLAN, BUT...

クルッ KURU (SPIN)

DIE!

HUH!?

GAN (PLING)

GANGAN

CHA (SCRAPE)

I MIGHT NOT BE ABLE TO KILL HIM DIRECTLY, BUT...

...WHAT IF I TAKE THE INDIRECT APPROACH AND HIT HIM WITH A RICOCHET!?

DON (BAM)

.....
.....
HUH?
H-HEY.

.....
.....

YEAH, RIGHT .....

GABA (POP)

R-RIGHT. I JUST THOUGHT I SAW AN ENEMY BEHIND US.

BESHI (SLAP)

ベシ

BESHI

IT'S NARROW IN HERE, SO BE CAREFUL.

.....
WHAT'S THE BIG IDEA?

BESHI

ベシ

BESHI

.....I LEFT TOO MUCH UP TO CHANCE BEFORE.

BUT THIS TIME, I'LL GET HIM FOR SURE!

HYOOO (WHOOSH)

OOO (WHOOO)

...SHE'S COOKING UP ANOTHER NASTY PLOT...

I FEEL LIKE...

UGH...

I LED HIM STRAIGHT TO THIS TREACHER-OUS PATH.

WELL? FALL FROM THIS HEIGHT, AND IT'S LIGHTS OUT FOR GOOD.

!

HEH HEH.

50

RESCUED FROM DOWN BELOW BY EIJI

I THOUGHT I WAS GONNA DIE.

UM, YOU KINDA DID.

U-UMM...

I KNOW I'M IN NO POSITION TO ASK ...

GU (PRESS)

.....

...BUT COULD YOU QUIT TRYING TO KILL ME ALREADY?

SO IF YOU COULD JUST GIVE IT UP ...!

THE REASON I'VE GOT YOU BOUND IN MY DOMAIN...

...IS BECAUSE I'M NOT EXACTLY EQUIPPED TO FIGHT OFF AN IMMORTAL ASSASSIN .....

...EIJI.

EIJI. ♡

THIS IS CLEARLY GONNA BE A LONG AND DRAWN-OUT BATTLE, SO...

BOSU (HUG)

ボフッ

H—

HEY...

COME TO THINK OF IT...

...YOUR THIRD ORDER WAS THAT I HAVE TO BE YOUR "PARTNER."

...I'M JUST GONNA CALL YOU "EIJI" NOW.

BUT...

...I WON'T ALLOW YOU TO CONTROL MY HEART.

BO (FLIK)

BO

BO

ナナナ

A FORK IN THE ROAD.....

WE GO LEFT.

THE EXIT'S THAT WAY. WE CAN GET OUT OF THIS PLACE.

THE RIGHT PATH TAKES YOU TO THE HEART OF DAZAIFU.

I'M BETTING YOUR SISTER'S THERE, ACTUALLY ...

(WHOOSH)

キキキ

... MY TEACHER SAYS ...

...THAT FELLOW ORDERS ARE DESTINED TO BATTLE ONE ANOTHER.

HE'S RIGHT.

IT'D BE IMPOSSIBLE FOR EVERYONE'S WISHES TO BE GRANTED SIMULTANE-OUSLY.

(GRIP)

I TOLD YOU.

THE ONE WHO'S GONNA KILL YOU IS *ME*.

RIGHT...?

THAT FRAN GUY IS THAT WAY, Y'KNOW!

YOU NEED TO JUST GIVE UP ON THAT SISTER OF YOURS!

SIGN: SENA HOSHIMIYA

...NO WAY.

BECAUSE SENA MADE A WISH OF HER OWN!

星宮瀬奈

BA STURN

I'VE GOTTA SAVE SENA!

YOU FOOL!

DO YOU WANT TO DIE !!?

TEN YEARS AGO

.....SO YOU STILL...

...WON'T CALL MOM, "MOM"?

I'M AFRAID IT'LL ALL FALL APART AGAIN.

IT'S JUST...

BUT...

...I'LL PROBABLY BE ABLE TO GET THROUGH IT WITHOUT BEING TOO UPSET, BUT...

IF I IMAGINE IT ALL FALLING APART BEFOREHAND...

PATA (CLOSE)

ぱた

I'M REALLY GLAD I GOT YOU AS A BIG BROTHER.

I WANT THINGS TO STAY LIKE THIS FOREVER.

THOSE ARE THE DAYS YOU CAME TO VISIT ME HERE AT THE HOSPITAL!

WHENEVER SOMETHING GOOD HAPPENS, I ALWAYS MARK THE DAY.

UM, WHAT ARE THE MARKS ON THE CALENDAR FOR...?

THOSE AREN'T YOUR SURGERY DAYS... RIGHT?

AH.

SENA'S GOTTA SPEND EVERY DAY HERE IN THIS ROOM.

.....

.....

BACK THEN, I LOVED THIS ONE SHOW CALLED *EVIL RANGER*...

MEAN-WHILE...

...I ONLY COME HERE 'COS I DON'T FEEL LIKE SITTING AROUND AT HOME...

DAD...

MO—
...

MOM.....!

...BUT MY WISH TO "RULE THE WORLD" RAN AMOK.

IT ENDED UP DESTROYING EVERYTHING
.....

IF I COULD HAVE KEPT MY SECRET FOR JUST A *LITTLE LONGER* .....

DAMMIT...

JUST A *LITTLE LONGER*...

...AND RUIN EVERYTHING .....!

BURU (TREMBLE)

BUT THEN YOU PEOPLE HAD TO COME...

I'D NEVER LET YOU GET AWAY WITH THAT!

YOU'RE TRYING TO HIDE THE FACT THAT YOU KILLED ALL THOSE PEOPLE .....?

オオ

FOR JUST A LITTLE LONGER...

...I WANTED TO KEEP THIS SECRET FROM SENA AND KEEP PLAYING THE PART OF THE GOOD OLDER BROTHER...

THAT WOULD'VE BEEN NICE.

オオ

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

オオ

!?

BECAUSE BEFORE LONG...

NO!

...SENA WILL BE DEAD.

Subject 3:END

Subject 4

DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT OFFICES: CORRIDOR

OOOO (WHOOSH)

OR—
...

SENA...

SHE'S GOT A BLOOD DIS-EASE ...

... AND SHE'S ONLY BEEN GIVEN ANOTHER SIX MONTHS TO LIVE ...!

GAON (ROAR)

"KNOCK OUT THESE GRUNTS" !!!

ORDER!!!

SHAA (FWOOSH)

WAIT, EIJI. I TOLD YOU, THE CENTRAL AREA'S THAT WAY...

YOU'RE GONNA DIE!

DO (SLAM)


THIS GUY...


YOU THINK I CARE?
SAVING SENA COMES FIRST!


THAT'S HOW HE CAN MOVE THROUGH YOUR DOMAIN IN AN INSTANT.
!
FRAN'S ABILITY IS "STOP TIME."


WITH MY HELP, YOU MIGHT BE ABLE TO MANAGE.


I HEAR HE CAN CHOOSE UP TO THREE "TARGETS" TO FREEZE.
ALSO...

I'M NOT TRYING TO MAKE UP FOR ANYTHING. I JUST CAN'T HAVE YOU GO AND DIE ON ME.

...WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO PULL HERE? YOU THINK THAT INTEL MAKES UP FOR STABBING SENA?

CAN'T LET MY GUARD DOWN FOR A SECOND.

"WITH YOUR HELP" ..... HUH.

I GET TO KILL YOU, EIJI.

SHE'LL KILL ME IF SHE GETS THE CHANCE!!

THAT'S ALL IT IS.

FU FU FU.

JUST LIKE I SAID, RIGHT?

NI (GRIN)

GOT IT!!!

ZU (CREEP)

ZU

EIJI, UP AHEAD!

GO

GO

GO

GO (RUMBLE)

GRR.

DON (BAM)

ORDER! "OPEN THE DOORS"!

SENAAAAA!!!

Subject 4: "Fate of the World Unfolds"
Place: Dazaifu

FOUND HER.

NOT THIS GUY AGAIN!

AH, EIJI HOSHI-MIYA.

YOU'RE ONE MINUTE LATER THAN I ESTIMATED.

DOESN'T MATTER!

PIN (FLIK)

BA
(TOSS)

HMPH.

NICE ONE, RIN...!

HE'LL HAVE TO USE ALL OF HIS TIME STOP POWER TO FREEZE ALL THREE!

THREE GRENADES, IS IT?

...AND CAPTURE HIM IN MY DOMAIN ……!

NOW I CAN CHARGE IN THERE...

...AND SUCH DECISIVE ACTION...

WHAT GOOD JUDG-MENT...

HE'S CHARGING TOO...!? !?

...THERE IS ONE THING YOU ARE SORELY LACKING!

YET...

ドガ

DAN (TMP)

BASH!!! (CATCH)

AND THAT IS EXPE-RIENCE!

HE CAUGHT EVERY LAST ONE AND TOSSED THEM UP!?

WHA— ……!?

DAMN. THEY'RE ABOUT TO BLOW!

WILL EIJI STOP THE EXPLOSIONS? OR WILL FRAN?

IT'S A GAME OF CHICKEN!

ONCE THEY'RE WITHIN EIJI'S DO-MAIN...

...HE CAN STOP THE CHEMICAL REACTION AND PREVENT THE DETONA-TIONS...

...FRAN WILL FREEZE EIJI IN PLACE!

BUT THEN, IN THE NEXT INSTANT ...

HE'S NOT STOP-PING THEM!?

WOW

DAN (TMP)

DOES EIJI HAVE A DEATH WISH...!?

I'M NOT BACKING DOWN NOW !!!

I'M ALL OUT OF OPTIONS.

I'VE BEEN DESPERATE FROM THE START!

THIS KID'S GOT GUTS!

!?

BITA (HALT)

ビタ!!

BOTH OF YOU.

THAT'S FAR ENOUGH!

!!!

I HEREBY "FORBID" YOU TO CON-TINUE THIS FIGHT!!

!

BITA

ビタ!!

WHA—

.....!!?

O (WHOOSH)

ヒュ!!

DON (SLAM)

SLEEPING SHEEP!!!

ORDER!

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO (RUMBLE)

MY WISH IS FOR "PEACE"!

MY "SLEEPING SHEEP" ALLOWS ME TO FORCIBLY STOP ALL INSTANCES OF COMBAT.

DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT: TEN HANDS
FIRST HAND: RAIDOU FUWA

ZAN—
(STAND)

.....!!?

TA
(TMP)

WH—

WHO'RE THESE GUYS...!?

ZA

ZA

ZA

WE'D BETTER NOT MOVE.

THE TEN HANDS ARE THE TOP DOGS HERE.

THEY'RE ALL ORDERS.

ORDERS ...!?

MEKI (CRACK)

MEKI

O (WHOOSH)

!

NUU (LOOM)

SO YOU ARE EIJI HOSHIMIYA ?

I AM BENKEI NARUKAMI, ONE OF THE TEN HANDS.

TEN HANDS SECOND HAND:

BENKEI NARUKAMI

ぱち PACHI

ぱち PACHI

ぱち PACHI

PACHI ぱち

ぱち PACHI

PACHI (CLAP) ぱち

EIJI HOSHI-MIYA.

YOU PASS!

YEAHHHH!

PACHI ぱち
PACHI ぱち
PACHI ぱち
ぱち PACHI
PACHI ぱち
!?
YEAHHH!
SEE?
I WASN'T SO CRAZY AFTER ALL.
YEAHHH!
WE NEVER EXPECTED YOU TO FIGHT SO BRAVELY, EIJI-SAMA.
OH.
?
?
UM, WHAT .....?
YEAHHH!
YEAHHH!
...YES, OF COURSE.
COME THIS WAY.

YOUR SISTER, SENA-SAMA...

...IS CURRENTLY FROZEN IN TIME BY LIEUTENANT FRAN.

HE'S STOPPED HER CONDITION FROM ADVANCING.

FROZEN IN TIME...!?

SU (FWIP)

FROM THE VERY START, WE NEVER INTENDED YOU ANY HARM, EIJI-SAMA.

KI KI KI KI (CREAK)

SENA...!

WHAT THE ...!?

HUH !?

ANY MISUNDER-STANDING WAS THE RESULT OF SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI'S LITTLE RAMPAGE.

STILL, WE DECIDED TO LET THE SITUATION PLAY OUT AS A TEST FOR YOU, EIJI-SAMA.

.....

WHAT DO YOU MEAN, "TEST"?

TEN YEARS AGO...

KA (STEP) ガシ

ZUN (VOOM)

...JAPAN WAS NO LONGER ABLE TO FUNCTION AS A COUNTRY. IT FELL UNDER THE JURISDICTION OF THE UNITED NATIONS PROVISIONAL GOVERNING BODY.

THE DAZAIFU OFFICES REPRESENT THE BRANCH OF THAT GOVERNMENT HERE IN KYUSHU.

Dazaifu Government Offices

...BECAUSE OF THE GREAT DESTRUCTION YOU BROUGHT ABOUT...

大破壊の中心地:
後の
国連暫定統治機構
日本本部

Tokyo

!

MAP: CENTER OF THE DESTRUCTION: LATER SITE OF THE UNITED NATIONS PROVISIONAL GOVERNING BODY TOKYO HQ

ALL THAT DESTRUCTION ALSO MEANT THE BIRTH OF A *NEW* WORLD.

WE ORDERS ARE A NEW BREED MEANT TO LEAD THE WORLD.

THE ONE WHO FOUND YOU IN THE FIRST PLACE, EIJI-SAMA...

...WAS NONE OTHER THAN OUR IYO WITH HER DIVINING ABILITY.

KAA (BLUSH)

TEN HANDS FOURTH HAND: IYO

WE ALSO WANT TO AID IN THE CREATION OF A NEW WORLD WHERE YOU AND YOUR SISTER MAY LIVE IN PEACE.

AS SUCH...

BAA (RAISE)

WHAT'S THIS GUY EVEN SAYING...?

.....
.....

AS YOU CAN SEE, WE ARE PREPARED TO SAVE YOUR SISTER.

!!?

(WHOOSH)

OUR NATION IS YOURS TO RULE, EIJI-SAMA, AND WE HAVE MADE A DECLARATION OF WAR AGAINST THE REST OF THE WORLD.

...KYUSHU HEREBY DECLARES ITS INDEPENDENCE !!

佐賀 福岡 長崎 熊本 鹿児島

MAP: FUKUOKA [TOP], SAGA [TOP LEFT], KUMAMOTO [MID RIGHT], NAGASAKI [MID LEFT], KAGOSHIMA [BOTTOM]

TOKYO HQ'S ALREADY SENT A BUNCH OF THEIR PEOPLE HERE TO INQUIRE.

WE'RE JUST IGNORING THEM.

TEN HANDS FIFTH HAND: TAIKEI NEHARA

THEY DECLARED WAR !!?

LET ME GO ...!!!

GU

GU (STRAIN)

レー

THE FIRST PREFECTURE THAT MUST FALL IS YAMAGUCHI, AT THE WEST EDGE OF HONSHU!

IN ORDER TO HELP *YOU* TAKE OVER THE WORLD ...

...WE WILL CARRY OUT AN INVASION OF TOKYO, WHERE THE JAPANESE HQ OF THE UNITED NATIONS PROVISIONAL GOVERNING BODY IS LOCATED!

MAP: KUMAMOTO [TOP RIGHT], OITA [TOP LEFT], FUKUOKA [MID RIGHT], EHIME [MID LEFT], YAMAGUCHI [BOTTOM RIGHT], HIROSHIMA [BOTTOM LEFT].

YOU'RE FREE TO DO SO.

BUT THEN YOU'LL BE UP AGAINST THE REST OF THE WORLD ALONE.

.....

AND WHAT IF I REFUSE!?

FURA (SWING)

THAT ISN'T AN OFFER— IT'S A THREAT !!!

.....

GU (GRAB)

AH HA HA HA HA HA HA!

SEEN THROUGH OUR LITTLE RUSE, HAVE YOU?

BUT MY PROPOSAL BENEFITS ALL PARTIES, DOES IT NOT?

DAMN...

...YOUUUU!!!

GIRI (GRIND)

BA (FWIP)

THE GOOD NEWS IS THAT, BY TAKING THE STEPS NECESSARY TO RULE THE WORLD, WE'LL LIKELY FIND AN ORDER WHO CAN CURE YOUR SISTER.

PLUS, YOU'LL BE THE KING OF THE WORLD.

AS FOR THE BAD NEWS, WE'RE GOING TO MAKE YOU OUR PUPPET!

BA (BOW)

YOUR DECISION, PLEASE!

NOW...

...MY LIEGE.

BUT NOW...

ALL I EVER WANTED WAS TO LIVE MY LIFE WITH SENA...

ALL THIS.....

WELL MET, MY LIEGE.

I AM YOUR TACTICIAN, YOSHITSUNE HIIRAGI.

TEN HANDS
THIRD HAND:

YOSHITSUNE HIIRAGI

EIJI HOSHIMI-YAAAA!!!

"YOU ARE ALL UNDER MY CONTROL" !!!

DON (BAM)

ORDER!!!

I SWEAR I'LL KILL YOU!

Next Stop: Yamaguchi

Subject 4: END



To be continued...

002

REBIRTH FIRE





User: Rin Kurenai
Wish: Regeneration
Ability: Immortality via regenerative powers

Rin is essentially immortal thanks to her strong regenerative powers, which also allow her to "heal" other people and objects. The ability activates automatically for Rin herself, which means she can recover from nearly any situation—even if her head is destroyed or her heart is stopped. This means that Rin cannot truly be killed. When she wishes to speed up her own recovery or heal someone else, she has to actively use her Order ability. However, it doesn't seem as though she can heal old scars or internal illnesses. The power only works to "rewind" the effects of recent physical damage.

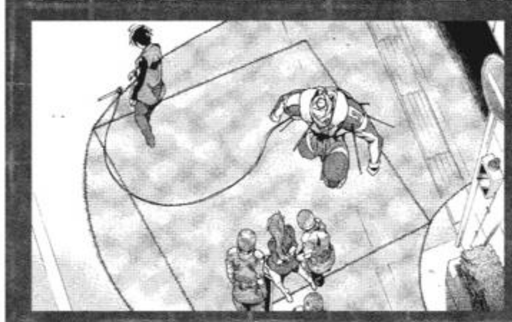
001

»» "Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.

BIND DOMINATOR

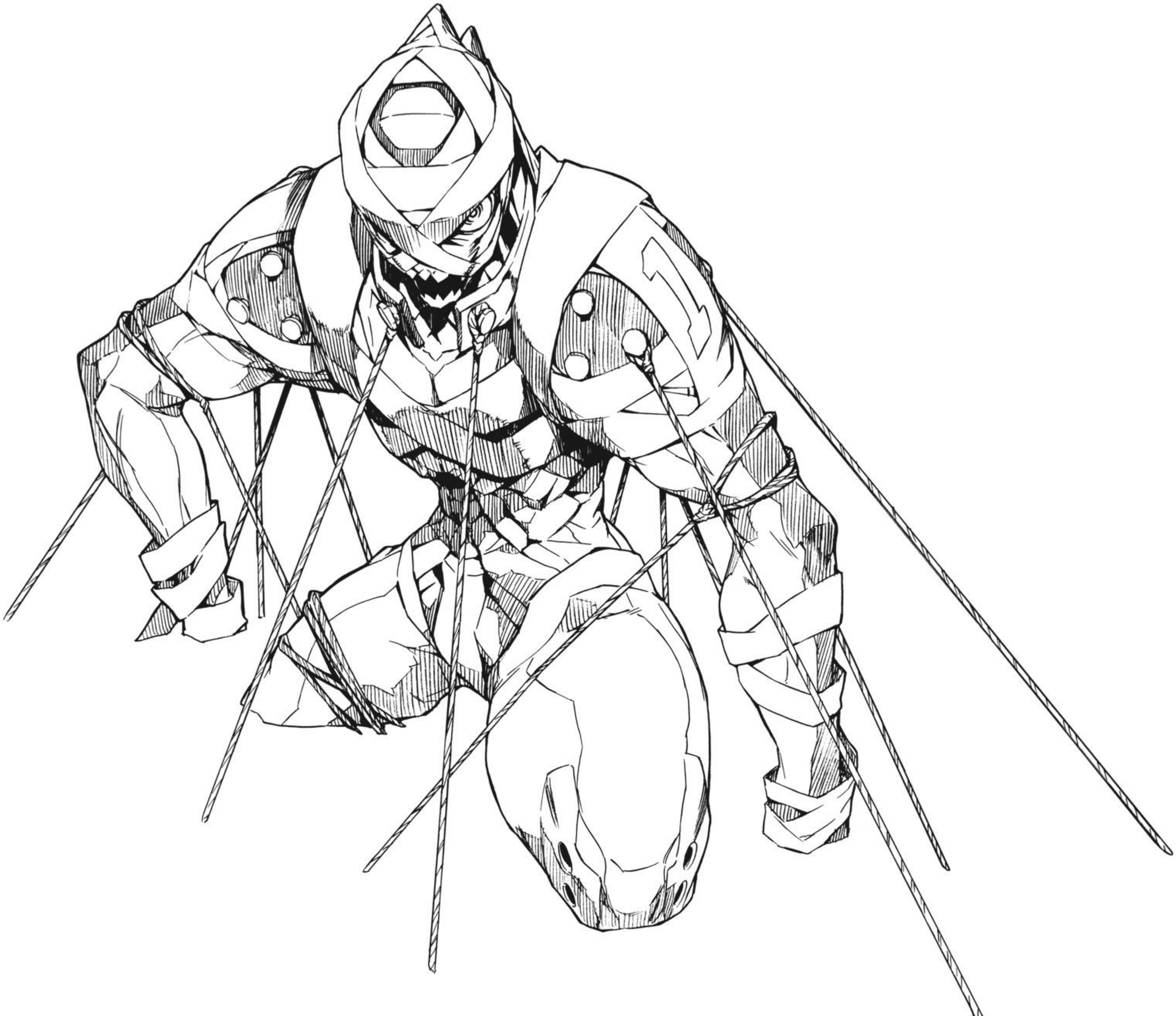


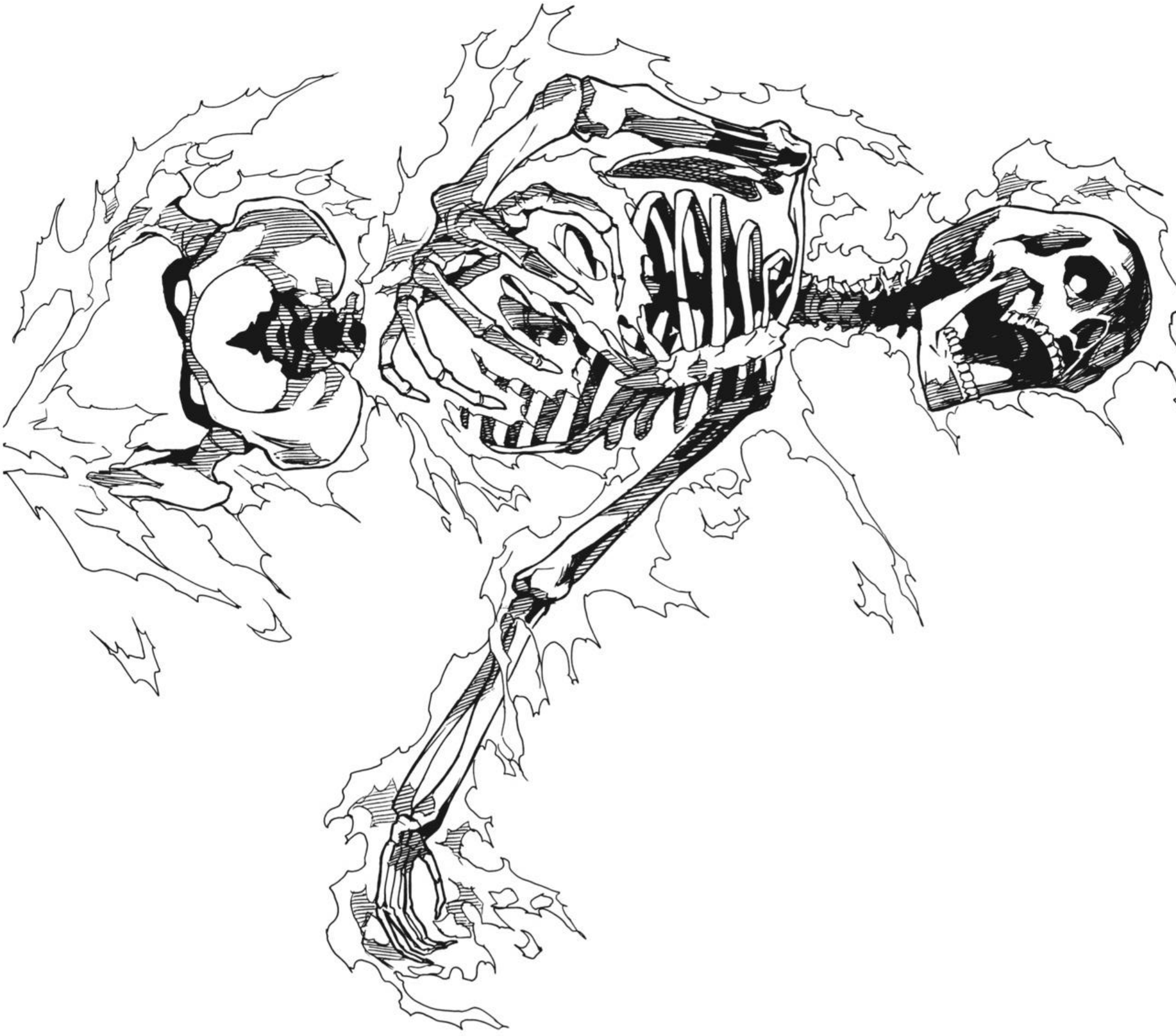




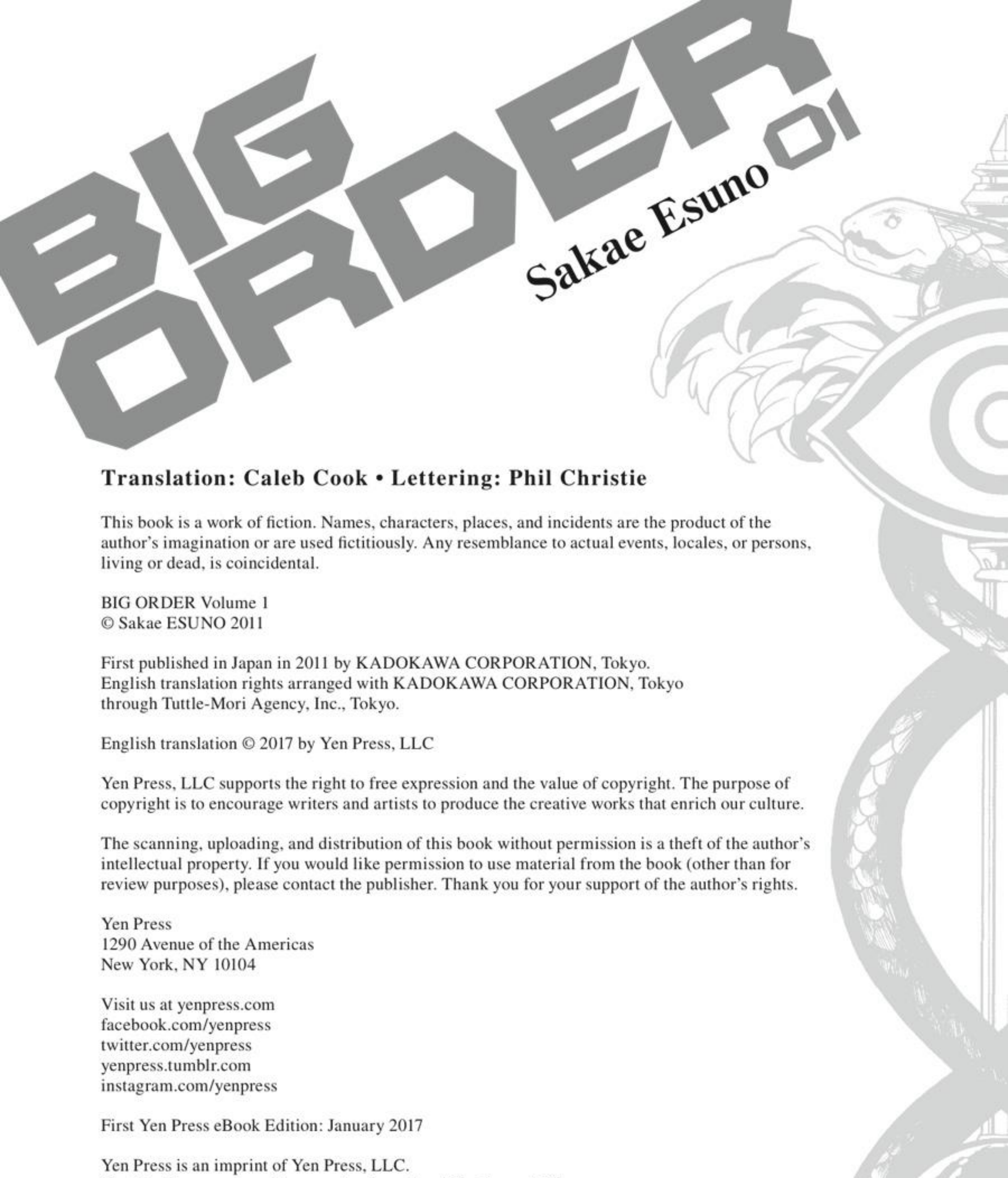
User: Eiji Hoshimiya
Wish: World Domination
Ability: Complete physical control over everything within his domain

Eiji has physical control over all objects, people, and "targets" that fall within his domain. Any area he walks over becomes part of his domain, giving him even more control. Orders must be given verbally, and the anchor and wire that plunge into the target are proof of Eiji's control. The anchor will not dislodge itself after a command is given, so long as the target is still in his domain. However, as the nature of Eiji's control only extends to the physical, he cannot manipulate the hearts and minds of others. Ten years ago, his newfound power ran rampant and caused the Great Destruction, though the process by which it occurred still isn't clear.





BIG
ORDER



Translation: Caleb Cook • Lettering: Phil Christie

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, or persons, living or dead, is coincidental.

BIG ORDER Volume 1
© Sakae ESUNO 2011

First published in Japan in 2011 by KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged with KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo
through Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., Tokyo.

English translation © 2017 by Yen Press, LLC

Yen Press, LLC supports the right to free expression and the value of copyright. The purpose of copyright is to encourage writers and artists to produce the creative works that enrich our culture.

The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book without permission is a theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like permission to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), please contact the publisher. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Yen Press
1290 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10104

Visit us at yenpress.com
facebook.com/yenpress
twitter.com/yenpress
yenpress.tumblr.com
instagram.com/yenpress

First Yen Press eBook Edition: January 2017

Yen Press is an imprint of Yen Press, LLC.
The Yen Press name and logo are trademarks of Yen Press, LLC.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

ISBN: 978-0-316-43584-0 (ebook)

Sakae Esuno

02

BLEACH

PARENTAL ADVISORY
WARNING
EXPLICIT CONTENT

DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT OFFICES: UNDERGROUND DETENTION CENTER

RIGHT BACK WHERE I STARTED!

GACHA (CREAK) GACHA

UGH!

OOOO (WHOOSH)

Subject 5: Outpost Drama
Place: Dazaifu

I CAN'T BELIEVE THIS. JUST WHEN I WAS ABOUT TO HAVE MY REVENGE...!

SO THE BOSSES UPSTAIRS WANNA USE EIJI TO STAGE A COUP D'ÉTAT.....

GACHA (CREAK)

SECOND LIEU-TENANT KURENAI, GET OUT.

YOU'RE BEING RE-LEASED.

MUKIII (MAD)

I'M THE ONE WHO'S GONNA KILL EIJI!

LET ME OUT!

Second Hand: Benkei Narukami

First Hand: Raidou Fuwa

Sixth Hand: Lauryn Wright

Seventh Hand: Kokudo Soumoku

Third Hand: Yoshitsune Hiiragi

Eighth Hand: Nene Minamoto

Ninth Hand: Mari Kunou

Fourth Hand: Iyo

Tenth Hand: Ayahito Sundan

Fifth Hand: Taikei Nehara

BIG ORDER



BIG ORDER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

001 Subject 5: “Outpost Drama”
Place: Dazaifu

041 Subject 6: “The Rock God and the Maiden”
Place: Kanmon Tunnel

077 Subject 7: “The Invasion of Yamaguchi”
Place: Shimonoseki

095 Subject 8: “For Whom You Swing Your Fist”
Place: Sanyo-Onoda

123 Subject 9: “Sin”
Place: Sanyo-Onoda

159 Subject 10: “Protect Their Bodies / Attack Their Ethics”
Place: Sanyo-Onoda



KYUSHU HAS DECLARED WAR ON THE WORLD!!!

NEWS

The criminal behind the Great Destruction ten years ag
Eiji Hoshimiya

THE ORDER RESPONSIBLE FOR THE GREAT DESTRUCTION TEN YEARS AGO.

...EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

TV: KYUSHU DECLARES INDEPENDENCE

DAZAIFU CITY, KYUSHU:
DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT OFFICES

GOOOO (WHOOSH)

THEY TOOK SENA HOSTAGE ...

...IN ORDER TO PROP ME UP AS THE LEADER BEHIND A COUP D'ÉTAT ON A GLOBAL SCALE...

THERE'S NO GOING BACK NOW...!

.....
STILL...

...THIS MIGHT BE MY CHANCE TO SAVE SENA...!

DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT OFFICES:
CONFERENCE ON THE INVASION OF YAMAGUCHI

I'VE JUST GOTTA USE THEM TO MY ADVANTAGE ...

NOW, THEN...

...I WILL EXPLAIN OUR PLAN TO INVADE YAMAGUCHI.

...AND BEAT THEM AT THEIR OWN GAME.....!

広島
Hiroshima
Yamaguchi
山口
BI
(FLIK)
福岡
Saga
佐賀
Fukuoka
Oita
大分
Kumamoto
熊本
AND THE INVASION OF YAMAGUCHI IS THE ALL-IMPORTANT FIRST STEP...
...AS YOU CAN SEE.
FIRST, THE PRIMARY GOAL OF ALL OF US HERE AT DAZAIFU—
KACHI
(CLICK)
KACHI
カチ
カチ
TO RULE THE WORLD AND RECREATE IT AS A PLACE FOR ALL ORDERS!
Yamaguchi
山口
福岡
Fukuoka
賀
Saga
Kumamoto
熊本
Miyazaki
THE PROBLEM, OF COURSE, IS THE EXISTENCE OF OTHER ORDERS.
TEN HANDS
NINTH HAND: MARI KUNOU
(TACTICIAN)

PA (POP)

HEAVY ROCKSTAR AND THEIR FEROCIOUS ROCK GOD!

THE CURRENT OVERSEER OF YAMAGUCHI HAS POWER OVER ROCKS AND STONES.

Yamaguchi

120

GUESS I'LL LEAVE YAMAGUCHI TO THESE GUYS...

AND THE ONE LEADING THIS INVASION WILL BE...

ROCKS AND STONES ARE NO USE TO ME, BUT THERE STILL MIGHT BE SOMEONE THERE WHO CAN HEAL SENA.

SO THE PROVI-SIONAL GOVERN-MENT IN EACH REGION IS RULED BY AN ORDER...

YOU.

EIJI-SAMA.

H-HOLD ON A SEC. HIIRA-GI!

WHAT'S THE BIG IDEA, SEND-ING ME TO THE FRONT LINES ...!?

BAN (SLAM)

.....!?

HUH?

I'M THE KING, AREN'T I...!?

GAKU (JOLT)

.....!

BUILDING OUR DEFENSES IS THE BEST STRATEGY, NO?

HOW ABOUT I START OFF BY CIRCLING THE SHORE OF KYUSHU, TURNING THE WHOLE PLACE INTO MY DOMAIN?

LISTEN, HIIRAGI. I'VE GOT A BETTER IDEA.

(DOSU (THUMP) ドズ

TELL ME ALL ABOUT YOUR STUPID PLAN, THEN.

FINE! ..... WHAT-EVER.

PFFT.

.....

HUH ...!?

NIKO (SMILE)

I REFUSE. ♡

THE FULL EXPLA-NATION COMES ONCE YOU'RE IN THE FIELD.

NOT EXPLAINING THE PLAN *HERE* IS PART OF THE PLAN ITSELF.

DOKA (STOMP)

ドゥ

OUTTA MY WAY.

NO FREAK-ING WAY!

DOKA

ドカ

HEY, HIIRA-GI...

KA (FLASH)

BARA

BARA (CRUMBLE)

DON (BOOM)

!?

WHAT WAS THAT JUST NOW ...!?

IF YOUR AIM IS TO INTERFERE WITH THE COLONEL'S PLANS...

...THEN I, MARI KUNOU, HIS DIRECT AIDE, WILL BE FORCED TO STOP YOU!

I'M NO AMATEUR WHEN IT COMES TO TACTICS.

KUWA (ROAR)

WHILE YOU, ON THE OTHER HAND, ARE A MERE PUP-PET!

SCHOOL-BOY KINGS SHOULD SHUT UP AND DO WHAT THEY'RE TOLD!

SHIT...

GU GU...

YOU CAN'T SHOW UP LOOKING LIKE THAT, SO BE SURE TO GET CHANGED IN THE NEXT THIRTY MINUTES!

THE OPERATION BEGINS IN TWENTY-FOUR HOURS, BUT BEFORE THAT, WE HAVE A TELE-CONFERENCE WITH THE PRIME MINISTER OF JAPAN.

NEEDLESS TO SAY, THIS WILL BE AN EXCELLENT OPPORTUNITY TO BROADCAST OUR INTENTIONS TO THE WORLD.

SFX: GU (PRESS) GU

WANNA PUNCH THAT DAMN WOMAN...

THIS IS MY ROOM!?

DAMMIT... WHICH ONE OF US IS THE REAL RULER HERE?

NOT ME, I GUESS...

ZUBU
ズブ
ZUBU
ズブ
AND THIS BED!
OHH.
OHHH!?
ZUBU
ズブ
ZUBU (SQUISH)
ズブ
WHAT A HIGH CEILING!
WHAT A CRAZY DAY.
BOSU (FWUMP)
ボス…
SIGH.
THIS PLACE IS HUGE!
SENA
……

NO. I CAN'T START THINKING LIKE THAT...

SHE'S ONLY GOT SIX MONTHS TO LIVE..... BUT I GUESS SHE'S SAFE IN THE MEANTIME...?

I REALLY DON'T FEEL LIKE OBEYING THEIR DUMB ORDERS.

ANYWAY, I'VE GOT CONTROL OVER EVERY INCH OF THESE DAZAIFU OFFICES.

AND I TOLD THE TEN HANDS THEY'RE NOT TO LEAVE THE PREMISES ...

DAMN THAT WOMAN ...

ALL I'VE GOT GOING FOR ME...

...IS ATTI-TUDE, REALLY.

NO. I'M NOTHING SPECIAL. THAT'S WHY THEY'RE MAKING ME A PUPPET RULER.

IF ONLY I WAS STRON-GER...

KA (STEP) カッ KA カッ

IT'S OKAY.

!

THE STARS SAY YOU'LL BE FINE...

TA (TMP) TA

...WHA?

He's an infamous moron.

THIS IS THE PRIME MINISTER...? NEVER SEEN HIM BEFORE.

I'll do the talking. Just follow my lead.

I'LL BE FINE, HUH ...?

CONSIDERING HOW DRASTIC A THING A COUP D'ÉTAT IS...

...YOU SURE ARE YOUNG.....!

AH.

SO YOU'RE EIJI HOSHIMIYA-KUN.

THIS TWO-FACED...

OUR EIJI-SAMA IS AN AMAZING LEADER.

?

AH, JUST ONE MOMENT.

GETTING RIGHT TO BUSINESS, EIJI-SAMA WOULD LIKE TO FORMALIZE HIS DECLARATION...

SO I'D LIKE TO GET SOME FACTS STRAIGHT FIRST.

GARA ガラ

...I'M NOT ALL THAT SMART. NOT GOOD AT MUCH ELSE BESIDES GOLF AND ADDING UP MAHJONG SCORES.

YOU SEE...

ガラ GARA (RATTLE)

THAT'S THE PREMISE WE'RE GOING WITH HERE?

THE DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT OFFICES WERE TAKEN OVER BY EIJI-KUN, AND YOU COULDN'T DO ANYTHING TO STOP HIM?

VERY WELL. IN THAT CASE...

PACHIN (SNAP)

GARA ガラ

GARA ガラ

YES, WE'RE UNDER EIJI-SAMA'S CONTROL ...

..... WHAT'S THIS ABOUT?

BAN (BAM)

WE WILL BEGIN EXECUTING THE TEN HANDS' TOKYO-DWELLING RELATIVES, ONE AT A TIME!

IF YOU'RE ALL REALLY BEING CONTROLLED BY EIJI-KUN AND UNABLE TO RESIST...

...THEN YOU'LL JUST HAVE TO STAND THERE AND WATCH IN SILENCE.

SFX: GAKU (TREMBLE) GAKU

ZAN (SLICE)

THERE'S ONE!

ZAWA (CHATTER)

.....!

GATA (STAND)

.....

BUSHUUU (SPLURT)

DOSHA (THUD)

.....

MY UNCLE.

WELL? ANYTHING YOU'D LIKE TO SAY?

I did.

Didn't you go and tell our relatives to hide themselves ...?

Not sure how they found them all this quickly.

THERE'S TWO!

AND THREE!

ANYTHING TO SAY NOW?

LITTLE KENGO...!

BURU

BURU (TREMBLE)

YES, OF COURSE ...

HMP.H.

MY APOLO-GIES TO THOSE SITTING DOWN TO A MEAL.

YOU CAN'T BE SERIOUS, PRIME MINISTER ...

YOU KNOW THE ***WHOLE COUNTRY*** IS SEEING THIS, YES?

O (WHOOSH)

KENGO!

GIRO (GLARE)

BUT WE'RE UP AGAINST EIJI HOSHIMIYA, WHO CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUCTION TEN YEARS AGO.

WE DON'T HAVE THE LUXURY OF MERCY!

NUMBER FOUR. DO IT.

WAIT.

KILL AS MANY AS YOU WANT.

IT'S POINTLESS.

RATHER...

PIKU (TWITCH)

IS HE BLUFFING .....?

THIS LITTLE TEST IS MEANT TO DETERMINE IF THERE'S A POINT OR NOT.

SU (FWIP)

...IS ME, OLD MAN!

...THE ONE WITH A REASON TO KILL HOSTAGES...

CHA (CHAK)

ドン
DON (BLAM)
DON
ドン
DON
ドン
DON
ドン
NO...
ガタ
GATA (RISE)
HE SHOT HIS ALLIES .....!?
ザワ
ZAWA (CHATTER)

PRETENDING TO BE COERCED BY THE GREAT DESTROYER FROM TEN YEARS AGO WOULD BE THE PERFECT COVER.

WE'VE SUSPECTED FOR A WHILE THAT DAZAIFU MIGHT BE PLANNING AN INSURREC-TION!!!

OR SO WE THOUGHT.

SO EVEN IF THEY WERE TO FAIL, THEY COULD PIN THE BLAME ON THE BOY...

BAN (BAM)

!!?

WERE WE WRONG ...!!?

BA (FLIP)

THIS IS NOT THE TIME ...!

WHY'S SHE HERE.....!!?

TAN (BAM)

WHA— .....

RIN!!?

DO (STOMP)

DO

DO

DIE, EIJI~! ♡

HE KILLED HER!?

THERE'S NO DOUBT!!!

TCH.....

DOSHA (SPLAT)

IF THE REST OF YOU DON'T WANT TO END UP LIKE THIS...

...YOU'D BETTER SURREN-DER!!! !!!

I, EIJI HOSHIMIYA, AND MY DOMAIN OF KYUSHU FORMALLY DECLARE WAR ON THE WORLD!

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA (CHATTER)

(TENSE)

NNN.

A FARCE, ALL TO SAVE THE HOS-TAGES ...

KORO (ROLL)

コロ...

YOU STOPPED THE BULLETS JUST BEFORE THEY CONNECTED ...

EIJI HOSHI-MIYA...

DID SHE ESCAPE? NO...

WHY WAS RIN ...?

THE ONLY ONE WHO COULD COME UP WITH A PLOT LIKE THAT IS...

...IT WOULD SEEM CLEAR TO THE WORLD THAT DAZAIFU IS OPPOSED TO MY CONTROL.

WHETHER I SHOT RIN OR SHE MANAGED TO KILL ME...





Subject 5 : END

BEFORE THE INVASION, AT DAZAIFU HQ

YOU'RE TAKING SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI WITH YOU ON THIS OPERATION?

Yep.

.....

BUT...

COLONEL .....

NOT A PROBLEM, IS IT?

I JUST WANT SOME BACKUP THAT WASN'T PART OF YOUR CALCULATIONS.

THIS WON'T AFFECT THE OPERATION.

IT'S FINE.

IT'S TIME.

KYUSHU SIDE, KANMON BRIDGE
(NOT CURRENTLY IN USE)

KANMON TUNNEL ENTRANCE

LET'S START THE INVASION!

関門トンネル

EIJI~! ♡

SIGN: KANMON TUNNEL

Subject 6: "The Rock God and the Maiden"
Place: Kanmon Tunnel

ZU (CREEP) ズ ZU ズ...

.....NO. OBVIOUSLY NOT.

WHAT'S THIS ABOUT!?

YOU BROUGHT ME ALONG BECAUSE YOU FINALLY FEEL LIKE GETTING KILLED!?

IT'S JUST BETTER THAN RELYING ENTIRELY ON THE TEN HANDS.

I'M GONNA CRUSH...

... YAMAGUCHI'S ORDER MYSELF!

YOU'RE HERE TO HELP ME WITH ALL THAT, RIN.

AFTER ALL... I DON'T WANT THE TEN HANDS CALLING ME A "PUPPET" ANYMORE. ESPECIALLY HIIRAGI.

AND NOW I CAN SEARCH FOR A WAY TO CURE SENA.

DON (WHAP)

ORDER!

"NOTIFY ME AS SOON AS YOU SPOT THE ROCK GOD"!!

.....

PATHETIC LITTLE BOY.

YOU USE THAT TO PICK UP GIRLS TOO?

DUMMY.

LIKE I'D EVER HELP YOU!

THEY'LL ONLY EXPLAIN ONCE WE'RE OUT OF THIS TUNNEL...

THEY'RE REALLY KEEPING YOU OUT OF THE LOOP, HUH.

SO...

WHERE'RE WE HEADING RIGHT NOW.....?

PACHIN (SHINK)

PISHI (CRACK)

GARA (CRUMBLE)

!?

STARSEEKER!!!

HARA (FLAP)

GU (GRAB)

ORDER!

DO DO DO (RUMBLE) ドドドド

"AVOID THE SIDES. STICK TO THE MIDDLE. DODGE TO THE RIGHT."

"MOVE TOWARD THE LIGHT TO ESCAPE."

"CALAMITY WILL RAIN DOWN IN THE DARKNESS OF THE CAVE."

FAIR LUCK

中ニロ

CALAMITY WILL RAIN DOWN IN THE DARKNESS OF THE CAVE.

AVOID THE SIDES. STICK TO THE MIDDLE. DODGE TO THE RIGHT.

MOVE TOWARD THE LIGHT TO ESCAPE.

KYAHHH! DO DO DO ドドド

!

WE MADE IT PAST...!?

IT'S YOU...!

NEXT... WE MOVE RIGHT.

...“100% ACCURATE PREDIC-TIONS.”

MY ABILITY IS...

DO DO DO DO DO

.....

WATCH OUT, EIJI.

WE'RE NOT GONNA MAKE IT OUT IN TIME!

HAVE FAITH.

ZU (CRASH)

ZU

ZU

ZUN

旧日トンネル

I AM THE FOURTH HAND.

IYO.

HAA.

HAA.

HAA. HAA.

...

WHAT AN AMAZING ABILITY. SHE SAVED OUR LIVES ...

I WILL NOW EXPLAIN THE OPERATION.

AS USUAL.

OW ...

GYU (PINCH) ギュー

Hey. What're you staring at?

THEY ARE MERELY THE BAIT.

THE 1ST PLATOON HAS ALREADY ENTERED YAMAGUCHI VIA THE COASTLINE AND IS NOW ENGAGED IN BATTLE WITH THE ROCK GOD.

OUR TRUE OBJECTIVE...

DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT OFFICES

COLONEL. EIJI HOSHIMIYA HAS ENTERED YAMAGUCHI.

1ST PLATOON IS ENGAGING THE ROCK GOD WITHIN SHIMONOSEKI CITY.

OOO (WHOOSH)

...IS TO AVOID A FIGHT WITH HEAVY ROCKSTAR ALTOGETHER ...

...AND SECURE A CERTAIN INDIVIDUAL AT A DESIGNATED POINT!

1st Platoon
第一小隊

4km

Eiji Hoshimiya
星宮エイジ

EIJI-SAMA'S GROUP SHOULD BE FOUR KILOMETERS FROM THE 1ST PLATOON...

THIS WAY, THERE'S NO DANGER OF HIM RUNNING INTO THE ROCK GOD.

HOLD ON A SEC...! WHO'S THIS "CERTAIN INDIVID-UAL" WE'RE SECUR-ING?

I THOUGHT I WAS GONNA FIGHT ROCK GOD!?

YOU MAY NOT FIGHT.

BUT WHO IS THIS PERSON ANYWAY ...!?

I CANNOT TELL YOU.

AH.

IT'S KERORON. THIS REALLY TAKES ME BACK! ♪

WHAT AM I, THEIR ERRAND BOY?

...

THIS WAY.

ピコ PIKO

ピコ PIKO (TWITCH)

THE FOURTH HAND, IYO.

AFTER YESTERDAY, I THOUGHT SHE MIGHT ACTUALLY LISTEN TO REASON...

DAMN.

NO. IF I SCREW UP THE OPERATION, THE TEN HANDS WILL NEVER RECOGNIZE ME AS THEIR KING.

IF I CAN JUST BEAT ROCK GOD...

SHOULD I IGNORE ORDERS AND HEAD FOR THE 1ST PLATOON'S LOCATION...?

...THEN I WON'T GET TO ACCOMPLISH ANYTHING AT ALL...!

PIKO (TWITCH)

ピコ

ピコ PIKO

BUT IF I KEEP GETTING LED AROUND BY IYO...

WHAT'S WITH THIS WEIRD RIBBON ANYWAY?

?

HEY...

UZU (TEMPTED)

うずず...

PIKO ピコ

PIKO ピコ

THIS WAY.

BURU (TREMBLE)
BURU
HUH...?
Y—...
YOU MAY NOT TOUCH...
SHITATAN (T-TMP)
SHUTA (SPIN)
!!?

BURU

BURU (TREMBLE)

W—

WE'D END UP MAKING A BABY.....

.....

WHAA?

GAPO (POP)

FOUND SOMETHING COOL!

PWAHH!

HMM. ♪

HMM, HMM. ♪

...AND HE'LL DIE FROM THE SHOCK?

MAYBE I CAN POP OUT AND SCARE EIJI...

MY FATHER EXPLAINED IT TO ME...

HM?

.....

IYO. YOU MUSTN'T ALLOW ANY MAN TO TOUCH YOU THERE...!

A SHRINE MAIDEN'S SPIRITUAL ABILITY IS LINKED TO HER PURITY.

A MAN'S TOUCH WILL PLANT A CHILD WITHIN YOU...!

NO MATTER HOW HARD I TRAINED, THOUGH, I COULDN'T ACHIEVE SPIRITUAL POWER.

SO I WISHED.

AH...

SO HER DAD FED HER THAT LINE TO KEEP HER AWAY FROM BOYS.

MY WISH WAS "TO ATTAIN MIRACULOUS VIRTUE."

BUT... IF I AM WITH CHILD...

...I WILL SURELY LOSE MY STATUS AS A SHRINE MAIDEN, AND WITH IT, MY ABILITY.

WHAT I RECEIVED WAS "STAR SEEKER."

FINE. GOT IT. COME ON DOWN NOW.

YOU WON'T TOUCH ME...?

NOW I REALLY WANNA TOUCH HER!

NOPE!

BUT...

HMM?

EIJI~!
♡

I DON'T WANNA DO ANYTHING TO OFFEND YOU.

DO
DO
DO
DO
DO (STOMP)
BUH ?
YOU GOTTA SEE THIS COOL THING I FOUND~! ♪
HAA.
HAA.
HAA.
HUH?
OHH... NO, IT'S NOT THIS THING.
THAT SURE IS SOMETHING..... NOW THROW IT ASIDE AND COME WITH US.
.....
HUH?
SOME-THING BETTER!
GAPO (POP)
ZUZUN (LOOM)
YOU WANTED SOMEONE TO FIGHT, DIDN'T YOU, EIJI?

ZU (CREEP)
ZU
OD
THE ROCK GOD!?
WHY IS IT HERE ...?
WHA— ...!?
THIS IS...!!?
IT'S THE ENEMY!
ZUN (LOOM)

DON (SLAM)

GAH...

1ST PLATOON WAS ANNIHI-LATED!?

AND THE ROCK GOD HAS MADE CONTACT WITH EIJI-SAMA'S GROUP!?

I-IT JUST STARTED RUNNING OFF IN EIJI-SAMA'S DIRECTION ...

MY APOLO-GIES...!

THAT'S ODD.

.....

.....

HOW WOULD THE ROCK GOD KNOW EIJI-SAMA'S LOCATION ...!?

THE ONLY ONES WITH THAT INFO ARE THE TEN HANDS AND A FEW OTHERS.

EIJI-SAMA, LEFT!

!

!? I CAN'T CONTROL IT... IS THAT BECAUSE IT'S THE ENEMY'S ABILITY!?

I'M SO STUPID. NO WAY I COULD TAKE THAT THING...

NO.....

ドドドド
DO
DO
DO
THERE IS A WAY TO BEAT IT.....!!
DO (RUMBLE)
ZU (LIMP)
HER LEG...
EIJI-SAMA.
LET ME DIVINE THE ENEMY'S LOCATION...
.....WHAT AM I EVEN THINK-ING?
OOO (WHOOSH)
I'LL JUST HAVE TO FIGURE OUT WHERE THE REAL BODY IS.
STILL, THAT WON'T BE MUCH TO BOAST ABOUT.
ZA (SKID)
ZA
ZA
SO THE ORDER MUST BE CLOSE BY, CONTROL-LING IT.
IT MIGHT BE BIG, BUT IT'S STILL JUST AN AVATAR. THE ENEMY'S ABILITY, BROUGHT TO LIFE.

SCREW TRYING TO IMPRESS PEOPLE— PROTECTING WOMEN COMES FIRST.

WE'LL GET THROUGH THIS TOGETHER.

UHH...

HUH?

I WAS RIGHT.

JUST AS I FORESAW, YOU ARE MY.....

MY...

ZURU (SLUMP)

ズルッ..

RIN .....

SHUT UP!

UHH.....

IYO!

OVER HERE, ROCK GOD!

AH.

I FOUND EIJI!

GEH!!?



AH.

I DIDN'T MEAN TO...

N-NO...

PORO (TEAR)

.....

SHIO (DROOP)

しお

SHIO

しお

.....?

WHAT!?

POTE (THUMP)

ぽて

AHHHHH!

WAHH!

HEH

ZU

ZUN (STOMP)

Subject 6:END

Subject 7

TEN YEARS AGO, I WAS A ROUGH, OUT-OF-CONTROL KID.

ADULTS IN THE NEIGH-BORHOOD ALL CALLED ME "DYNAMITE GIRL."

ANYONE WHO MADE FUN OF ME FOR BEING A GIRL WAS MY ENEMY.

TON (TAP)

TON

THAT'S WHY MY FATHER TOLD ME...

...IN THE HOPES OF MAKING ME MORE LADYLIKE—

GYAAH!

DOGGO (POW)

...HE SAID, AS HE PUNCHED ME.

DON'T PUNCH PEOPLE OVER STUPID THINGS !!!

...AND MY MOM—AN ACCOM-PLISHED SWORDS-WOMAN.

MY PARENTS WERE BOTH FIGHTERS. MY DAD—A BLACK BELT IN KARATE...

EITHER WAY, I DIDN'T WANT TO FOLLOW IN MY FATHER'S FOOTSTEPS.

ACCORDING TO MY FATHER, HE WASN'T SURE HOW MY MOTHER TOOK HIS PROPOSAL. DID HE FORCE HER, OR HAD SHE ALREADY FALLEN FOR HIM?

DON (BAM)

USE THOSE FISTS TO PROTECT THE ONES YOU LOVE!

I LOVED MY FATHER.

DO (RUMBLE) DO DO DO DO

ドドドドド

BUT I LOST EVERYTHING TO THE FLAMES THAT FATEFUL DAY.

!

DO

DO

DO
(RUMBLE)

AND THAT'S WHY, EIJI HOSHI-MIYA...

DO

DO

DO

AHAHAHA!

...
YOU ARE GOING TO DIE!!!!!!

!

THE IRRI-GATION DITCH ……!?

HE JUST WON'T GIVE UP!

FURA

FURA (TODDLE)

ドドド

SO YOU'RE THE IMMORTAL SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI...?

NOW THIS IS A "WORTHY" MEETING.

Subject 7: "The Invasion of Yamaguchi"
Place: Shimonoseki

I KNOW ALL ABOUT YOUR LITTLE SQUABBLE FROM THAT TV BROADCAST.

GARIRI (CHOMP)

NOTHING LIKE AN ORDINARY, "WORTH-LESS" PEBBLE.

HEH HEH.

OH, SORRY.

.....WHO'S THIS?

THE NAME'S KAGEKIYO TAIRANO.

I'M "HEAVY ROCKSTAR," THE ORDER WHO RULES OVER YAMAGUCHI.

HIRA (FLIP)

HUP.

TAN (TMP)

!

WHY'S THE MASTERMIND BEHIND ROCK GOD HERE...?

HMM.

A G-STRING...?

TA

SUPIII (BREATHE)

CAN'T COME OUT?

SO THAT'S HIS "DOMAIN" .....

I NOTICED YOU'VE ONLY BEEN RUNNING AROUND WITHIN THE BOUNDARY.

NOT EVEN IF I PULL YOU?

BITA (HALT)

ヒタ

GU (STRAIN)

GU

GU (GRAB)

!

RE-PORT?

SO HE CAN PHYSICALLY CONTROL PEOPLE HE GIVES ORDERS TO...JUST LIKE THE REPORT SAID.

GUESS I'D BETTER WATCH MY STEP.

NU (THRUST)

COME OVER TO MY SIDE...

...SECOND LIEU-TENANT KURENAI.

...SORRY, BUT MY GOAL IS TO—

KILL EIJI HOSHIMIYA? JOIN THE CLUB.

!? WHAT'S UP WITH THIS G-STRING GIRL...?

I'M OUT TO PROTECT YAMAGUCHI, Y'SEE.

TAKE A LOOK. THE PLACE MIGHT BE DESERTED NOW, BUT PEOPLE LIVE HERE, Y'KNOW. PEOPLE LIKE THAT KID.

SO I'M COMING AT YOU WITH AN OFFER.

BUT RIGHT NOW, MY PEOPLE HERE ARE IN BIG TROUBLE DUE TO CERTAIN CIRCUM-STANCES.

HEH.

.....

TODAY, PLEASE.

A NUKE'S ABOUT TO DROP ON YAMA-GUCHI.

HE-HE-HE-HEH.

AND IT'S COMING FROM OUR VERY OWN UNITED NATIONS.

RIGHT NOW, THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S HOLDING A VOTE ON THE USAGE OF NUCLEAR WEAPONS AGAINST EIJI HOSHIMIYA.

THAT'S THEIR SO-CALLED "INVASION OF YAMAGUCHI"!

THEY'RE PLANNING TO DESTROY YAMAGUCHI. NOT THAT I'M GONNA LET 'EM!

BUT DAZAIFU TURNED THE TABLES BY SENDING EIJI HOSHIMIYA HIMSELF INTO YAMAGUCHI...

A NUKE ...!

THE ICBM THEY'RE GONNA USE IS PACKING A 475-KILOTON PAYLOAD CAPABLE OF WIPING A CITY OFF THE MAP AND LEAVING IT COVERED IN RADIATION.

DAZAIFU STOLE AN EARLY-WARNING SYSTEM SATELLITE THAT'LL ALERT THEM TO THE LAUNCH, BUT...

...INTERCEPTING A MISSILE COMING FROM OUTSIDE THE ATMOSPHERE'D BE IMPOSSIBLE—EVEN FOR ORDERS.

AND HOW DOES THIS LADY KNOW SO MUCH ABOUT OUR PLANS ...?

THERE'S ONLY ONE WAY TO STOP IT.

...A MOVING TARGET ...!?

THEY MADE EIJI ...

WHA—
...?

DID YOU SAY A NUKE .....!?

HAA.

HAA.

I'VE GOTTA KILL EIJI HOSHIMIYA BEFORE THE LAUNCH!

ZU (CREEP)

ZU

ズズ..

SO, WHADDAYA SAY? WANNA TEAM UP?

HAA.
HAA.
HAA.
...WE'RE NOT SURE HOW TO...
.....YES. HEAVY ROCKSTAR INTENDS TO ATTACK BY *CALLING IN A NUCLEAR MISSILE STRIKE.*
WE AT DAZAIFU ARE TRYING TO PREVENT THAT FROM HAPPENING, BUT...
DO (DOOM) OO...
A NUKE...!!
FIRST, IYO'S STOMACH BALLOONS UP. NOW THIS...
WHAT THE HELL DO I DO NOW?
AHH

EIJI-SAMA.....

HUH?

.....

Subject 7 : END

HAA.
HAA.

HUH!?

EIJI-SAMA...

Subject 8

.....
ABOUT TO WHAT!?

WH-WHAT'S GOING ON WITH HER...?

I'M ABOUT TO...

UHHH.

TO...

...GIVE BIRTH...

WHA!!?

ZA (STEP)

WHOA.

ARE YOU KIDDING ME .....!?

BA (TURN)

!?

OH MY. IS SHE PREG-NANT...?

EXCUSE ME!!

TA (TMP) TA

IS THERE A DOCTOR AROUND HERE .....!!?

Subject 8: “For Whom You Swing Your Fist”
Place: Sanyo-Onoda

HAA.

UGH...

HAA.

HER WATER HASN'T BROKEN YET, SO SHE SHOULD STILL BE FINE...

YOU TWO SHOULD WAIT HERE UNTIL THE DOCTOR MAKES HIS ROUNDS.

.....

.....

.....

THERE'S GONNA BE A BABY...

THIS WASN'T... JUST A FALSE PREG-NANCY?

SERIOUSLY ...!?

OH. IT ISN'T?

THAT'S NO FACE FOR A HUSBAND TO BE MAKING AT A TIME LIKE THIS! CHEER UP!

PAN (PAT)

NO, IT'S NOT MINE.....

...

MEN GOTTA TAKE RESPON-SIBILITY AT TIMES LIKE THIS, RIGHT ...?

YORO (SWAY)

MY CHILD.....

.....

AH, NO.

IT'S MINE.

AH, I'M SORRY.

WE JUST DON'T HAVE MANY YOUNG PEOPLE AROUND HERE, SO IT'S RARE TO HAVE A BIRTH.

WHAT IS IT?

EIJI-SAMA.

I KNOW.

ORDINARY PEOPLE WITHOUT ABILITIES CAN'T SEE YOUR DOMAIN, EIJI-SAMA.

BUT ALL THE SAME, LET'S TRY TO KEEP YOUR IDENTITY A SECRET FOR NOW.....

EIJI-SAMA.

.....

GIRI (GRIND)

ギリ..

I KNOW.

...AT THIS RATE, THE MISSILE IS REALLY GOING TO HIT US.

@_@

...IT WAS MY CARE-LESSNESS THAT LED TO THIS.

PLEASE, JUST LEAVE ME HERE AND ESCAPE.

FU

DAN (SLAM)

I DON'T KNOW WHAT TO DO YET!

SO JUST SHUT UP!

SFX: WASHI (RUB) WASHI

IT'S JUST...I'M TRYING TO THINK UP A SOLUTION OVER HERE.

BIKU (TWITCH)

NOT THAT I CAN GET IN TOUCH ANYWAY. SIGNAL MUST BE JAMMED.

WHICH MEANS I'VE GOT NO HOPE OF THEM SAVING ME.

DRIVING ME OUT OF KYUSHU WAS THEIR WAY OF PROTECTING THEMSELVES.

THE GUYS AT DAZAIFU KNEW I WAS GONNA BE TARGETED BY THIS NUKE FROM THE VERY START...

HOW DO I GET OUT OF THIS ONE...?

!?

GU (GRAB)

MA'AM! WHAT IS THAT!?

ALL BEFORE THEY LAUNCH THAT NUKE AT YAMA-GUCHI!!!

WITH ME OUTSIDE HIS DOMAIN AND YOU INSIDE, WE CAN TEAM UP TO KILL EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

OOH. SO YOU'RE OLDER THAN ME, SECOND LIEU-TENANT KURE-NAI!

NOW TO MAKE BIG SIS HERE MY UN-WITTING ACCOM-PLICE...!

THE LAUNCH IS A DONE DEAL! THAT SOB STORY WAS A LOAD OF SHIT!

I'M JUST A DISPOS-ABLE PAWN, HERE TO IDENTIFY EIJI HOSHI-MIYA AND KEEP HIM FROM GETTING AWAY!

.....

SO EASILY FOOLED, JUST LIKE THE INTEL SAID.

I'D BETTER CALL YOU "BIG SIS," THEN!

PITA (HALT)

!!?

HUH...!!?

WHAT'S SHE .....!!?

ZA (SKID)

YOU KNOW WHAT ...?

ZA

ZA

ZA

...SCREW THIS!

DID SHE SEE THROUGH MY LIE ...!?

ZA (TMP)

YOU STUPID OR SOME-THING !?

WHAT, DON'T MIND GETTING NUKED ...!?

SU (FWP)

NAH, IT'S NOT THAT.

SUPIII (BREATHE)

PA...

...PA.

I JUST DON'T LIKE YOU.

SO EVER SINCE THEY DIED, I'VE BEEN LIVING FOR REVENGE.

I LOVED MY MOM AND DAD.

WHEN I WAS LITTLE, MY DAD TOLD ME...

..."USE THOSE FISTS TO PROTECT THE ONES YOU LOVE."

THIS GIRL...!!?

THAT'S WHY WE SHOULD WORK TOGETH-ER!!

AND WHAT ABOUT THE MISSILE !!?

SHURAN (WISH)

シュラン

CAN'T SAY I GIVE A SHIT ABOUT THAT !!!!!

AND ANYONE WHO TRIES TO MUCK WITH THAT...

...IS ALSO MY ENEMY !!!

DOŃ (BAM)

'COS THE ONE WHO'S GONNA KILL EIJI...

...IS ME!!!

IT'S JUST LIKE THEY SAID, BUT...

"SHE THINKS OF NOTHING BUT REVENGE" ...

JUST LIKE THEY SAID.

...EVEN DUMBER THAN THAT!!!

...SHE'S ACTU-ALLY...

Hey, Rin. Is Rock God's real body near you?

?

YEAH.

EIJI HOSHI-MIYA.....!?

Nice.

IKZZZZt.

!

Did I get through? I knew this thing had to be jamming us.

DON (BAM)

...THE HELL...!!?

WHAT.....!!

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

GI (CREAK) ギギ GI

"TAKE DOWN ROCK GOD'S REAL BODY FOR ME"!

ORDER!

SHE MUST'VE BEEN ORDERED TO FIND ME AND KEEP ME HERE IN THE MEANTIME.

IF YOU BEAT HER, MAYBE WE CAN BUY SOME MORE TIME BEFORE THE LAUNCH!

TCH...

Rin.

Heavy Rockstar wants the nuke launch to happen!

BAKIIIN (CLANG)

O (WHOOSH)

DAMN YOU TWO !!!

YOUR MALLET'S NO MATCH FOR MY KATANA .....!

REBIRTH FIRE !!!

JUO (FWOOM)

AWE-SOME.

NICE AND SIMPLE, JUST THE WAY I LIKE IT!

SEE?

→Kzzzt←

This is HQ...

!

MARI KUNOU? YEAH, I HEAR YOU.

THANKS FOR KEEPING ME IN THE DARK ABOUT—

GAGA (KZZZT)

Can you hear me, Eiji Hoshimiya ...!?

The U.N.'s voted to use nukes against you!

Now's not the time!

Wrong !!!

!?

PISHI (CRACK)

WE BEAT HEAVY ROCKSTAR. THEY'RE NOT GONNA LAUNCH IF THEY DON'T KNOW WHERE I AM...

...YEAH, THAT'S WHAT I'M TRYING TO TELL YOU.

HEAVY ROCKSTAR!!!

KIN (SHINK)

They've already ordered the sub to fire!

Your location's already been compro-mised!!!

PAKI

I'M TURNING TO STONE .....!!?

PAKI (CRIK)

HUH?

LIEU-TENANT COLO-NEL!!!

OUR EARLY WARNING SATEL-LITE'S PICKING SOME-THING UP!!!

EIJI, YOU NEED TO GET OUT OF THERE !!!

I CAN NOW CONFIRM EIJI HOSHIMIYA'S LOCATION.

HE JUST DESTROYED THE JAMMING ANTENNA, SO HE MUST BE THERE.

FURTHER-MORE, I CAN REPORT THAT HE IS, WITHOUT A DOUBT, THE *REAL* EIJI HOSHIMIYA, BASED ON TODAY'S EVENTS.

PAKI

PAKI (CRIK)

GUH...

DON (BOOM)

HE'S THERE.

OO (WHOOSH)

HEH HEH.

MY, MY. YOU WERE SO USELESS, BIG SIS.

TOO BAD. I'LL JUST HAVE TO STOP HIM MYSELF.

Only thirty minutes until impact !!!

Subject 8:END

Subject 9

U.N. HQ: SECURITY COUNCIL

DOYO

DOYO (GAB)

IF WE LET HIM LIVE, WHO KNOWS WHEN HE'LL CAUSE ANOTHER GREAT DESTRUC-TION!!

MY COUNTRY FULLY SUPPORTS THE ERADI-CATION OF EIJI HOSHI-MIYA!

We'll put it to a vote.

Quiet!

DOYO

BEFORE THAT HAPPENS, WE .....!!!

The vote is unani-mous.

Well, then.

GOON (VOOM)

The U.N. Security Council hereby approves the resolution to use nuclear weaponry against Eiji Hoshimiya!

GOON

MEANWHILE, IN THE ATLANTIC OCEAN: OHIO-CLASS NUCLEAR SUBMARINE— THE WEST VIRGINIA

OO (WHOOSH)

GOON

GO (WHIRR)

WITHDRAW ALL TROOPS TO A TEN-KILOMETER RADIUS OUTSIDE THE PROJECTED POINT OF IMPACT!

HURRY!

BUT COL-ONEL, WHAT ABOUT EIJI-SAMA ...!?

!

BA (TURN)

ICBM— TRIDENT II

DON (FOOM)

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

DOESN'T MATTER. GET OUR PEOPLE OUT OF THERE!

Subject 9: "Sin"
Place: Sanyo-Onoda

DOGAAA (SMASH)

HEH HEH.

WE MEET AT LAST, EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

TIME TO PUT AN END TO MY TEN-YEAR GRUDGE !!!

DON (BAM)

ガラァ GARAA (CRUMBLE)

!

ROCK GOD!

GU GU GU
"ガ"ガ"ガ"..

GU (PRESS) GU
"ガ"ガ"..

.....

AN INVISIBLE BARRIER!?

IS THAT ...?

HM?

BUT STILL ...!

WITH THIS WALL OF AIR...

... YOU WON'T BE GETTING TO ME SO EASILY.

ORDER! "AIR RESISTANCE BARRIER"!

IF I DON'T DO SOMETHING, IYO AND THE LADIES OUT THERE ARE GONNA GET CAUGHT UP IN THE FIGHT.

I'VE GOTTA GET THEM AWAY SOMEHOW!

ROCK GOD'S GOAL IS TO KEEP ME AROUND UNTIL THE MISSILE HITS...!

THIS IS PERFECT .....

K-KAGEKIYO-SAMA...?

WHAT'S GOING ON HERE...!?

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA (CHATTER)

LISTEN UP, EVERY-ONE!

HE'S THE ORDER WHO ALMOST DE-STROYED THE WORLD TEN YEARS AGO!

MY MISSION IS TO CAPTURE EIJI HOSHI-MIYA HERE!

SO I NEED YOU ALL TO HELP ME OUT!!

ZAWA

ザわっ

!?

HER TIMING COULDN'T BE WORSE!!

PAK!
(CRIK)
PAK!

.....

IT'S YOU ...

GULP.

PORI
(MUNCH)

PORI

PORI

DUMB-ASS.

PI (FLIK)

I'M THE TENTH HAND, AYAHITO SUNDAN. DO TRY TO REMEMBER THE NAMES OF YOUR OWN BOSSES.

YOU'LL BE PETRIFIED FROM HEAD TO TOE PRETTY SOON.

YOUR REBIRTH FIRE CAN REPAIR DAMAGE, BUT IT CAN'T DO ANYTHING AGAINST A STATUS EFFECT LIKE THAT...

IRA IRA (MAD)

TCH.

CONNECTION STILL ISN'T STABLE. CAN'T GET THROUGH ...

THE PLAN'S GONNA BE RUINED!

?

WHY SHOULD I? JUST LIE THERE AND DIE, DUMBASS.

.....WHA—!?

...IF YOU KNOW THAT, THEN LEND ME A HAND!

RIGHT, OF COURSE ...

I THOUGHT HIS FACE LOOKED FAMILIAR...

DOYO ドヨ

DOYO ドヨ

DOYO (GAB) ドヨ

THE ORDER WHO...

...DESTROYED THE WORLD TEN YEARS AGO...!?

BISHI

BISHI (CRACK)

DOYO ドヨ

I HAVE TO GET THEM OUT OF HERE QUICKLY...!

RIGHT ...!

HE WAS ON TV...

DAMMIT. THIS IS ONLY GETTING WORSE!

BA CTURN.

SO MY HUSBAND... THIS BOY IS RESPONSI-BLE...!

MY CHILD TOO!

WHY DON'T YOU JUST DIE!!!!!!?

YOU DAMN MURDER-ER!!!

IT HURTS

IT HURTS

IT HURTS

!? OH, COME ON!

THERE'S NO TIME FOR THIS NOW...!

IT HURTS...

IT HURTS.

I WAS ORIGI-NALLY A GRAVE-KEEPER.

AND MY ROCK GOD HERE WAS FORMED FROM THE TOMB-STONES OF ALL THE PEOPLE WHO DIED RESENTING YOU!

IT HURTS...

IT HURTS...

THE PAIN...

THE PAIN.

WHAT IS THIS...!?

IT HURTS...

THE PAIN...

THE PAIN...

.....

SHE'S BREAKING THROUGH THE BARRIER ...!

BISHI

MY WISH WAS FOR THESE SOULS TO BE FREED FROM THEIR EARTHLY REGRETS !!!

BISHI (CRACK)

EITHER WAY, I'M ALMOST OUT OF TIME...

NO. THEN IYO WILL JUST TAKE THE FULL BRUNT OF ROCK GOD'S ATTACK!

SHOULD I TAKE DOWN THE BARRIER AND TRY TO CONVINCE THE TOWNS-PEOPLE...? OR MAYBE JUST CONTROL THEM...!?

ドクン ドクン ドクン ドクン!

IF YOU'VE GOT SOME-THING TO SAY TO ME, YOU CAN SAY IT LATER.

FOR NOW, JUST ESCAPE .....!

LISTEN TO ME!!!

THIS TOWN'S ABOUT TO BE HIT BY A NUKE!

AH....

!?

!?

OOO (WHOOSH)

THEY'RE NOT GOING ANY-WHERE!

YOU, ME, THEM. WE'RE ALL DYING HERE TODAY.

AND YOU'RE TO BLAME.

YOU ANIMAL .....!

BISHI (CRACK)

EIJI-SAMA ...!

YURA (SWAY)

!

I'M SO SORRY ...

...OF COURSE THEY DO.

SO THEY REALLY HATE ME THAT MUCH...

BUT...!

DO DO DO DO DO (RUMBLE)

ドドドドドド

THE NURSE!?

THE CHIL-DREN... HOW DARE YOU!

GOT IT.

NO WONDER. NOT THEIR DUTY TO PROTECT THIS BASTARD.

THE PLATOON IS RETREATING, SO NOBODY'S COMING TO HELP EIJI HOSHIMIYA...

PI (BEEP)

THANKS FOR ALL THE INTEL ...

...AYAHITO-KUN.

TA (TMP)

NI CLEER

! SO YOU'RE THE ONE WHO'S BEEN FEEDING HER INFO ...!

FIVE MORE MINUTES.

MAN, LIFE BECOMES ALL THE MORE PRECIOUS WHEN THINGS LOOK BLEAK.

BIG SIS WAS TOTALLY MY TYPE TOO...

"COOP-ERATE WITH ME SO WE CAN ALL SURVIVE THIS" !!!!!!

DO (WHAP)

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

ORDER!!!

FIVE *WHOLE* MINUTES, HUH?

BUT YOU'VE ONLY GOT FIVE MINUTES, SO JUST GIVE UP!

..... YOU CAN STILL MOVE ...?

AS LONG AS THE ORDER HER-SELF IS UNDER MY CONTROL, I CAN MANIPU-LATE HER AVATAR DIRECTLY!

ALL RIGHT.

ORDER!

"LIFT ME UP, ROCK GOD"!

.....!?

WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO DO!?

I'M GONNA HAVE ROCK GOD CATCH THE MISSILE FOR ME!

OOOO (WHOOSH)

.....

WHA—

!!?

I'M REALLY SORRY...

...MA'AM.

I KNOW AN APOLOGY FROM ME'S NOT WORTH MUCH, BUT STILL...

...THAT'S ALL I CAN GIVE AT THIS POINT.

...I CAN'T AFFORD TO DIE. NOT JUST YET.

IT MIGHT NOT SEEM FAIR, BUT...

FURA (SWAY)

GIVE ME TIME.

THERE'RE STILL SOME THINGS I'VE GOTTA PROTECT.

ZU (CREEP)

ZU

ZU

THAT IS MY WISH!

TO CREATE A WORLD WHERE MY LITTLE SISTER CAN GO ON LIVING!

MAYBE I DO.

YOU JUST WANNA GET OFF SCOT-FREE, HUH!!?

ONE MINUTE LEFT!

IT'S RE-ENTERING THE ATMOSPHERE!!!

(WHOOSH)

BUT I WON'T LET ANYONE ELSE GET HURT 'COS OF ME!

AND I WON'T LET YOU STOP ME EITHER!!!

THAT MISSILE'LL PIERCE RIGHT THROUGH IT!

ROCK GOD'S HELP MEANS NOTHING IF YOU CAN'T COMPLETELY STOP IT!

THIS IDIOT...! IS HE REALLY GONNA TRY TO STOP IT WITH HIS STUPID AIR BARRIER?

ORDER...!!!

LOOK, IN THE SKY...

.....

EIJI-SAMA...!

DỌN (CHẠM)

!!!

OOO (WHOOSH)

HE CAUGHT IT...!!?

"GRAVITY CONTROL"!!

SHIT. I CAN'T SLOW IT DOWN FAST ENOUGH...!!

AHHH.

AHHHHHH.

OH NO. IT'S GONNA HIT...!!

SECOND HAND, BENKEI NARU-KAMI.

SIXTH HAND, LAURYN WRIGHT.

ON THE SCENE !!!

ONLY OUR FOOT SOLDIERS PULLED OUT.

EIJI HOSHIMIYA ISN'T A CARD WE CAN AFFORD TO LOSE JUST YET.

YOU SENT SOME OF THE TEN HANDS ...!?

TEN MINUTES UNTIL IMPACT!

IT'S HEADING FOR YAMAGUCHI AT TRIPLE THE USUAL SPEED!

COLO-NEL!!!

DO (RUMBLE)

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

ANOTHER LAUNCH, THIS TIME FROM THE PACIFIC!

Subject 9: END

AH!

AHHH!

Subject 10

IT'S BENKEI!!!

ORDER!!!

Subject 10: “Protect Their Bodies / Attack Their Ethics”
Place: Sanyo-Onoda

ドドドド

DO

DO

DO

DO (RUMBLE)

HAHAHAHAHAH!!!

GAH.

BATTLE ON: ARAMI-TAMA!!!

!

DON (BAM)

U.N. HQ—
SECURITY COUNCIL

BRING IT UP!

ZAWA (CHATTER)
ザワ…

COUNCIL PRESIDENT! A MESSAGE FROM DAZAIFU .....!

BUN (KZZT)

DOYO (GAB)
ドヨ…

!

THE TEN HANDS, IS IT?

SO YOU DYING DURING THAT EARLIER BROADCAST WAS JUST A FARCE?

OOOOOO (WHOOSH)
オオオ

オオオ

I'm so sorry to trouble you good people of the Security Council.

We of the nation of Kyushu...

...would like to propose a deal.

BARA (CRUMBLE)

BARA

BARA

.....

THE MISSILE'S GONE...FROM A SINGLE ATTACK...!?

オォォ

"BATTLE ON"
BENKEI'S ABILITY ALLOWS HIM TO DESTROY ANY TARGET DOWN TO THE ATOMIC LEVEL. HIS WISH WAS "TO BE THE STRONGEST."

DON (BAM)

APOLOGIES FOR OUR LATENESS, EIJI.

WHAT INCREDIBLE POWER...!

FU (FSSHH)

WHY'RE YOU HERE...?

HIIRAGI'S ORDERS.

ZAWA (CHATTER)

ザワ

ザワ

ZAWA

HMPH.

ZAWA

WHAT'S GOING ON...!?

ZAWA

ONE OF HIS ALLIES?

TA (TMP)

9...

!

KUWA (ROAR)

DID YOU ALL NOT SEE !!?

THAT WAS A NUCLEAR MISSILE !!!

BAN (BAM)

TCH.

ROCK GOD, CAP-TURE EIJI!

IT'S POINT-LESS.

GUOO (F-WOOM)

!

ZAWA (CHATTER)

THERE ARE MISSILE FRAGMENTS AND RADIATION ALL OVER THE AREA!

STILL DON'T GET IT? THEY ARE TARGETING THIS LOCATION !!!!!!

"SKYFISH FREE"
LAURYN'S FLYING ABILITY.
HIS WISH WAS "TO FLY
THROUGH THE SKIES."

WHOA,
THERE.
CAREFUL,
<YOU>.

AND
THIS ONE'S
COMING
AT TRIPLE
THE SPEED,
WITH
FOURTEEN
TIMES THE
PAYLOAD!

THE NEXT
MISSILE'S
ALREADY
BEEN
LAUNCHED!

WAH!

JUST GIVE UP!!!

FOUR-TEEN TIMES...

THOSE LADIES WILL NEVER GET AWAY. RUNNING WON'T SAVE THEM NOW.

IF I WANT TO SAVE THE TOWNS-PEOPLE, I'VE GOT TO DO IT MYSELF .....

BUT HOW!!?

THE TEN HANDS WON'T LISTEN TO ME...

ドオオオ GUOOO (FWOOM)

YOU CAN'T STOP ME NOW .....!!!

!

O (WHOOSH)

EIJI.

THIS IS TO THANK YOU FOR SAVING THE HOSTAGES DURING OUR TELECON-FERENCE.

...HUH?

B-BUT...

YOUR UNCLE, BENKEI. HE WAS .....

<YEAH>!

WE JUST DID!

IN OTHER WORDS, LET ME HELP YOU OUT.

HELP ME OUT...?

YOU SAVED THE REST OF THEM, AND THAT WAS ENOUGH.

NOW IT'S TIME TO PROTECT THE PEOPLE OF THIS TOWN, YES?

オオオ

OOOO (WHOOSH)

HOW HIGH UP DOES YOUR ABILITY REACH?

THESE TEN YEARS...

NOT SURE. MIGHT HAVE INFINITE RANGE GOING UP, ACTUALLY.

...I'VE HAD NO ONE TO HELP ME OUT.

VERY GOOD, BECAUSE MY BATTLE ON IS QUITE LIMITED IN SCOPE.

FIVE MINUTES TO IMPACT.

<HEY, YOU.>

SO POINT-LESS.

PON (PAT)

AH, RIGHT.

I'LL RELEASE YOU.

I'M NOT EXACTLY <FREE> IF I CAN ONLY FLY AROUND WITHIN YOUR DOMAIN.

OO (WHOOSH)

I'M NOT ALONE ANYMORE.

OH, AND DON'T WORRY ABOUT IYO.

YOU'LL NEVER HEAR THIS FROM HER, BUT MARI'S GRATEFUL THAT YOU SAVED HER COUSIN'S LIFE.

.....<ME> TOO.

ONE MORE MINUTE !!!

HER BELLY IS MERELY A MANIFESTATION OF HER CONNECTION WITH YOU GOING FORWARD. THE STRONGEST KIND.

IT WILL FADE WITH TIME, SO WORRY NOT.

.....

HUH?

ooooo

ヂヂヂ

HERE IT COMES, EIJI!

...I'VE GOT BEN-KEI!!! AND LAU-RYN!!!

THIS TIME ...

AND IYO!!!

ゴゴゴ (WHOOSH)

ビ

BISHI (CRACK)

DON (BAM)

COME AT ME, WORLD!!!

GARA (CRUMBLE)

ガ

×

ラ!!?

WHA—

…!?

ROCK GOD'S ONLY MADE OF STONE. IT CAN'T CATCH TWO OF THOSE THINGS IN A ROW!

IDIOT …!

ROCK GOD'S FALL-ING TO PIECES …!!?

DAMN REBELS.

DO YOU HAVE ANY IDEA HOW MANY NUKES WE'VE GOT SPREAD ACROSS THE WORLD?

WE'VE ALREADY GOT A MOLE IN YOUR OPERA-TION...

...SO FORGET IT.

A DEAL...!?

ドヨ DOYO

DOYO (GAB) ドヨ

AFTER EIJI HOSHIMIYA, YOU'RE ALL NEXT!!!

THIS KID.....!

AHHH.

AND FOR THE SAKE OF THE WORLD. THAT'S WHAT I BELIEVED.

ALL FOR REVENGE.

I WAS READY TO SACRIFICE COUNTLESS OTHERS JUST TO KILL EIJI HOSHIMIYA.

THE BOY IS PUTTING HIMSELF ON THE LINE TO PROTECT THE TOWNS-PEOPLE...!

BUT NOW...

I .....

SO WHO'S THE REAL VILLAIN HERE?

UOHHHH.

! ROCK GOD ...!?

DON CBOOMO

AHHH.

DON'T FALTER, ROCK GOD!!!

I NEVER WANTED TO USE ROCK GOD FOR EVIL!!!

BEEE

HELP ME OUT HERE!!!

SOME-ONE— ANY-ONE!

ORDER!!!!!!

YOU CAN'T GO DYING ON ME THAT EASILY, EIJI!

I'M THE ONE WHO GETS TO KILL YOU IN THE END!!!

AS YOU WISH.

I SCRAPED OFF ONLY THE PETRIFIED SKIN.

NOW GO MAKE YOURSELF USEFUL TO OUR KING, DUMBASS.

DON (BAM)

REBIRTH FIRE!!! "RESTORE ROCK GOD" !!!

ZURU (SLIP)

ズル..

ZUNU (CREEP)

スススス

NU

NU

Well...less "the truth," more of a warning...

In exchange for the truth, you will stop attacking for now. That's the deal.

ZAWA

I thought he was our mole...?

ZAWA (CHATTER)

Why did that one just join them...?

!?

Ayahito is a double agent.

USING EIJI HOSHIMIYA AS A DISTRACTION, WE MANAGED TO CAPTURE A CRITICAL INDIVIDUAL.

YOUR NUCLEAR WEAPONS WILL NO LONGER WORK ON US...

...THANKS TO THIS ORDER.

YAMAGUCHI CITY,
YAMAGUCHI PREFECTURE
YUDA HOT SPRINGS

KOOON (STEAMY)

ZABAAA (SPLASH)

H"
I"
I"
I"

...HMPH.

HEY, BIG SIS!

IT'S GREAT WE STOPPED THE MISSILE AND ALL...

...BUT IS A SIMPLE BATH REALLY ENOUGH TO WASH AWAY THE RADIATION?

I'VE BEEN THINKING... THAT WHOLE PLAN TO KILL EIJI TOGETHER ...

STILL WANNA TRY THAT?

TAPUN (DRIP)

タプン

?

WELL, OKAY...

NIHERA (GRIN)

KAAAN (BONK)

カーン

AHA-HA.

YOU PERVY LESBO!

GYAHH...

I KNEW IT, BIG SIS.

YOU'RE A TOP-CLASS GAL!

WASHI (GROPE)

ワシ

PIKO (TWITCH)
ピコ
KEEP IT DOWN, RIN!
BUT...
...MY PREDIC-TIONS ARE ABSO-LUTE...
BUKU (BUBBLE)
ブク
BUKU
ブク
.....THE BABY.
IT'S WITH-DRAWN.....
CHAPU (PLUNK)
チャプ..
GEEZ.
DOTA (FLAIL)
ドタ
DOTA
ドタ
.....<YOU>!
?
ALL THESE GUYS... CAN'T BE SURE WHETHER THEY'RE ENEMIES OR ALLIES.

GARA (SLIDE)

WE'VE GOT TROUBLE, EIJI.

IT'S SENA!!!

Next Stop: **Hiroshima**

Subject 10: END

Next time,
it's the yakuza
vs. ability users!!
The setting?
The land of chivalry: Hiroshima!!
And what's going on with Eiji, Rin,
and Iyo...!?

The earth-shattering
"Hiroshima Arc,"
coming in Volume 2.



Translation: Caleb Cook • Lettering: Phil Christie

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, or persons, living or dead, is coincidental.

BIG ORDER Volume 2
© Sakae ESUNO 2012

First published in Japan in 2012 by KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged with KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo
through Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., Tokyo.

English translation © 2017 by Yen Press, LLC

Yen Press, LLC supports the right to free expression and the value of copyright. The purpose of copyright is to encourage writers and artists to produce the creative works that enrich our culture.

The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book without permission is a theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like permission to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), please contact the publisher. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Yen Press
1290 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10104

Visit us at yenpress.com
facebook.com/yenpress
twitter.com/yenpress
yenpress.tumblr.com
instagram.com/yenpress

First Yen Press eBook Edition: January 2017

Yen Press is an imprint of Yen Press, LLC.
The Yen Press name and logo are trademarks of Yen Press, LLC.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

ISBN: 978-0-316-43590-1 (ebook)

Sakae Esuno

03

BIRDMEN

PARENTAL ADVISORY
WARNING
EXPLICIT CONTENT

Subject 11

YAMAGUCHI CITY, YAMAGUCHI PREFECTURE
THE SKIES ABOVE SANYO-ONODA





Subject 11: “Sena’s Awakening”
Place: Dazaifu

BIG ORDER 03

Presented by
Sakae Esuno



BIG ORDER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

001 Subject 11: “Sena’s Awakening”
Place: Dazaifu

047 Subject 12: “Hiroshima Deathmatch”
Place: Hiroshima

083 Subject 13: “Recovery Operation”
Place: Hiroshima

121 Subject 14: “The Predator’s Ambush / Joker”
Place: Hiroshima

157 Subject 15: “King of the Rulers”
Place: Hiroshima

TEN YEARS AGO,
I WISHED FOR THE
DESTRUCTION OF
THE WORLD...



Rin Kurenai (Second Lieutenant):
Lost both parents in the Great Destruction caused by Eiji ten years ago and has been plotting to kill him ever since. She's really cute but also a bit dumb.



Rebirth Fire:
Rin's ability. She's essentially immortal thanks to her strong regenerative properties. She can also restore objects and other people to an undamaged state.

Ten Hands of Dazaifu:
The top brass at the Dazaifu Government Offices, which served as the seat of power for Kyushu's Provisional Governing Body. Each is a powerful ability user in his or her own right.



First Hand

Raidou Fuwa
(Lieutenant Colonel)



Third Hand

Yoshitsune Hiiragi (Colonel):
As Colonel, he's the highest ranking member of the Ten Hands. Shrewd and competent.

Fifth Hand

Taikei Nehara
(Lieutenant Commander)



Ninth Hand

Mari Kunou (Lieutenant Colonel):
A tactician who works directly under Hiiragi. She has a way with words and a strong personality.



Seventh Hand

Kokudo Soumoku
(Captain)



Second Hand

Benkei Narukami
(Lieutenant Colonel):
Has the ability to destroy anything down to the atomic level. Good-natured.



Eighth Hand

Nene Minamoto
(Lieutenant Commander)



Tenth Hand

Ayahito Sundan
(Lieutenant Commander)



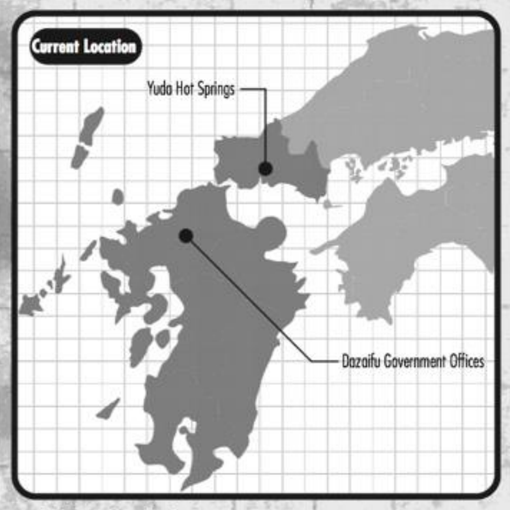
Sixth Hand

Lauryn Wright (Captain):
Has the ability to fly. He tends to pepper his speech with English words.



Fourth Hand

Iyo (First Lieutenant):
Has the ability to make 100% accurate predictions. She's particularly fond of Eiji.



► **At Yuda Hot Springs:**
Eiji Hoshimiya, Rin Kurenai, Iyo, Benkei Narukami, Lauryn Wright

► **At Dazaifu Government Offices:**
Sena Hoshimiya, Yoshitsune Hiiragi, Raidou Fuwa, Taikei Nehara, Kokudo Soumoku, Nene Minamoto, Mari Kunou, Ayahito Sundan

Characters & Story

This story begins when the world was destroyed.

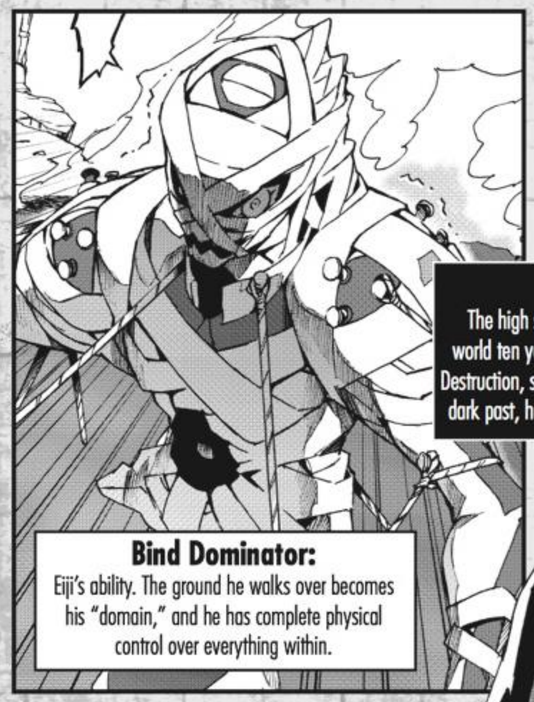
The world was brought to the verge of ruin when Eiji Hoshimiya's wish was somehow granted. Ten years later, Eiji—now in high school—is attacked by an assassin named Rin Kurenai who knows about his past. He uses his ability to beat Rin in battle, but then he and his sister, Sena, are captured and brought to the Dazaifu Government Offices. The Ten Hands who rule over Dazaifu use Sena as leverage to force Eiji into becoming the king of Kyushu and declaring war on the world. Later, Eiji's invasion of Yamaguchi is delayed by Yamaguchi's ruling Order—Kagekiyo Tairano—and her ability. Separated from Rin, Eiji continues the mission with Iyo, but it's not long before he's targeted by a nuclear missile. Benkei and Lauryn of the Ten Hands show up to aid Eiji in the do-or-die situation, and Eiji manages to prevent a second missile strike as well. Eiji finally has some downtime in the aftermath, but now he's received an urgent message about his sister, Sena…



Sena Hoshimiya:
Eiji's stepsister. She doesn't have long to live, and she's being held hostage at the Dazaifu Government Offices.



Daisy:
A mysterious being who turns people's wishes into abilities.



Bind Dominator:
Eiji's ability. The ground he walks over becomes his "domain," and he has complete physical control over everything within.



Eiji Hoshimiya:
The high school student who nearly destroyed the world ten years ago. He lost both parents in the Great Destruction, so his only living relative is Sena. Despite his dark past, he's got a rather straightforward personality.

BIG
ORDER

WELL, WE COULDN'T HAVE HIM LOSING THIS EARLY ANYWAY.

EIJI'S FINISHED HIS INVASION OF YAMAGUCHI. THAT'S ONE WIN UNDER HIS BELT...

HMPH.

EIJI'S SUCH AN INTERESTING KID. I BET HE'LL WIN HIS NEXT BATTLE WITH A BANG, LIKE IN A SHONEN MANGA.

SEE? IT'S JUST LIKE I SAID.

OOO (WHOOSH)

.....ONE CAN ONLY HOPE.

クス
KUSU. (SNICKER)

BUT HIS TRUE ENEMY IS ACTUALLY DAZAIFU.

HIS SO-CALLED ALLIES, AND THE MOST DANGEROUS AMONG THEM IS...

OOOOOOOO (WHOOSH)

IT MAY NOT BE BEST... TO LEAVE HIM AT HIIRAGI'S SIDE.

OOO

OO

.....
HIIRAGI?

M-HM.

YOU CAN TRY TO SHAKE ME OFF, BUT IT'S NOT GONNA WORK! ♡

I AIN'T LETTING GO UNTIL YOU'RE DEAD!

オオオ

YOU SURE ARE HEAVY, RIN!

I THINK WE'RE OVER CAPACITY HERE. GO BACK TO THE HOT SPRINGS!

BUN (WAGGLE)

BUN

OW!

GAHH!

YOU IDIOT!

UGH, FINE.

GUESS I'M STUCK WITH HER...

HMPH. THINK YOU CAN GET AWAY FROM ME THAT EASY?

GO (ZOOM)

ｵｵｵｵ
OOOO
(WHOOSH)

FU-FU.
SO YOU'VE
ACCEPTED
YOUR FATE.

YEAH,
SURE.
MY FATE.
RIGHT.

IT'S
ONLY BEEN
FIVE HOURS
SINCE THEN.

WE
ONLY JUST
PREVENTED
THE U.N.'S
NUCLEAR
STRIKE.

First Platoon
4 km
Eiji Hoshimiya

...WAS JUST
A DIVERSION,
WITH ME AS
THE BAIT.

IN THE END,
THE WHOLE
"INVASION OF
YAMAGUCHI"
...

STILL, IT WAS NOTHING MORE THAN CAMOUFLAGE, CONCEALING AYAHITO AS HE CARRIED OUT THE REAL MISSION.

...SO IT WAS LESS AN INVASION OF YAMAGUCHI AND MORE A WAY TO GET ME OUT OF KYUSHU.

HIIRAGI KNEW THEY'D BE TARGETING ME WITH THE NUKE ...

ACCORDING TO BENKEI, THEIR TRUE GOAL WAS TO SECURE THAT LITTLE GIRL.

DAMN THAT HIIRAGI...! I'D BE DEAD NOW IF YOU HADN'T SAVED ME, RIN.

AND DON'T YOU FORGET IT! BE GRATEFUL.

SHE SMELLS KINDA SWEET .....

FUWA (WAFT)

NO TIME FOR FLIRTING, EIJI.

WE'RE ALMOST AT DAZAIFU.

.....
HEY!

オオオ

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

ZA ZA ZA

ZA ZA ZA (SKID)

HIIRAGI'S ...

... BEHIND ALL OF THIS!

THANK YOU, RIN.

KO (SHOCK)

!

HE'D BETTER NOT LAY A FINGER ON MY SISTER ...!

OUTTA MY WAY!

THAT BASTARD ...!

SENA...!!!

AH.

YOU'RE FINALLY HERE, BIG BROTHER!

SENA'S SAFE.

GREAT TIMING, EIJI-KUN. SENA-SAN IS ABOUT TO RECEIVE AN IN-DEPTH EXAMINATION.

GA (GRAB)

WHAT'S THE BIG IDEA, HIIRAGI?

We've explained away Rin's attack on the hospital. Stick to the story, Eiji.

N-NO, I...

We can't have you riling her up before the exam.

HUH?

WHAT'S WRONG?

DIDN'T YOU CALL THESE DOCTORS HERE, BIG BROTHER...?

HE DECIDED TO ASK THE GOVERNMENT TO HANDLE YOUR TREATMENT.

WE BROUGHT YOU HERE WHILE YOU WERE SLEEPING, YOU SEE...

RIGHT. EIJI-KUN JUST WASN'T SATISFIED WITH THAT OTHER HOSPITAL.

...SO SENA STILL DOESN'T KNOW ABOUT ME BEING THESE GUYS' KING...?

!?

BUT ACCORDING TO YOUR CHART FROM HOSHIMIYA GENERAL...

HIIRAGI ...!?

...YOUR ILLNESS IS PROGRESSING RAPIDLY.

SIX MONTHS.

THAT'S HOW LONG YOU HAVE.

...AND NOW THIS BAS-TARD BLOWS THE LID OFF IT ...!

I'VE BEEN KEEPING THAT SECRET FROM SENA THIS WHOLE TIME...

BIG BROTHER ...

BIKU (TWITCH)

ビクッ

DAMN YOU!!!!

HIIRAGI!!!!!!

AM I GONNA DIE...?

IT SEEMS TO BE A BLOOD ILLNESS UNLIKE ANY OTHER.

ONLY A FEW DOCUMENTED CASES WORLDWIDE.

FIFTH HAND, MEDICAL DIVISION: TAIKEI NEHARA

THESE GUYS... BEING SO BLUNT WITH SENA...!

I'M SORRY, BUT YOU OUGHT TO PREPARE YOURSELF FOR THE WORST.

THERE ARE NO INSTANCES OF SUCCESSFUL TREATMENT.

.....BUT HOW?

GATA (STAND)

ガタ

H-HEY... SENA. YOU SHOULDN'T WORRY.

WE'LL FIX YOU UP FOR SURE!

I'LL FIGURE SOMETHING OUT!

BIG BROTHER.

I...

...KIND OF ALREADY KNEW.

...I THOUGHT YOU MIGHT BE STRESSING ABOUT IT, ALL ON YOUR OWN...

AND GIVEN THAT IT'S YOU, BIG BROTHER...

IT'S NOT LIKE I COULD TELL YOU, SENA!!

OTA (FIDGET)

NO, BUT I MEAN ...

OTA

SIGH.

I WAS RIGHT.

GIKU (FLINCH)

SHU (FWIP)

HMM?

YORO (WOBBLE)

GAOOO (ROAR) がおーー

OW!

BIG BROTHER ...

YOU BLOCK-HEAD!

BESHI べし

...OR WHEN YOU'D GET WEIRDLY ANGRY WHEN ENTERING UNCLE'S ROOM...

...THAT WAS ALL ABOUT THIS!?

I'M SORRY, SENA.

SORRY!

SORRY!

THAT TIME YOU STOPPED ME FROM GOING TO THE FESTIVAL...

BESHI (WHAP)

I WAS DOING THE WORRYING FOR BOTH OF US...!

BISHIII (WHAM)

BECAUSE YOU'RE A BIG DUMMY!

SORRY .....

I'M REALLY SORRY, SENA...

I FORGIVE YOU.

YOU'RE MY BIG BROTHER, AFTER ALL.

YORO (QUIVER) ƎD..

...I REALLY WANTED...

...TO GO TO SCHOOL WITH YOU, BIG BROTHER ...

SASU (RUB) さす...

SU... (FWIP)

BUT ...

THERE MAY STILL BE A CHANCE TO SAVE HER.

!!?

THEY'RE QUITE ELDERLY...

...BUT STILL IN GOOD HEALTH.

THERE IS AN ORDER NICKNAMED KAMIMUSUBI IN IZUMO.

THEY HAVE THE ABILITY TO CURE ANY ILLNESS.

CURED ……!?

SENA COULD BE……

WILL YOU GO, EIJI?

.....
COLONEL.
ONE MORE THING.

THE ACTUAL EXAM RESULTS.

I COULD'VE TOLD YOU AS MUCH, GIVEN THAT THEY'RE NOT RELATED BY BLOOD.

星宮瀬奈のオーダー適性

E⁻ (不適格)

PAPER: SENA HOSHIMIYA: ORDER APTITUDE E- (UNSUITABLE)

GIVEN THEIR FATHER... I WANTED TO BE SURE.

BUT NOW WE KNOW EXACTLY HOW TO HANDLE HER.

YOU COME TOO, LAURYN!

SURE, BUT, EIJI...

...IT'S A LITTLE LATE TO GO <TODAY>. HOW ABOUT <TOMORROW>?

I'M TAKING SENA TO IZUMO !!!!!!

KYAH!

ZAN (BAM)

THE NEXT DAY

CHICHICHICHI (CHIRP) チチチチ..

OFF TO IZUMO ...!

WE'RE ALL SET.

NIMAAA (GRIN)

WHOA!?

CREEPY.

SADLY, I'M COMING WITH YOU.

.....I WONDER ABOUT THAT.

THIS SOUNDS PRETTY GOOD, HUH?

YEAH...

I GUESS I MISJUDGED HIIRAGI A LITTLE.

HE WAS LOOKING OUT FOR SENA AFTER ALL!

SIGN: MEDICAL ROOM

IS SENA HERE? SHE SHOULD BE COMING BY FOR HER MEDICINE...

医務室

I THINK YOU AND HIIRAGI HAVE DIFFERENT PRIORITIES...

I UNDERSTAND THAT LIEUTENANT COLONEL KUNOU TOOK HER SOMEWHERE...

MARI DID?

BUT WHERE...?



HAS SHE BEEN ...!!?

GATA (CLAK)



EIJI!

!?

DA (DASH)

OOOO
(WHIRR)

!!!

OOO
(WHOOSH)

THEY TOOK SENA UNDER-GROUND !!!

GOOD MORNING, EIJI-SAMA. DID YOU SLEEP WELL?

GO GO

YOU... WHAT'S THE MEANING OF THIS?

GET AWAY FROM SENA !!! !!!

GO GO GO

ゴゴゴ

HIIRAGI !!!

GO (RUMBLE) GO GO

ゴゴゴ

ANYHOW, WE'LL CONTINUE MAKING HER OUR HOSTAGE FOR THE TIME BEING.

THE EXAM WE PERFORMED ON SENA WAS ACTUALLY TO TEST HER APTITUDE FOR BECOMING AN ORDER.

JUST IN CASE... THERE WAS ANY CHANCE.

GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO (RUMBLE)

SEE?

THAT'S THE KIND OF GUY HIIRAGI REALLY IS.

HII...

ORDER!

HIIRAGI'S ABILITY...!

NOT GONNA HAPPEN !!!

(WHOOSH)

DON (BAM)

HIIRAGI!!!!!

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

DON

TARGET: HIIRAGI.

"ALLOW ANY ACTION" !!!!!!

ZA ZA ZA

ZA ZA

ZA

DON (BAM)

TARGET: HIIRAGI.

"FORBID ANY ACTION" !!!!!!

"ALLOW"!?

HUH ……!?

THE HELL!!?

WHAT AM I SAYING…?

ALLOW ANY ACTION!?

HUH…?

…EIJI HOSHIMIYA.

GU (GRIP)

STOP RIGHT THERE…

!

DON (BAM)

I THOUGHT FOR SURE I SAID "FORBID," BUT...

...I ACTUALLY SAID "ALLOW" .....!?

...JUST HAP-PENED?

WHAT...

WHAT'D HE DO ...!!?

EIJI. IF YOU WANT TO SAVE YOUR SISTER, CLAIM IZUMO FOR US!

HIIRAGI ...!

Subject 11:END

► Order Ability Profiles

003

»» "Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.

IYO KIRIGIRI







User: **Iyo**

Wish: **To Attain Miraculous Virtue**

Ability: **100% accurate predictions**

Iyo's 100% accurate predictions allow her to evade danger at an extremely high rate. That said, they are only "100% accurate" insofar as they foretell the future as it would be had the prediction not been made. In other words, by having the knowledge of the future that these predictions afford, there is a small chance that events could be altered. Predictions made close in time to the event in reference are essentially set in stone (with approximately a 100% success rate), while those referring to events far in the future are more likely to err (even so, those predictions have at least a 92% success rate). Iyo's ribbon—the divine treasure known as "Hachi no Hire"—is also imbued with the power of dowsing.

BIG
ORDER

Subject 12

TURNING BACK THE CLOCK A BIT
FIVE DAYS AGO IN HIROSHIMA—
THE NIGHT BEFORE DAZAIFU'S COUP D'ÉTAT

TOWN APARTMENTS
SLOPE

TEKU (TMP) TEKU
テク テク

THAT DAY, A CERTAIN LITTLE GIRL BEGAN HEADING FOR YAMAGUCHI.

SUUU (BREATHE)

TEKU
テク…

SUPIII (BREATHE)

PIKU (TWITCH)

PIMEE.

EIGHTH HAND: NENE MINAMOTO

SHE'LL HAVE COMPLETE CONTROL OVER THE GIRL FROM HERE. WE CAN MAKE HER TAKE PUBLIC TRANSPORTATION AS FAR AS YAMAGUCHI.

DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT OFFICES

WHAT'S HER STATUS?

NENE'S JUST MADE THE LINK.

PIMEEMEE.

NU (LOOM) NU

PARALLEL WORLD DOOR KNOCK:
THE ABILITY TO CONTROL THE DREAM WORLD. THOSE BEING CONTROLLED ARE POSSESSED BY A SYMBOLIC PUPPET. HER WISH WAS "TO SLEEP FOREVER."

MEEE.

ZA (KZZT)
ZA
A GIRL WITH THE ABILITY TO RENDER NUCLEAR WEAPONS USELESS.....
同調率 72.42
HIKARI TARUTAMA...

SCREEN: SYNC RATE: 72.42

SIGH.
...ARE WE REALLY GONNA BE OKAY HERE?
KNOWING WHO HER FAMILY IS...

BUT THIS IS NECESSARY...
IT IS.
THIS IS STRAIGHT-UP KIDNAPPING, NO?
WE ARE KIDNAP-PERS.
GI (CREAK)

...CAN COME TO RULE THE WORLD.

...SO THAT WE OF THE TEN HANDS...

<OF COURSE>. WE KNOW ALL THAT, COLONEL.

THAT'S WHY WE JOINED FORCES.

THE EVENT THAT OCCURS BEFORE ABILITY USERS EXPLODE IN POPULATION...THE ONLY ONES WHO KNOW ABOUT IT ARE US AND HIM.

ONCE THE WORLD CATCHES ON, IT WILL BE TOO LATE.

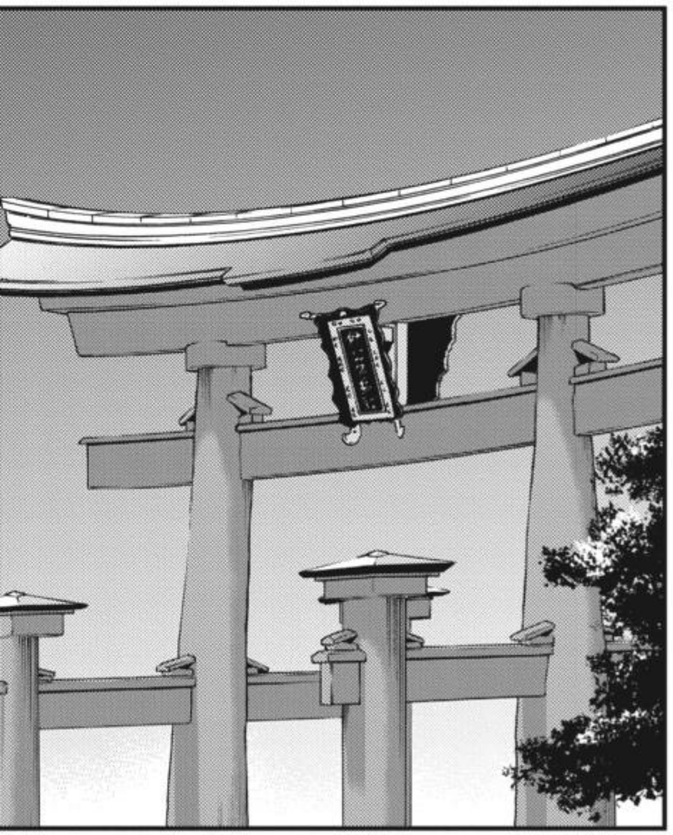
THERE'S LITTLE TIME.

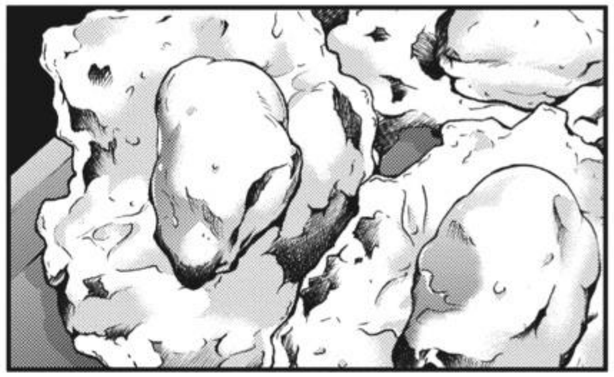
OOOO (WHOOSH)

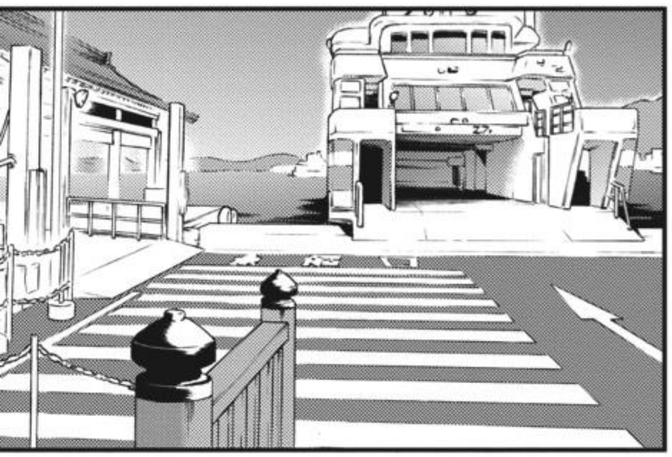
WE HAVE TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD...

HMPH.

...BEFORE A SECOND GREAT DESTRUCTION OCCURS!







Subject 12:
"Hiroshima Deathmatch"
Place: Hiroshima

ZA (SPLASH) ZA ZA ZA ZA...

HIROSHIMA ……

...THE FIRST PLACE WHERE NUCLEAR WEAPONS WERE USED.

RIN AND I ARE UNDER-COVER HERE.

WE'RE HOPING TO FIND SOMEONE WHO CAN POINT US TOWARD THE ABILITY USER IN IZUMO.

EIJI!

LOOK, IT'S THE A-BOMB DOME!

YEAH, YEAH.

ROCK: MEMORIAL

RIN, STOP ACTING LIKE SOME COUNTRY BUMPKIN OUT HERE ON A SCHOOL TRIP.

AND YOU'VE BEEN EATING NONSTOP EVER SINCE WE GOT HERE.

KURU (SPIN)

NIII (SMILE)

YOU'RE IN A GOOD MOOD.

.....

AND THAT MEANS I DON'T HAVE TO KEEP FOLLOWING YOU AROUND ANYMORE! I'M FREE!

OF COURSE I AM!

THIS WHOLE AREA IS YOUR DOMAIN NOW!

WELL, NO..... YOU'RE NOT EXACTLY FREE. I STILL HAVE CONTROL.

...I FLEW AROUND WITH LAURYN EARLIER, TURNING ALL OF HIROSHIMA INTO MY TERRITORY.

AS FOR HOW WE GOT TO THIS POINT...

ANY-HOW...

...HIRO-SHIMA FELL TO MY POWER IN A SNAP.

...I ASKED WHY, BUT SHE IGNORED THE QUESTION.

ACCORDING TO MARI, HIROSHIMA IS A LITTLE SPECIAL. IT'S STILL NOT COMPLETELY CONTROLLED BY THE U.N. YET...

...AS ALWAYS, I'M NOTHING MORE THAN DAZAIFU'S ERRAND BOY...

STILL...

Wait for an envoy at the assigned spot.

You'll meet with Hikari Tarutama's grandfather, tell him you've taken her hostage, and make him tell you where the ability user in Izumo is.

DON (BAM)

WHAT HAP-PENED BACK THERE...?

WHY COULDN'T I STOP HIM FROM TAKING SENA...?

BASA

AH-HA-HA!

BASA (FLAP)

HEY, HEY.

GOING AND LEAVING HER GIANT BAG LYING THERE LIKE THAT.....

WHAT IS RIN THINK-ING?

PFFT!

MUKU (FWUMP)

DID IT JUST ...!!?

WHA— ...!?

STOP! BAG THIEF!!

GET BACK HERE!

DA (DASH)

AH.

HEY, RIN!

AH...!?

ZA (STEP)

SO YOU'RE SANJURO KUWA-BATAKE, RIGHT?

!

RIN'S STILL OUT THERE ...!

HEY.

BAN (SLAM)

BUON (VROOM)

!?

GET IN!

HOLD ON A SEC— MY FRIEND IS...!

DON
(BAM)

咬竜組

SIGN: BITING DRAGON GROUP

DODON
(BABAM)

ZA

ZA

ZA (STEP)

HRMM.

WELCOME BACK, LIEU-TENANT SAKAI!

THE BITING DRAGON GROUP!!?

DAMN IT, MARI. KEEPING THE IMPORTANT DETAILS TO YOURSELF!

TH-THESE GUYS ARE ACTUAL YAKUZA!

NU (LOOM)

!

YOU'RE TELLING ME HIKARI IS PART OF THIS FAMILY.....!?

WAS IT YOU ...!?

NUO (LOOM)

ヌオ

OO (LOOM)

オオ

!?!?

H-HE'S HUGE ...!

YOU HAVE IT ALL WRONG, YANO.

THIS GUY'S HERE TO OFFER INFO ABOUT THE YOUNG MISS.....

DID YOU TAKE AWAY OUR LITTLE HIKARI...!?

GOWAHHHH!!!

DOGGOO (SMASH)

NUWAHHHH!

WHOA!

DON

G UUUUUUUU!

DON (BLAM)

AHHHH!!

YOU FOOL!

TAKE IT DOWN A NOTCH...

A GUN!?

...OUR BOYS HAVE BEEN ON EDGE.

EVER SINCE MISS HIKARI WENT MISSING...

PARDON HIM.

DOGGAA (SLAM)

ドガァ

THAT HUUURT!

ŻĄ (STEP)

THESE GUYS...

ARE THEY PRE-PARING FOR WAR, OR WHAT !!?

BUT THE BOSS IS THE ONE WHO'S REALLY FUMING.

...SO WE'RE REALLY HOPING YOU'VE GOT SOME USEFUL INFO FOR HIM.

WE HAVEN'T BEEN ABLE TO CALM HIM DOWN FOR TWO WHOLE DAYS NOW...

CHIRA (GLANCE)

WHY'D MARI THINK I'D BE GOOD TO ENTER HOSTAGE NEGOTIATIONS WITH THE FREAKING YAKUZA?

WHAT THE HELL'S GONNA HAPPEN IF I TELL THEM IT'S DAZAIFU THAT'S GOT THE GIRL?

I'VE GOT TO GET AWAY AND THINK ABOUT WHAT OUR NEXT MOVE IS...!

.....NO WAY.

(CREAK)

CHA

ｷｬｯ

GOOD. COME IN.

WE HAVE A GUEST, BOSS.

I'M THE BOSS AROUND HERE. THE NAME'S YOSHIO TARUTAMA.

I'VE ALREADY GOT AN IDEA ABOUT WHO'S BEHIND THIS, BUT YOU'RE STILL GONNA GIMME AN ANSWER.

NOT TALKING? THEN LEMME ASK YOU STRAIGHT.

GRAP...!

WHO THE HELL'S GOT MY LITTLE HIKARI?

JAKI (KACHAK)

I'VE GOT ONE QUESTION AND ONE QUESTION ONLY.

DON (BAM)

IS THE WHITE LION GROUP TO BLAME FOR THIS?

IS IT!!?

HUH?

.....

NUOO (ROAR)

ズオ

PRE-PARE FOR WAR, BOYS ...!

H-HOLD ON. WHO'RE YOU GONNA FIGHT!?

HEH HEH HEH.

I KNEW IT.

WHITE WHO .....?

WHO'RE —THEY ...!?

WHAT'S THE WHITE LION GROUP ANYWAY!? THESE GUYS'VE GOT IT ALL WRONG...!!

COME NOW, BOY.

GIVE US SOME DETAILS.

FROM WHAT THEY TOLD ME ON THE PHONE, YOU'RE HERE TO FIND OUT ABOUT OLD KAMIMUSUBI OVER IN IZUMO... RIGHT?

SO LET'S MAKE OUR LITTLE INFO TRADE.

...MY DOMINATOR ONLY STARTS WORKING WHEN THEY HEAR MY VOICE...

...SO IT WOULDN'T AFFECT THE GUYS OUTSIDE THE WINDOW HERE.

WHEN UP AGAINST OTHER PEOPLE...

CAN I GET THE INTEL I NEED JUST BY CONTROLLING THE MEN IN THIS ROOM?

CLEARING UP THIS MISUNDER-STANDING'S GONNA BE A PAIN...

SOMEONE OVER IN ONODA?

YEAH?

"

O.....

GU (TENSE)

GU (TENSE)

OR SHOULD I JUST TRY TO ESCAPE FOR NOW...!?

O...

PA (CLENCH)

!!?

OH, YOU HAVE A GUEST, MR. BOSS?

.....
HMM?

FUI (FWIP)

SHIT.

THAT'S A U.N. UNIFORM ...!! BUT WHY!?

DA

DA

DA (TMP)

BAN (BAM)

THOSE WHITE LION BASTARDS'RE COMING AT US FROM ACROSS THE RIVER!!!

IT'S REAL BAD, BOSS!!!

B.....

BOSS!

WHAT!?

!?

THIS CAN'T BE A COINCIDENCE ...!

THIS IS MY CHANCE TO RUN!

HIRE ME ON AS A BODY-GUARD!

WHAT'RE YOU DOING?

I'LL SHOW YOU WHAT I CAN DO!

AH.

HEY!

DA (DASH)

LIEU-TENANT!

LET HIM THROUGH!

WA-HA-HA!

YEAH. YEAH.

I'M GONNA ESCAPE...!

.....
HMPH.

HE'S GOT SPUNK. REMINDS ME OF A YOUNG ME!

KNOCK 'EM DEAD!

YOU CAN DO IT!

GO GET 'EM!

YEAHHHHH!

CHOOON (BAM)

DEY CALL ME RIN, OF THE WHITE LIONS!

HYOOOO (WHOOSH)

WHO'RE YOUZE SENDIN' OUT T'FACE ME?

!?

GRANDPA!

GRANDPA!

HELP ME!

...HUH?

!

THAT GIRL, SHE'S...

OHHH!

HIKA-RIIII!!!

(ROAR)

NU (LOOM)

NOT ONE MORE STEP, BITING DRAG-ONS!

EASY, THERE.

GU (SQUEEZE)

'COS WE FOUND A REAL TREASURE, HERE!

WHITE LIONS.

IT HAD TO BE YOU!!!

IF YOU VALUE THIS KID'S LIFE, THEN YOU'LL HAND OVER ALL YOUR TERRITORY TO US!

OH. THAT.

OO (WHOOSH)

WH-WHY IS THAT GIRL HERE...!?

EIJI...

...YOU'RE A DRAGON NOW, RIGHT?

NOW I'VE GOTTA TAKE DOWN SOME BITING DRAGONS...

...OR THEY WON'T GIMME BACK HIKARI-CHAN.

HIKARI-CHAN WAS SAYING HOW SHE WANTED TO GO HOME...

...SO I HID HER IN MY BAG AND BROUGHT HER ALONG.

BUT THE GUY WHO STOLE THE BAG EARLIER... HE WAS ONE OF THE WHITE LIONS' LACKEYS.

ZURU (SLIP)

ズル...

(WHOOSH)

.....OHH.

Subject 12:END

Subject 13

ARE YOU KIDDING ME, RIN? NOT ONLY DID YOU SMUGGLE HIKARI OUT OF DAZAIFU...

...YOU LET HER GET STOLEN BY THE OPPOSING YAKUZA FACTION ...!?!?

H-HIKA-RIII...

HELP MEEE!

GRAND-PAAA!!

MU (POUT)

REALLY, EIJI?

I'M PRETTY SURE THE TEN HANDS ARE TO BLAME FOR KIDNAPPING HIKARI-CHAN IN THE FIRST PLACE!

カチン KACHIN (SNAP)

RIN.

WHY DO YOU ALWAYS HAVE TO COMPLICATE EVERY-THING!?

I JUST HAD TO RUN MY MOUTH EARLIER. NOW THERE'S NO BACKING DOWN.

SHIT.

YEAHHH! おおおお

YEAH, DO IT, KID. TAKE HER DOWN!

KILL HER DEAD!

DA (DASH)

TCH .....

!

GA (STRIP)

.....
HUH!?

!?

RINNNNN!!!

IT'S ALL OR NOTH-ING!!!!!!

EIJI////!!!

Subject 13: “Recovery Operation”
Place: Hiroshima

GACCHIIIN (WHAM)

RIN...! YOU OKAY!?

.....

AH.

.....

OW...!

CUT MY DAMN LIP.

?

H-HEY, RIN ...!?

BIKKUU (SHOCK)

AWA

GYAUHH...

WAHH...

?

.....

WHITE LION GROUP HEADQUARTERS

Y'STARTED SCREAMING YOUR HEAD OFF LIKE A WIMP, SO SIT THERE AND SHUT UP FOR NOW.

WHAT A LET-DOWN. HERE I WAS THINKING YOU'D BE A BATTERING RAM, BUT LOOK WHAT HAPPENED.

YAHHHH!

YOU SEEMED TO BE FRIENDS WITH THAT BODYGUARD OF THEIRS, SO I'M THINKING WE'LL MAKE YOU OUR HOSTAGE TOO.

WE'LL HAVE TO DO THIS DEAL TOMOR-ROW!

.....

HEH-HEH.

DON'T LAY A HAND ON THAT WOMAN.

ZUUUN (GLOOM)

YIKES. YOU DON'T LOOK OKAY...

WE GOTTA GET OUTTA HERE SOME-HOW...

YOU OKAY, MISS?

BA (TURN)

N-N-N-N-N-N-NO!

WAS THAT BOY YOUR BOYFRIEND, MISS?

CHIRA (GLANCE)

WHAT'S THE DEAL, THEN?

What's that...?

The White Lion boss broke this a minute ago.

!

SHADDUP IN THERE, Y'NOISY BROADS!

AH... AH HA HA.

SORRY, WE'LL BE QUIET.

THE ONLY REASON I PUT UP WITH THE HUMILIATING ORDERS...

...IS THE THOUGHT THAT I'LL GET REVENGE SOMEDAY...

THE ONLY REASON I'M WORKING WITH EIJI...

...BUT NOW...

...

DOKIN (SHOCK)

ドキッ

UGH.

WAS THAT YOUR FIRST KISS?

ORDER!

JUOOOO (FWOOM)

REB!!

IRE!!!

JUUUUUU (SIZZLE)

IF THIS GETS EIJI TO COME RESCUE US...

...WHAT THEN?

OOO (WHOOSH)

.....!

Now we can get a message out.

BITING DRAGON GROUP HQ

YOU SOME KINDA MORON!?

WHO GOES AND KISSES THE ENEMY BODY-GUARD!?

CRAP... THEY DRAGGED ME BACK HERE.

LISTEN UP. WE'RE GONNA MAKE A SURPRISE ATTACK ON THOSE WHITE LIONS!

THIS IS YOUR FINAL CHANCE TO SHOW WHAT YOU'RE MADE OF, BOY!

COME, NOW.

WE KNOW HIKARI-SAN IS SAFE.

LET'S CELEBRATE THAT AS PROGRESS MADE.

OKAY?

NI (GRIND)

!

BUT WHY?

THEY KNOW NOTHING ABOUT HIKARI. THEY'RE SIMPLY PERSISTENT.

THEY LIKELY BELIEVE THEIR ONLY OPTION IS TO TAKE DRASTIC MEASURES.

ZA (STEP)

KA

KA (STEP)

LEMME INTRODUCE YOU TO THE BOYS.

THIS GUY'S WITH THE U.N. PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT SECURITY COUNCIL.

HIS NAME'S HANZO HATORI.

SECURITY COUNCIL ...!?

SU (FWIP)

WOOO

SIGH

WE HERE IN HIROSHIMA HAVE STAYED INDEPENDENT. THE FAMILIES HAVE MANAGED EVERYTHING WITHOUT ANY HELP FROM THE U.N.

IT'S A POINT OF PRIDE FOR US... BUT WE'RE BENDING THE RULES THIS TIME.

Shimane
島根

Hiroshima
広島

I'M HERE TO SUPPLEMENT THE OPERATION.

HIROSHIMA MAY BE A YAKUZA PARADISE, BUT YOUR NEIGHBOR, SHIMANE, IS UNDER U.N. CONTROL.

AND THERE'S TROUBLE IN SHIMANE.

KAMIMUSUBI HAS VANISHED.

THE PROBLEM AT HAND IS THAT HIKARI-SAN HAD CONTACT WITH KAMIMUSUBI SHORTLY BEFORE THE GIRL WENT MISSING.

!?

THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S DIVISION 6 IS MOSTLY CONCERNED WITH ORDERS.

THEY'RE PHONE PALS, SO TO SPEAK.

ALL STARTED 'COS ME AND KAMI-MUSUBI GO WAY BACK.

H-HOLD ON A SEC. WHY WAS HIKARI-CHAN TALKING TO KAMIMUSUBI...?

SO THEY LOST KAMI-MUSUBI.

PAN (CLAP)

THERE'S A GOOD CHANCE THAT HIKARI-SAN KNOWS KAMIMUSUBI'S WHEREABOUTS.

THAT IS THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S CONCERN.

...IT DOESN'T LOOK LIKE HE'S HERE TO GET ME...

MAYBE HE DOESN'T KNOW WHO I AM?

JUST HEARING THAT THIS GUY'S WITH THE U.N. PUTS ME ON EDGE, BUT...

AN ORDER WOULD BE ABLE TO SEE MY TERRITORY.

HE'S NO ORDER EITHER.

NEXT, ALLOW ME TO EXPLAIN THE OPERATION TO RETRIEVE HIKARI-SAN.

THIS WAY, PLEASE, EVERYONE.

SIGH.

I'LL JUST HAVE TO USE HIM WITHOUT REVEALING MY ABILITY.

HE MIGHT ACTUALLY BE MY ALLY IN THIS CASE.

NATU-
RALLY...

(DO (BOOM)

OOOO (WHOOSH)

...I'LL ALSO BE EXPOSING *YOUR* IDENTITY.

TH—

THIS IS BAD!

IT'S A BITING DRAGONS RAID!!!

白獅子組

SIGN: WHITE LION GROUP

B-BOSS ...

WHAT DO WE DO...?

THOSE DAMN DRAGONS!

A RAID NOW, OF ALL TIMES...?

CHA (CHAK)

THE FIRST ONE IN NEEDS TO PUT UP A SMOKE SCREEN.

LET'S JOIN IN.

YOU DUMB-ASSES.

THEY'RE OBVIOUSLY AFTER THE HOSTAGE!

DON'T LET 'EM IN!

GACHAN (CLAK)

ガチャン

WHICH MEANS ALL I CAN RELY ON...

...IS RIN'S COOPER-ATION...

.....

I FEEL WEIRD ABOUT IT, BUT...

RIN, CAN YOU HEAR ME!?

ZA (KZZT)

ZA

ZA (STEP)

ZA

ZA

ZA

!

SO HE'S COMING TOO!

I'D BETTER NOT USE MY POWER WHERE HE CAN SEE IT...!

?

H—

ザザザ…

Hello!?

SFX: ZA (KZZT) ZA ZA

She and I just broke out of holding. We're making for the central hall.

.....

WAHHH!

Where's Hikari-chan?

ABOUT BEFORE... I'M SORRY.

YOU'LL GET A REAL APOLOGY FROM ME LATER.

WHAT'S THE DEAL? IS SHE MAD ABOUT WHAT HAPPENED EARLIER...?

H...

...HEY, RIN.

WHY'D MY FIRST KISS...

.....

...HAVE TO BE WITH YOU, OF ALL PEOPLE.....?

You're awful...

CRAP.

AH.....

I MEAN...

NO. WAIT. THAT'S NOT WHAT I MEANT.

RIN... I WAS THINKING THE SAME THING.

YOU'RE SUCH AN ASS, EIJI.

YOU PIECE OF CRAP!

YOU DICK! I SWEAR, I'LL...

"TEE-HEE"? REALLY!?

TEE-HEE.

...IT WAS FREAKING AWESOME.

.....

Right.

L-LET'S TRY TO MEET UP. DON'T DIE OUT THERE.

...I...

ALMOST FORGOT DURING THESE CRAZY PAST FEW DAYS, BUT...

I HAD A LITTLE CRUSH ON HER AT THE START...

ALMOST AT THE CENTRAL HALL...!

WHAT NOW...?

(WHOOSH)

Ack ...

!

AND NOW...

...I'VE ACTU-ALLY KISSED RIN .....!

OOO (WHOOSH)

BUT WHY'RE THE BITING DRAGONS SHOT DEAD TOO...!?

THEY'RE ALL DEAD ...!?

PAN

OW.

PAN (SLAP)

WHERE'S HIKARI-CHAN!?

DIDN'T I JUST TELL YOU NOT TO DIE?

RIN!

THAT WAS...

...HIKARI-CHAN.....!

TA (TMP)

UGH...

MOU

EN

TCH.....

EIJI...

SOME GUY TOOK HIKARI-CHAN FROM ME AND BOLTED...

THE SMOKE'S TOO THICK. CAN'T FOLLOW THEM!

MOU (WAFT)

OHooo

DRAGONS AND LIONS ALIKE WERE SLAUGHTERED HERE.

IS THERE SOME UNKNOWN THIRD PARTY INVOLVED!? AND WHERE'D THAT GUY GO...?

BUT WHY?

HE'S THE ONLY ONE NOT HERE ...!

NO. CAN'T THINK LIKE THAT!

IF I USE MY ABILITY NOW, SOME-ONE'LL...

BAN (BAM)

SAVING HIKARI-CHAN COMES FIRST!

GO (FOOM)

BIND DOMI-NATOR!!!

ORDER!

EIJI!!?

WHOA...

OO (WHOOSH)

!

SAA (FADE)

NOW TO CHASE AFTER THAT GUY AND...

JUST FORCING THE SMOKE OUTTA HERE!

FORCED VENTI-LATION!!!

TCH.

(WHOOSH)

(DASH)

HOLD ON...!?

WHY'RE YOU RUNNING !?

.....

SAKAI-SAN?

GOTCHA.

HE CAUGHT ME USING MY ABILITY ...

DAMMIT!

GIRI (CLENCH)

EIJI HOSHIMIYA.

AND RIN KURENAI AS WELL.

CHA (CHAK)

GET UP. WE KNOW THE CULPRIT'S IDENTITY NOW. LET'S GO AFTER SAKAI!

...!?

AND I TOLD SAKAI.

FOR YOUR INFORMATION, I KNEW WHO YOU WERE FROM THE START.

A-AFTER YOU SAID YOU WERE GONNA EXPOSE ME...!?

Subject 13:END

► Order Ability Profiles

004

»»»"Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.







User: **Ayahito Sundan**

Wish: **To Kill Targets Hidden in Safe Rooms**

Ability: **Teleportation through space**

A teleportation ability. Using it takes a huge toll on the body, so Ayahito constantly takes analgesics to counter the pain. As a result, he can't use it excessively. The fact that his original wish was such a disturbing one is known only to a select group of people.

MAIN ORDER

BIG
ORDER

Subject 14

MY DEAR FATHER ONCE TOLD ME...

...“USE THOSE FISTS TO PROTECT THE ONES YOU LOVE.”

I CAN'T PROTECT MY PARENTS NOW THAT THEY'RE DEAD...

...SO INSTEAD, I'M TRYING TO GET REVENGE FOR THEM.

AND EIJI HOSHIMIYA IS THE MONSTER RESPON-SIBLE FOR THEIR MURDER.

SO I'M GONNA END HIS MISERA-BLE LIFE!

UGH...

OOOO (WHOOSH)

OH.

YOU'VE COME BACK TO LIFE.

!

WHERE AM I...?

THE WHITE LIONS' CENTRAL HALL.

WE'RE GOING AFTER SAKAI-SAN!

WE JUST BUMPED INTO EACH OTHER. WE DIDN'T KISS.

ARE YOU REALLY STILL MAD? IT WAS AN ACCIDENT.

!

PASHI (SMACK)

...

YOU...

OW.

GA (SHOCK)

FINE, I'M GOING. TRY NOT TO FALL TOO FAR BEHIND!

EIJI, YOU COLOSSAL MORON! GET GOING ALREADY!

AM I STARTING TO WAVER NOW THAT I'M GETTING TO KNOW HIM?

.....

...IS THE ONE I'M TRYING TO KILL, BUT...

EIJI HOSHI-MIYA...

O (WHOOSH)

SAKAI MAY BE PART OF A GROUP TARGETING KAMIMUSUBI ...

WELL ...

...I HAD A TIP-OFF, ACTUALLY, SO I WAS WAITING FOR THIS TO HAPPEN.

SO SAKAI IS...?

HARD TO BELIEVE ...

HE DOESN'T WANNA IMAGINE THAT HIS OWN MAN COULD BETRAY HIM...

B-BOSS...

FURA (SWAY)

WHOA!!

DID HE REALLY JUST BLOW MY COVER ...?

DA

TA (TMP)

SAKAI BETRAYED US, YOU SAY...!?

PRE-CISELY.

AND YOU'RE TELLING ME KUWABATAKE HERE IS *THE* EIJI HOSHIMIYA .....?

DA (DASH)

Subject 14: "The Predator's Ambush / Joker"
Place: Hiroshima

DON

GAHH!

DON

DON

DON (BLAM)

!

GUH!

KANBARA ...!? WHAT IN THE HELL ARE YOU DOING!?

DON

UGH...

!

H-HATORI !?

PLEASE BE ON GUARD. THEY ARE NO LONGER YOUR ALLIES!

FROM BEHIND TOO!?

ZORO (CREEP)

DOSHA (THUD)

WHAT'S GOING ON HERE...!?

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

MUST BE SAKAI'S ABILITY!

TOO

"A" DA (DASH)

SHIT. WE'RE SCREWED!

AND YOU'RE JUST MENTION-ING THIS NOW!?

THE INTEL WE RECEIVED TOLD US THAT SAKAI IS AN ORDER WITH THE ABILITY TO CONTROL OTHERS.

BA (TURN)

PER-SPECTIVE, MY ASS. WE'RE ABOUT TO DIE HERE!!

EIJI-KUN, IT'S ALL A MATTER OF PERSPEC-TIVE.

YOU'RE ONLY SCREWED IF YOU THINK YOU ARE.

...IS THAT WE POSSESS SOULS!

SIGMUND FREUD (1856-1939)

FREUD ONCE SAID THAT WHAT SETS US APART FROM ANIMALS...

NI (GRIN)

GU (CLENCH)

SO WE'LL BE FINE!

...HUH?

防火戸

DON (WHAP)

!? WAHH!?

AFTER ALL, I'VE GOT YOU ON MY SIDE!

BUT ...

GI (CREAK)

GI

DOOR: FIRE DOOR

防火戸

EIJI-KUN, THE LODGING QUARTERS ARE UP AHEAD. THE PERFECT PLACE FOR AN AMBUSH.

OW...

LEAVE THESE GUYS TO ME. THIS SHOULD BE FUN.

HE'S RIGHT, THOUGH... I'M THE ONLY ONE WHO CAN TURN THIS SITUATION AROUND...

...I GUESS!

...NO CHOICE, THOUGH. I'VE GOTTA GET HIKARI-CHAN BACK FROM SAKAI!

DA (DASH)

BUT ISN'T "THE ABILITY TO CONTROL OTHERS" A LITTLE TOO CLOSE TO MY OWN?

防火

W-WAIT UP, KUWA-BATAKE!

DOOR: FIRE DOOR

BAN (TURN)

WELL, THAT'S JUST FINE.

...OH.

EVEN THE BOSS GOT THROUGH.

キキキ

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

Can you hear me, Iyo?

THREE HOURS EARLIER, SANYO-ONODA

As I explained earlier...

...we haven't been able to contact Eiji-sama for the last two hours.

...YES, LIEUTENANT COLONEL KUNOU.

.....

I HAVE A QUESTION FOR THE COLONEL.

Yamaguchi Prefecture

Sanyo-Onoda

Hiroshima Prefecture

Hiroshima

THE LAND ROUTE FROM YAMAGUCHI TO HIROSHIMA HAS ALREADY BEEN CONVERTED INTO EIJI'S TERRITORY.

I need you two to rendezvous with him posthaste.

...which would take priority?

If two similar abilities— both with the power to control others— were to clash...

PIRI

PIRI (TINGLE)

.....THE MORE RECENT WISH GETS PRIORITY.

IT WOULD OVERWRITE THE OLD ONE.

WHY DO YOU ASK?

PERSPEC-
TIVE, IT IS!

I'LL HAVE THIS ALL TAKEN CARE OF IN NO TIME!

宿舎ロビー

SIGN: LODGING LOBBY

IT FEELS AS THOUGH.....
"HE" MAY BE COMING.

EIJI-
SAMA...

...MAY BE IN DANGER...

ZA

ZA

ZA
(STEP)

SERI-
OUSLY!?

ZU (CREEP) ズズ… ZU

KEEP THEM ALL FROM MOVING !!!

ORDER !!!

DON (BAM)

DO (BOOM) ドン

UGH.

WAIT, BUT…!

NO GOOD. THOSE EARMUFFS ARE KEEPING THEM FROM HEARING MY ORDERS…

ZA (SKID) ZA ZA ZA

DAN

DAN (BLAM)

AH.

!

THERE'S SAKAI!

DA (DASH)

GOT-CHA!

THIS IS ALL OVER ONCE I TAKE HIM DOWN!

SOME-THING'S WEIRD HERE!!!

WHY WERE THEY PREPARED TO COUNTER MY ABILITY !?

GASHA (SMASH)

DO

DO

DO (BLAM)

DO

DO

DON (BAM)

!?

GEH...

SNAP

SNAP

AGAHH...!?

CRACK

WHY...!?
!?

HE KILLED SAKAI
...

HUH!?

SAKAI WASN'T THE ONE CON-TROLLING PEOPLE. IT WAS THIS GUY...!?

GU-HEH-HEH! GOT YOU NOW.

OOOO (WHOOSH)

HE WAS JUST BAIT!?

THAT'S NOT IT!

NOooo

HE'D JUST SEND OTHERS TO ATTACK IN HIS PLACE.

SOMEONE WITH THE POWER TO CONTROL OTHERS WOULDN'T HAVE ANY REASON TO SHOW HIMSELF.

...WHO'S THE REAL MASTER-MIND!?

SO...

...I'M LETTING MY GUARD DOWN AROUND HIM MORE AND MORE...

I'M STARTING TO HAVE DOUBTS ABOUT EIJI BECAUSE ...

THE KISS MEANT NOTHING...

YORO (WOBBLE)

YO..

NO.....
I...

I'M GONNA KILL EIJI!

IS THAT SO?

HAA.
HAA.

I FIGURED IT WOULD BE OVER BY NOW.

...TENACIOUS, AREN'T YOU?

I ONLY CAME TO RETRIEVE HIKARI-SAN...

...BUT LET ME REWARD YOU WITH SOME INFORMATION.

SLI (FWIP)

THAT IS THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S SECRET MISSION AT PRESENT.

WE ARE GOING TO INTERROGATE HIKARI TARUTAMA.

SHE WILL LEAD US TO KAMIMUSUBI AND OTHER RELATED PARTIES, WHOM WE WILL ANNIHILATE.

WE ARE, IN FACT, THE ONES AFTER HER LIFE.

WE WERE NEVER OUT TO SAFEGUARD KAMIMUSUBI.

NOW, THEN...

BUT TO ENCOUNTER THE ONE AND ONLY EIJI HOSHIMIYA IN THE PROCESS...

A MERE COINCIDENCE ...? ...REGARD-LESS, THIS WILL BE FUN.

OO (WHOOSH)

BUT I WILL NOT BE YOUR OPPONENT.

A BATTLE TO OVERWRITE EACH OTHER'S ABILITIES WOULD GET US NOWHERE.

AND I'VE ALWAYS BEEN BETTER SUITED TO OFFICE WORK.

...YOU'RE GOING TO DIE.

THAT EYE! THE SAME AS DAISY'S!?

OOOO (WHOOSH)

DID YOU KNOW THAT, EIJI-KUN?

ACCORDING TO FREUD...

...HUMANS ARE ESSENTIALLY ANIMALS WITH BROKEN INSTINCTS.....

!?

OH NO...

KU (CLENCH)

NO LIVING CREATURE...

...COULD BE MORE IRRATIONAL.

A WOMAN WHO GIVES HER VERY LIFE FOR REVENGE'S SAKE.

KA (STEP)

KA

PERSPECTIVE, EIJI-KUN.

I'M JUST ALTERING HERS A BIT— ENHANCING HER INNATE, SADISTIC HUMAN NATURE.

...YOU...

KA

IT IS THAT IRRATIONALITY WHICH I FIND SO VERY BEAUTIFUL!



OO (WHOOSH)

MAKE NO MISTAKE, EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

ALL I'VE DONE IS GRANT HER WISH.

DON (BAM)

YOU BASTARD!!!

BA (LEAP)

RIN!?

YOU'RE JUST BEING CON-TROLLED!

STOP IT!

ZA (STAND)

I...

...WILL KILL YOU, EIJI...

RIN'S NOT HEARING ME...!!

HEAD-PHONES ...!

I WILL...!

DA (DASH)

R I N N N N !!!

I'VE GOTTA GET RIN BACK SOMEHOW ...!!

PI
PI (FLEK)
ZAN (SLASH)
I DON'T TAKE ORDERS FROM MEN— I'M NOT SOME EASY, LITTLE BITCH !!!
ORDER.....
DO (POW)



AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAGH!

BA (TURN)

EIJI-SAMAAA!!!

BISHAA (SPLAT)

ビシャア

Subject 14: END

Subject 15

IYO! YOU RETREAT WITH EIJI!

DA (DASH)

EIJI-SAMA!

UWAAAAH!

AH...

I REALLY LOOK UP TO YOU, YOU KNOW.

EIJI-KUN.

IT'S A GREAT HONOR TO HAVE MET YOU!

BUSHUUU (GUSH)

WHAT A BEAUTIFULLY SADISTIC EVENT IT WAS!

YOUR "GREAT DESTRUCTION" TEN YEARS AGO?

I WILL CRUSH THESE TWO!!!

DO (RUMBLE)

MY HAND ...!!!

DO

DO

DO

DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT OFFICES

OUR COMMS GUY SAYS LIEUTENANT COLONEL NARUKAMI HAS REN-DEZVOUSED WITH EIJI-SAMA!

WE'RE WATCHING THE SITUATION UNFOLD!

IYO PREDICTED THAT HE WOULD MAKE CONTACT WITH EIJI...

.....

COMING FOR US RIGHT AFTER THE YAMAGUCHI INVASION ...?

THIS CAN'T BE A COINCI-DENCE.

HE MUST BE HOPING TO TAKE EIJI BACK.

.....

.....

WE'VE LET HIM TAKE THE INITIA-TIVE HERE .....

BA (TURN)

MARI. TELL AYAHITO TO GET READY.

AND ORGANIZE THE ASSAULT SQUAD!

COL-ONEL ...!?

I WON'T ALLOW THIS .....!

DAMN HIM...!

GIRI (GRIND)

"BATTLE ON"
AN ABILITY THAT ALLOWS ITS USER TO DESTROY VIRTUALLY ANYTHING

BATTLE ON!!!

DON (BAM)

RAAAAH!

ORDER!

REBIRTH FIRE!!!

ORDER!

Hmph. Meet his attack head-on, Second Lieu-tenant Kurenai!

(WHOOSH)

"REBIRTH FIRE"
A REGENERATIVE ABILITY

DON

DO

DO

DO
(RUMBLE)

!

YOU'RE HATED BY SO MANY...

...YET YOU KEEP STRIVING TO LIVE...SO CAREFREE, SO PURE!

I'VE GOT CHILLS!

AH-HA!

EIJI-KUN...

...YOU'RE QUITE THE MASOCHIST.

ooo

AH-HA-HA-HA!

COME TO ME! APPEAR BEFORE ME, AT THE THRONE!

HE'S STOLEN HER AWAY...!

THE ENEMY GOT TO RIN!

.....

BIRI (RIP)

OO (WHOOSH)

THAT SICK, LITTLE BAS-TARD !!!

I-I CAN'T STOP THE BLEEDING ...

AT THIS RATE, EIJI-SAMA WILL...

BOTA (DRIP)

BOTA

HE'LL DIE.....!

OH NO...

BURU (TREMBLE)

GOTTA GET RIN BACK...!

T-TRY NOT TO MOVE, EIJI-SAMA!

DA (DASH)

ORDER! BENKEI!

"DON'T KILL RIN"...!!

DON'T... GO!

PLEASE, EIJI-SAMA. PLEASE JUST RETREAT!

YOU TELLING ME TO GIVE UP ON RIN?

IYO!

GU (TENSE)

HE HAS TO TOUCH SOMEONE AND GIVE THEM AN ORDER TO CONTROL THEM...

...SO GETTING NEAR HIM IS DANGEROUS!

HOW DO YOU KNOW ALL THAT...!?

.....!?

HATORI ...?

THE TEN HANDS... NO, ALL OF DAZAIFU WAS ORIGINALLY ORGANIZED TO COMBAT *HIM*...

!

ZAN (SLASH)

!?

GAHHH.

ALL RIGHT, SECOND LIEUTENANT. NEXT IS EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

!

SHE GOT BENKEI...!!

EIJI!!!!

DON (BAM)

ORDER! AIR BARRIER!!!

GI (GRIND) GI GI GI

BENKEI WAS KILLED ...!?

ALL BECAUSE I ORDERED HIM NOT TO KILL RIN!

RIN'S NOT AT FAULT HERE... THAT PIECE OF SHIT IS TO BLAME...!

"STOP IT"! LISTEN TO MY ORDER, RIN!!!

OOO (WHOOSH)

IF I COULD JUST KNOCK OFF THOSE HEADPHONES ...!

GI

GI

GI

GI

GI (GRIND)

TCH...

NO!

EIJI-SAMA, WE NEED TO LEAVE!

SO MUCH BLOOD...! EIJI-SAMA IS GONNA DIE!

DO YOU REALLY HATE ME THAT MUCH..... RIN!?

THAT FACE SHE'S MAKING .....

WHY? SECOND LIEU-TENANT KURENAI IS AN ENEMY NOW ...!!!!

SHE'S NOT AN ENEMY...

...

...AT LEAST, THAT'S WHAT I WANT TO THINK.



JARI (SKRITCH)

RIGHT...

EIJI-SAMA. HE MUST...

.....
.....

.....
.....

HATORI'S THE BAD GUY HERE...! I DON'T WANNA HURT ANYONE ELSE, BUT...

...THE ENEMY...

...IS THAT ASSHOLE OVER THERE WHO'S CONTROLLING RIN!

!!?

EIJI-SAMA... NO!

!

GOWA (FWOOM)

GI (GRIND)

OKED

!!!

...ISN'T HIM!!!

OUR TRUE ENEMY ...

"PIERCE THROUGH ...

ZAKUUU (STAB)

DAAN (BAM)

...HATORI"!

WHA— .....!?

KU-HEH.

AH HA HA!

NOT HURT ANYONE...? WHAT A HYPOCRITE.

TCH...

.....

HAH.

IT'S NOT HIM...!?

HEE-HAH!

THIS ONE IS JUST A CONDUIT FOR MY CONTROL POWER...

A PAWN.

COME, NOW.

DID YOU REALLY THINK I'D REVEAL MY REAL BODY THAT EASILY?

REALLY...?

MY LITTLE HYPO-CRITE, EIJI-KUN!

THE BODY YOU HURT JUST NOW IS THAT OF A MERE COMMONER!

...IS ALSO JUST BEING CON-TROLLED ...?

THIS GUY...

ZU (SWIRL) ズズ... ZU

ZU

ZU

COME TO ME...

...EIJI.

MINDSCAPE

!!?

GOBA (BURST)

COME!

COME!

COME!

GASHI (GRAB)

GASHI

GASHI

WHA— ...!?

COME!

!

ZA

ZA (SKID)

WHAT ARE THESE THINGS...!?

WH-..... WHAT IS THIS...?

WE'RE ALL DONE FOR.....

I-I'M GETTING PULLED IN.....

ZU (SWIRL)

ZU

EIJI-SAMA...!

N-NO!

UGH...

H-IRAGI?!?

COLO-NEL...!

HONESTLY ... THIS HAS BECOME FAR MORE UNPLEASANT THAN I HAD ANTICIPATED.

ALLOW ME TO FIX THIS!

FACT TO FICTION!!!

ORDER!

I DECLARE EIJI HOSHIMIYA'S CAPTURE A LIE!

ZAN (TMP)

WHY ARE YOU HERE!?

!? YOSHI-TSUNE HIIRAGI ...!?

GYO (SHOCK)

!

DA (DASH)

!

AS FOR THIS FILTHY RAT'S DEFEAT, I DECLARE IT...

ZA

ZA

I DECLARE IYO'S INJURY A LIE!

!

ZA

GRR ...

I DECLARE BENKEI NARUKAMI'S INJURY A LIE!

ZA

ZAZAZA (FSSHH)

...MY HAND!

I DECLARE EIJI HOSHIMIYA'S INJURY A LIE!

BUH...

DO (THUD)

GYAAAAH!!!

GAA (WHAM)

...TRÜTH!!!

"FACT TO FICTION"
AN ABILITY THAT WARPS REALITY.
THE USER CONTROLS A SPIRIT BIRD NAMED
"USO" WHO CAN SWAP TRUTH WITH LIES.
HIIRAGI'S WISH WAS "TO DENY THE WORLD."
(THE ABILITY'S EFFECTS ARE LIMITED
TO A TEN-METER RADIUS.)

ZA
ZA
ZA (STEP)
...DID YOU...?
TA (TMP)
HOW...
.....
OO (WHOOSH)
YORO (SWAY)
DAMN YOU...
GUH ...
EIJI.
YOU REALLY ARE BEST SUITED TO THE ROLE OF PUPPET.
GIVEN THAT YOU FLINCH AT THE THOUGHT OF HARMING OTHERS. GIVEN THAT YOU RUN FROM BATTLE.
WHERE'S RIN...!?

DA (DASH)

R...

"...RUN AWAY, SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI"!

!

WHA—

...!?

"DON'T GO, RIN"!!

BA (FWIP)

EVEN WHEN I TRY TO THINK ABOUT HOW TO ATONE, I COME UP WITH NOTHING.

I DON'T KNOW HOW TO FIX THIS.

I JUST...

BARA (F.WOOM)

BARA

BARA

SHIT...!

...I EVER GET RIN TO FORGIVE ME...!?

HOW CAN...

THE ONE CON-TROLLING RIN...

...THE MASTERMIND. WHO IS HE!?

HIIRAGI...

++ OO (WHOOSH)

MY CREATOR ...

WHO'S DAZAIFU FIGHTING AGAINST !!?

.....!

HUH ...!?

DAMN YOU!

NIMA (GRIN)

Next Stop: Shimane

Subject 15:END

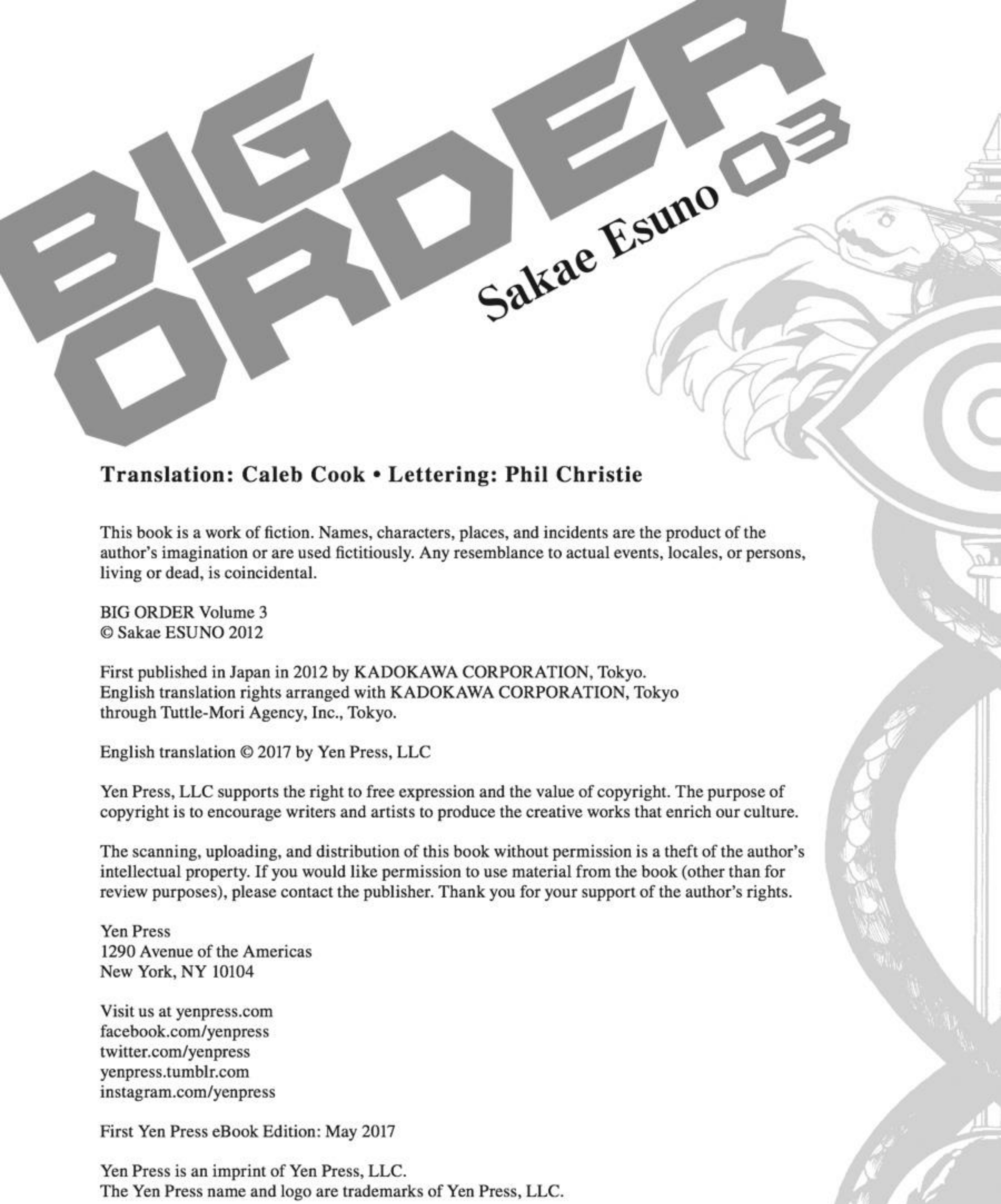
YOU COULD SAY HE'S THE FINAL BOSS!

GENNAI HOSHIMIYA.

YOUR FATHER, EIJI.







Translation: Caleb Cook • Lettering: Phil Christie

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, or persons, living or dead, is coincidental.

BIG ORDER Volume 3
© Sakae ESUNO 2012

First published in Japan in 2012 by KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged with KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo
through Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., Tokyo.

English translation © 2017 by Yen Press, LLC

Yen Press, LLC supports the right to free expression and the value of copyright. The purpose of copyright is to encourage writers and artists to produce the creative works that enrich our culture.

The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book without permission is a theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like permission to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), please contact the publisher. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Yen Press
1290 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10104

Visit us at yenpress.com
facebook.com/yenpress
twitter.com/yenpress
yenpress.tumblr.com
instagram.com/yenpress

First Yen Press eBook Edition: May 2017

Yen Press is an imprint of Yen Press, LLC.
The Yen Press name and logo are trademarks of Yen Press, LLC.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

ISBN: 978-0-316-43592-5 (ebook)

Sakae Esuno

04

BLEACH

PARENTAL ADVISORY
WARNING
EXPLICIT CONTENT

HUH ...!!?

THAT GUY YOU JUST RAN INTO? THAT WAS YOUR DAD.

HE WAS ALSO CONTROLLING HATORI, BY THE WAY.

YUP. THAT WAS GENNAI HOSHIMIYA.

OOOO (WHOOSH)

AREN'CHA GLAD YOU GOT A REUNION WITH HIM?

Subject 16: “Because She Calls Me Eiji!”
Place: Izumo



Presented by
Sakae Esuno

04

BIG ORDER



BIG ORDER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

001 Subject 16: “Because She Calls Me Eiji!”
Place: Izumo

043 Subject 17: “Because I Want to Be Closer to You!”
Place: Izumo’s Inome Cave

081 Subject 18: “Add-On”
Place: Izumo’s Inome Cave

119 Subject 19: “Hoshimiya Institute”
Place: Izumo

157 Subject 20: “The Light vs. the Ogre”
Place: Izumo and Dazaifu

BIG
ORDER

BIG
ORDER

"GENNAI HOSHIMIYA.
YOUR FATHER, EIJI..."

BIG
ORDER

MY FATHER DIED TEN YEARS AGO.

GARA (CRUMBLE)

UGH...

EIJI...

IT WAS THE DAY OF MY "GREAT DESTRUCTION."

OOO (WHOOSH)

THE DAY I KILLED BILLIONS OF PEOPLE...

YOU'RE STILL ALIVE...

I'M SO...

...GLAD...

...SO THERE'S NO WAY HE'S STILL ALIVE!

WAH...

AHH...

DAMN...

DAMN YOU... DAISY...!

ZA (STEP)

DON'T GIMME THAT CRAP!

MY DAD IS DEAD!

THERE'S NO WAY HE'S THE ENEMY WE'RE FACING ...!!!

...

RIGHT?

HMPH ...

HIIRAGI?

BENKEI?

.....?

FINE, DON'T BELIEVE ME. I DON'T CARE.

BUT WHAT ABOUT KAMIMUSUBI?

...AT THIS POINT, IT LOOKS LIKE ALL ROADS LEAD TO IZUMO, WHERE KAMIMUSUBI IS.

OOO (WHOOSH)

WHETHER YOU'RE TRYING TO GET RIN BACK OR SAVE LITTLE SENA...

...I KNOW THAT MUCH.

SO KAMI-MUSUBI'S STILL IN THE IZUMO CITY LIMITS

.....

DON

DON

DON (BLAM)

!

DON'T LET HER TEMPT YOU, EIJI!

SO RUDE, HIIRAGI. YOU THINK I'M TRYING TO TRICK EIJI?

THEIR CHOPPER WAS MOST DEFINITELY HEADED FOR IZUMO...!

BUT YOU STILL SHOULDN'T TRUST HER.

THAT'S HIS CHOICE.

YUIRA (FLICKER)

HE'S FREE TO GO TO IZUMO IF HE WANTS. OR NOT.

EIJI...!!

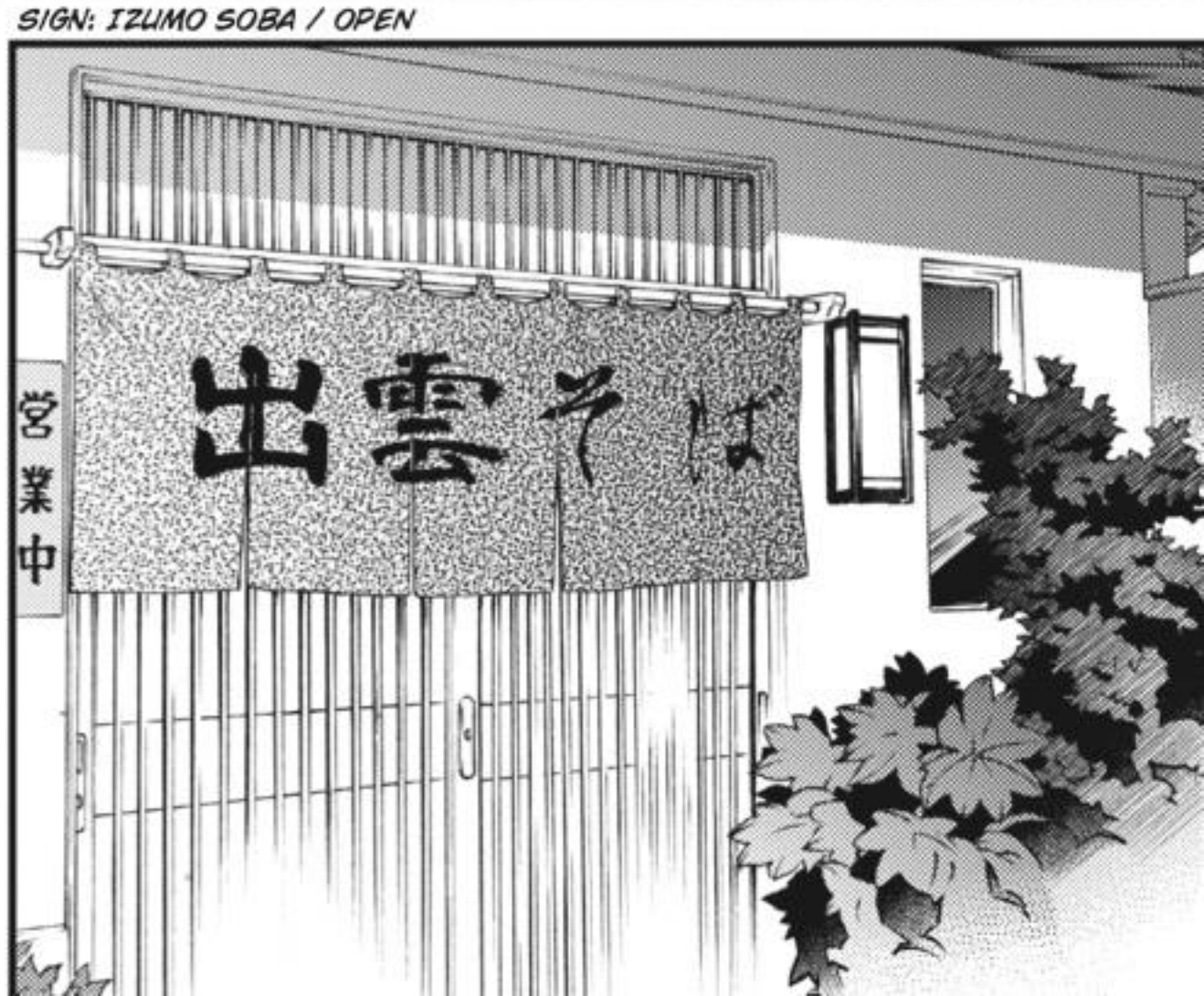
SHIMANE PREFECTURE: IZUMO

SOURCE OF THE LEGENDS OF OKUNINUSHI, THE WHITE HARE OF INABA, AND OTHERS.

THIS IS WHERE THE JAPANESE GODS OF YORE GATHER DURING KAMIARIZUKI, THE TENTH LUNAR MONTH.

SIGN: IZUMO SOBA / OPEN





THE LAND OF ANCIENT MYSTERIES.

SLURP.

SLURP.

SLORRRRP.

SLURP.

SLURP.

SLURP.

SLORRRRP.

ULTIMATELY, I DECIDED TO FOLLOW UP ON THE KAMIMUSUBI THING BY COMING TO IZUMO...

ZUZU (SIP)
ズズ

...BUT IT'S NOT BECAUSE OF ALL THAT CRAP DAISY WAS SPOUTING. I'M HERE TO FIND SENA A CURE.

KOKU (NOD)
コク

KOKU
コク

DON'T FEEL LIKE YOU NEED TO RUSH, IYO.

IN ORDER TO RECON-CILE, THE WHITE LIONS AGREED TO SERVE UNDER THE BITING DRAGONS.

THE BITING DRAGONS' BOSS MADE IT OUT WITH JUST A FEW SCRAPES.

IN THE END...

...THEY GOT HIKARI-CHAN BACK SAFE AND SOUND, APPARENTLY.

HIIRAGI LET ME COME TO IZUMO ON THE CONDITION THAT IYO ACCOMPANY AND MONITOR ME.

STAR SEEKER!!!!

zu zu ズズ...

PASHI (GRAB)

SORRY YOU HAD TO GET PAIRED WITH ME, IYO.

CAN'T WORRY ABOUT RIN FOR NOW. GOTTA FIND KAMIMUSUBI.

GOOD LUCK TO COME

BAD LUCK WITH WOMEN.

YOU WILL FIND THE ONE YOU SEEK IN THE CAVE THAT LED IZANAGI TO YOMI.

"BAD LUCK WITH WOMEN."

"YOU WILL FIND THE ONE YOU SEEK IN THE CAVE THAT LED IZANAGI TO YOMI."

HUH? MYTHOLOGY? I DON'T GET IT AT ALL.

IZANAGI? LIKE, THE GOD WHO CREATED JAPAN WITH IZANAMI...?

SO MANY OF THOSE OLD LEGENDS CENTER AROUND IZUMO.

PERHAPS IT WILL BE A PLACE OF DESTINY FOR US.

BOOK: SHIMANE

LET'S SEE.

LOOKS LIKE YOU'RE ENJOYING THIS.

?

THOSE EARS DROOP WHEN SHE'S HAPPY...?

EH HEH HEH.

OF COURSE. I GET TO BE ALONE WITH EIJI-SAMA...

MOJI (FIDGET) もじ...

YORO (SWAY)
ヨロ…

AND EIJI-SAMA ALREADY ACCEPTED THAT.

……AH, NO.

IT'S MINE.

MY CHILD…

さす…
SASU (STROKE)

BACK THEN, THAT IMAGINED PREGNANCY WAS SURELY A SIGN THAT I WILL ONE DAY BEAR EIJI-SAMA'S CHILD…

PIN (TWITCH)

!?

I'M REALLY SORRY ABOUT THIS…

…MAKING YOU HANG OUT WITH A GUY YOU PROBABLY DON'T EVEN LIKE AND ALL.

TO TELL YOU THE TRUTH, I'D MUCH RATHER LAY THE BURDEN ON RIN.

I WONDER WHAT SHE'S UP TO RIGHT ABOUT NOW.

HMM?

U-UMM, EIJI-SAMA, ABOUT WHAT HAPPENED IN YAMA-GUCHI…

OH, RIGHT.

I KNOW. I WON'T TOUCH YOUR RIBBON AGAIN.

HA-HA.

AFTER ALL, I DON'T WANNA GET YOU PREGNANT!

HMM?

A CAVE, HUH...

LEADING TO "YOMI."

SO WE'RE LOOKING FOR A CAVE AROUND HERE...?

PARA (FLAP)

PAPER: INOME CAVE

BOOK: SHIMANE GUIDE

!

THEN... WILL MY CHILD NEVER GET THE CHANCE TO BE BORN...?

EIJI-SAMA HASN'T REALIZED MY FEELINGS FOR HIM?

THIS MUST BE THE PLACE, IYO!

GATA (STAND)

INOME CAVE!

SIGN: GUIDE TO INOME CAVE, A NATIONAL HISTORICAL SITE

IT REALLY IS A CAVE...

YEAH. JUST LIKE YOU SAID, IYO, THIS PLACE HAS A CONNECTION TO THE OLD LEGENDS.

THIS CAVE IS SUPPOSED TO BE THE ENTRANCE TO YOMI, WHERE IZANAGI WENT LOOKING FOR IZANAMI AFTER SHE DIED.

BO (DAZED)

OH, REALLY ...?

THAT'S GREAT...

BINGO.

FOOTPRINTS. SOMEONE'S BEEN HERE RECENTLY.

HMM?

THEY KEEP GOING DEEPER INSIDE!

SHOBOOON (GLOOM)

?

WHY'S SHE ACTING ALL GLOOMY NOW...?

SOME-THING I SAID?

HEH.

...SEEMS THIS COUPLE'S GOTTEN LOST.

ZAWA

HOLD ON, NOW. OUR MEETING IS AT AN IMPASSE, AFTER ALL...

WHY NOT HAVE A LITTLE FUN WITH THEM?

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA

WHAT DO WE DO.....?

CHASE THEM AWAY?

ZAWA (CHATTER)

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

GREAT. LISTEN UP, MY DEAR DEITIES!

WE'RE GONNA DO A BIT OF DIVINING WITH THIS PAIR!

THE FIRST CHALLENGE: "THE STRENGTH OF A RELIABLE MAN."

DO (BOOM)

!!?

!

KYAAAH!

DAMN— IYO!

BA (LUNGE)

DO (RUMBLE)

DO

DO

DO

DO

A...A CAVE-IN ...!!?

DO

AND A LAND-SLIDE...!

IYO!

DO (RUMBLE)

WE NEED A PRE-DICTION!

AH.

RELYING ON THE GIRL'S POWER? THAT'S NO FAIR. ♪

...OH?

WELL, THEN!

O—

OKAY!

MOVE TO THE RIGHT, THEN LEFT.

THAT'S HOW WE GET PAST THIS LANDSLIDE!

DO

DO

DO

!?

GARA (CRUMBLE)

ZAAAA (FSSHH)

THE SECOND CHALLENGE: "A RELIABLE MAN'S ABILITY TO DO ANYTHING TO SAVE A WOMAN."

IYO'S NOT BREATH-ING...

HAA...

HAA.

PICHA

PICHA (SQUELCH)

A SITUATION LIKE THIS...

...AH.

DOBOOON (SPLOOSH)

WHA—

WHAT THE HELL!? IT'S ONE THING AFTER ANOTHER!

ZAA (FSH)

...THE INFA-MOUS "CPR" !!?

...IS THIS WHEN I PER-FORM ...

UHH .....

NO, NO, NO...WHY AM I EVEN HESITATING?

REMINDS ME OF HOW PANICKED I GOT OVER THAT PREGNANCY BACK IN YAMAGUCHI...

WHAT IF SHE REALLY WAS PREG-NANT...?

WHAT THEN?

U-FU-FU-FU

FU-FU.

IT'S NOT A KISS IF I'M DOING IT TO SAVE HER LIFE!

RIGHT. TOTALLY. IT DOESN'T COUNT.

PICHA

PICHA (DRIP)

PICHA

PACHI

PACHI

PACHI (CRAKL)

PACHI

PACHI

GASP!

HUH? SHE'S BREATHING AGAIN?

UHHH.

GAHHH!

HURRY UP AND KISS HER ALREADY!

CHIRA (GLANCE)
チラッ

NO DOUBT... IYO'S BEEN ACTING WEIRD SINCE BEFORE THE CAVE, EVEN.

PACHI
PACHI

WEIRDER THAN NORMAL, GIVEN THE CIRCUM-STANCES...

PACHI
パチッ

MAYBE SHE REALLY DIDN'T WANNA COME TO IZUMO WITH ME...? I'D BETTER APOLO-GIZE.

HMM...

I'M SORRY, IYO.

WHY IS IT ALWAYS RIN THIS, RIN THAT...!?

PACHI

PACHI (CRAKL)

THIS WAS REALLY MORE OF A JOB FOR RIN...

...!?

IYO?

.....?

UHH.

UH...

PETA (SLAP)

WHY HAVEN'T YOU REALIZED HOW I FEEL ABOUT YOU...?

MEANWHILE, YOU CALL SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI BY HER FIRST NAME ALL THE TIME...

WHY'S SHE CRYING ...!?

JUST LOOK AT ME...

EIJI!

BA (TURN)

!

UWAHH...!

WAH!

WAHHH...!

...

KAAA (BLUSH)

I-IYO !?

Y-YOUR CLOTHES ...!

MUUU (POUT)

SERI-OUSLY?

YOU SERIOUSLY STILL DON'T GET IT?

!?

I...FELL SHORT, IN MANY WAYS.

PLEASE... LOOK AS MUCH AS YOU LIKE.

THIS IS ME.

THAT'S WHY I COULD NEVER ACHIEVE SPIRITUAL POWER.

AS A SHRINE MAIDEN, I WAS TOLD BY MY FATHER TO STAY AWAY FROM MEN, BUT...

...SINCE I WAS LITTLE, I'VE DREAMED ABOUT FINDING A HUSBAND SOMEDAY...

DOES SHE MEAN ...?

!

THAT'S WHY...

GU (CLENCH)

THE FIRST PREDICTION I MADE AFTER RECEIVING MY ABILITY WAS ABOUT MY "FUTURE HUSBAND"...

...AND THEN WE FINALLY MET.

...I LIKE YOU, EIJI!

HAH.

!!?

HAH.

ドドド

HAH.

HAH.

HAH.

HAH.

HAH
HAH.

!!?

Subject 16:END

► Order Ability Profiles

005

»»»"Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.







User: Abraham Louis Fran

Wish: To Stop Time If It Meant Protecting Loved Ones

Ability: Time freeze

Abraham Louis Fran's time-freezing ability. In the wake of the Great Destruction, law and order fell apart, resulting in civil unrest in many regions of the world. Before gaining his power, Fran was a member of the U.N. Covert Ops division, working to suppress a civil war in France (linked to the Eiffel Tower disappearance incident). It was around then that he lost his loved ones and was granted an ability by Daisy…During his work with the U.N., he encountered Hiiragi, who decided to make use of Fran's ability. Though not officially one of the Ten Hands, he's Hiiragi's most trusted subordinate after Mari. However, his personal motives are still unclear.

CHRONOGRAPH CALIBER

BIG
ORDER

DO HAH. HAH. DO DO

DO HAH. DO DO

DO (RUMBLE)

!!?

WHO THE HELL ARE THESE GUYS ...!?

EIJI-SAMA ...!

SU (SWF)

TODAY IS NOVEMBER 20, WHICH MEANS IT'S THE 15TH DAY OF THE TENTH MONTH ON THE OLD CALEN-DAR.

UNDER-STAND WHAT I'M HINTING AT?

!

HAH. HAH.

DO DO DO

TH-THEY'RE ...!

AND I AM THE ORDER KNOWN AS KAMIMUSUBI.

I AM THE SHRINE MAIDEN OF IZUMO, KUROKO SHIRA-BYOUSHI. ♡

EIJI HOSHIMIYA-KUN.

IYO-CHAN.

DON (BAM)

DURING KAMIARIZUKI*, ALL THE GODS GATHER HERE IN IZUMO TO FORGE BONDS BETWEEN MAN AND WOMAN.

WELCOME TO KAMIHAKARI— THE COUNCIL OF THE GODS.

* "KAMIARIZUKI" (GOD PRESENCE MONTH) THE NAME FOR THE TENTH MONTH IN THE OLD JAPANESE CALENDAR AND THE TIME WHEN THE GODS GATHER IN IZUMO. THROUGHOUT THE REST OF THE COUNTRY, THE MONTH IS CALLED "KANNAZUKI" (NO-GOD MONTH).

Subject 17: "Because I Want to Be Closer to You!"
Place: Izumo's Inome Cave

SHE'S THE ONE I'VE BEEN LOOKING FOR.

NOW...

IT'S KAMIMU-SUBI!

!

GOO (FWOOSH)

U-FU-FU.

!!?

DON (WHAM)

DU

HOW DARE YOU SHAME HER, EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

WHAT!?

!!?
!!?

PASHI (SNAP)

IYO...

KIRA (SPARKLE)

KIRA

GU (CLENCH)

GUWAHH!?

DOZA (SKID)

THIS WOMAN HAS SHOWN HER BARE BODY TO YOU BEFORE US ALL!

YOU KNOW WHAT YOU NOW MUST DO!

ZA

ZA

ZA

LET ME DOM-INATE THAT DE-LICIOUS BODY OF YOURS.

CHUUU (KISS)

OHHH, EIJI-SAMA!

Ahh.

BA (TURN)

ARE YOU OKAY!? I AM THE ONLY ONE WHO OUGHT TO SEE YOU NAKED!

I'M SO EX-CITED ...

!?

BA

SHE SEEMS MORE THAN A LITTLE CRAZY.

THIS IS KAMIMUSUBI...?

IYO...!

OZU (TOTTER) おず...

KAMIMUSUBI-SAMA!

WE'VE COME WITH A RE-QUEST FOR YOU!

PLEASE CURE EIJI-SAMA'S SISTER OF HER ILLNESS!

SHE JUST WANTS TO BE USEFUL TO THE ONE SHE LOVES. ♡

AHH, WHAT A BOND... HOW LUCKY I AM...!

?

AWWW.

HOW INNO-CENT!

HOW VERY INNO-CENT! ♡

BIG SIS HERE WILL GIVE YOU HER FULL SUPPORT! ♡

HIS SISTER'S CURE...

... RIGHT.

HAA. HAA.

.....OF COURSE.

CRAP. I CAN'T STOP DROOLING.

JURU (DROOL)

じゅる

!?

WH—

WHY!?

THE KAMIHAKARI IS TOO IMPORTANT TO BE CANCELED.

I REFUSE.

FU-FU.

PLUS, I'M NOT ALL THAT EAGER TO HELP SUCH AN UNAPPEALING MAN.

HOLD UP. WE'RE NOT ASKING YOU TO CANCEL YOUR MEETING ...

IRA (MAD) イラッ

HOWEVER!

PIN (FLICK)

IF YOU PLAY A GAME WITH US AND WIN...

THE GAME IS...

...I MIGHT JUST CHANGE MY MIND.

BA (TOSS)

...KEMARI!

?

SEE ...

AFTER ALL THIS DISCUS-SION, I'D SAY WE DESERVE A BREAK.

IF YOU CAN ***MAKE US DROP*** THE MARI BALL, YOU WIN.

PON (BOUNCE)

THE KAMIHAKARI WILL CONTINUE WHILE WE PLAY.

NORMALLY, THE BALL HAS TO BE KICKED AT A SET HEIGHT, BUT WE WON'T BE USING THAT RULE.

HISO (WHISPER)

SHE KNOWS ABOUT US AND OUR POWERS ...!?

OUR OPPO-NENTS ARE THE GODS THEM-SELVES AND THEIR MAIDEN.

PON

FEEL FREE TO USE YOUR ABILITIES. THAT SAID, YOU CAN'T CONTROL THE BALL DIRECTLY.

WELL?

PON

AFTER ALL, IT WOULDN'T BE MUCH OF A GAME THEN, WOULD IT? ♡

GREAT.

I'LL BE DRAGGING YOU OUT OF THIS CAVE, MARK MY WORDS.

ZAN (STEP)

TA (TMP)

SO IF I STEAL THE BALL, SHE'LL AGREE TO SEE SENA? SOUNDS SIMPLE ENOUGH.

NOT A HINT OF FEAR. THAT'S YOUTH FOR YOU! ♡

IS THAT SO? SEEMS YOUR MOUTH IS THE ONLY THING BIG ABOUT YOU.

IN THAT CASE, LET'S BEGIN.

ORDER!

PON

I SEE! SINCE HE CAN'T CONTROL THE BALL ITSELF, HE'S GONNA FLING HIS OWN BODY AT US...

HE'S GOT MORE THAN JUST YOUTH ON HIS SIDE.

LET'S SEE HER DODGE THIS...!

THAT BALL IS AS GOOD AS MINE!

GIRIRI (TENSE)

DON (BAM)

BYUO (ZOOM)

!

!!?

ZA ZA ZA (SKID)

ZA ZA ZA ZA ZA

!? THAT'S RIGHT...!

WHAT ...!!?

HO HO HO HO! ♡

THIS IS STRANGE, EIJI-SAMA. KAMIMUSUBI IS SUPPOSED TO BE A VERY OLD WOMAN...

TEN THOUSAND ON KUROKO.

JARA (CLATTER)

I'M BETTING TEN THOUSAND MUSUHI ON KUROKO.

JARA

SAME HERE.

HM...

...HM.

THE BETTING POOL IS LOOKING A BIT ONE-SIDED, NO?

WHAT'S THIS?

DAIKOKUTEN

AN ORDER WHO CAN GRANT "LIFE ENERGY" TO PEOPLE!

YES, I'M BASICALLY A SUPERHUMAN WHO POSSESSES ASTOUNDING PHYSICAL ABILITIES! ♡

ZU (SHRINK)

ZU

IT'S MY ABILITY— "KAMIMUSUBI"— THAT'S CAUSED THE GODS TO MANIFEST HERE!

"MUSUHI" REFERS TO THE LIFE ENERGY THAT EXISTS IN ALL THINGS.

THE POWER OF THE GODS LETS ME HEAL THE SICK! GIVE STRENGTH TO THE HEALTHY! BESTOW CHILDREN TO COUPLES, EVEN!

BISHAMONTEN

HMPH.

THAT'S A BET YOU'LL LOSE.

OH, COME ON.

U-FU-FU.

IYO-CHAN IS CUTE ENOUGH, SO WHY DON'T I BET A HUNDRED MUSUHI ON HER?

BENZAITEN

TO THE RIGHT, EIJI-SAMA...!

SHIT...

SHIT.

HAA.

HAA.

BA

BA

BA

(FLIK)

ACK, NOW IT'S BEHIND ME!

!

NOW IT'S GOING LEFT...!

THE RIGHT...!

BYUO (ZOOM)

I CAN'T KEEP UP.....!

.....!

I SUPPOSE MY PREDICTIONS AREN'T ANY HELP EITHER, THEN.

DAMMIT!

I CAN'T FOLLOW THE BALL'S MOVEMENTS, AND KAMIMUSUBI HERSELF WON'T STEP INTO MY TERRITORY... I REALLY UNDER-ESTIMATED HER.

MUNI (SQUISH)

NO...

I'M GLAD.

NIKO (SMILE)

AH...

SORRY.

I'M FEELING A LITTLE SELF-CONSCIOUS. I'M NOT SURE WHAT OUR BOUNDARIES ARE...

?

I, UH...

GASSHII (STEAM)

UUMM...

BEING LIKED BY SOMEONE... JUST ISN'T SOMETHING I'M USED TO.

THIS ONE GIRL WHO SAT FAR AWAY FROM ME WENT OUT OF HER WAY TO HELP. WE'D NEVER EVEN SPOKEN BEFORE.

BACK IN MIDDLE SCHOOL, WE HAD THIS CLASS EVENT WHERE I NEEDED TO WEAR A TIE...

...BUT I DIDN'T KNOW HOW TO TIE IT...

BUT THERE WAS A MANGA I WANTED TO BUY THAT DAY, SO I WENT HOME ALONE...

AS SHE TIED IT ON, SHE SAID, "WANNA WALK HOME WITH ME TODAY?"

I ONLY REAL-IZED IT LATER.

SHE WAS GIVING ME A SIGN, RIGHT? OR WAS I BEING TOO SELF-CONSCIOUS?

KUSU (GIGGLE)

THAT WAS YOU BEING SELF-CONSCIOUS.

UM...

...UH...

I LIKE YOU ENOUGH TO TELL YOU OPENLY, EIJI-SAMA .....

GET IT?

LET'S SAVE SENA-SAMA...

...TO-GETHER ...

AND UNLIKE THE SECOND LIEUTENANT, I'M NOT GOING ANYWHERE.

DID SHE JUST FALL ASLEEP ...?

.....

GOOD IDEA.

THIS WILL SURELY HELP THEM FORGE THEIR BOND. WILL YOU LET THEM WIN NOW?

KUKUKU.

AS IF.

WE'RE JUST GETTING STARTED.

WELL, EIJI-KUN? IYO-CHAN?

DO

DO

DO

CAN YOU KEEP UP WITH THIS!?

DO

DO

DO (KICK)

LET THE GAME RESUME.

GYU (SPIN)

ギュ

GYU

ギュ

EIJI-SAMA!

THIS IS TOO MUCH, KUROKO!

I THOUGHT YOU MIGHT GO EASIER ON THEM NOW, BUT THIS...THIS ISN'T MUCH OF A GAME AT ALL!

GYU

ギュ...

BA
(LUNGE)

!

HIS REACTIONS HAVE GOTTEN FASTER ...!?

SURE, HE USES HIS AVATAR TO CHASE THE BALL, BUT STILL...

SFX: PON (BOUNCE)

SHIT.

ポン

.....

I SEE...

I HAD NO CAUSE FOR CONCERN.

TO THE RIGHT, 45-DEGREE ANGLE: HARD PRESS W/ POINTER

TO THE RIGHT: HARD PRESS W/ THUMB

STRAIGHT AHEAD: HARD PRESS W/ MIDDLE FINGER

SHE'S TELLING HIM WHICH WAY THE BALL WILL GO VIA HER GRIP ON HIS HAND.

TO THE LEFT, 45-DEGREE ANGLE: HARD PRESS W/ RING FINGER

TO THE LEFT: HARD PRESS W/ PINKIE

DON (WHAM)

THEN I TOO WILL GIVE IT MY ALL!

THAT WAY, IYO CAN COMMUNICATE WHAT HER DOWSING IS TELLING HER MUCH FASTER THAN IF SHE WERE SPEAKING!



IN THE END, IT'S STILL A HUMAN CONTROL-LING THE AVATAR.

THAT HUMAN'S LIMITS ARE ALSO THE ABILITY'S LIMITS.

IT'S COMMON FOR ORDERS TO RELY TOO HEAVILY ON THEIR ABILITIES...

BYUO (ZOOM)

CHIRA (GLANCE)

CHORO (TRICKLE)

CHORO

HMPH.

WONDER HOW MUCH TIME HAS PASSED.

TWO WHOLE DAYS, MAYBE ...?

CAN'T BE SURE WHAT TIME IT IS FROM INSIDE THIS CAVE...

KUROKO'S OBJECTIVE ...

...IS MORE THAN MERE BOND-FORGING.

I THOUGHT YOU MIGHT WANT TO WIPE YOURSELF DOWN...

!

YEAH.

AND I...

...THOUGHT YOU MIGHT WANT SOME WATER, IYO...

CHAPU (SWISH)

.....

.....

EIJI-SAMA...

...DEFINITELY LIKES ME.

SO IYO...

...REALLY LIKES ME.

WE'RE LEANING ON EACH OTHER, AND NEITHER OF US IS PULLING AWAY...




?
WHAT'S THE MATTER ?
NOTHING.


SOMEWHERE IN IZUMO CITY

I MEAN, I GUESS I'M GLAD TO BE OUT OF HIS TERRI-TORY, BUT...

HE SAYS, "DON'T GO," BUT I DON'T SEE HIM COMING AFTER ME...

WHAT'S WRONG WITH THAT STUPID EIJI?

.....

SO...

...WHAT NOW?

AL-THOUGH ...

NOW THAT YOU'RE HERE, I MIGHT AS WELL INTRODUCE YOU TO THE OTHER SECURITY COUNCIL MEMBERS.

!!!

.....JUST NOW.

WE FINALLY GRAZED IT...!

BASHI (GRAB)

ONE OF THEM IS ALREADY ON HIS WAY TO EIJI-KUN.

HEY, DAIKOKUTEN, YOU STILL ACCEPTING BETS?

THAT WAS A CLOSE CALL.....

HERE WE GO, FOR REAL.

JARA (CLATTER)

JARA

!

OH?

YEAH ...

I'M PUTTING TWENTY MILLION ON THOSE TWO.

ドクン

DOKUN (BADUM)

Subject 17:END

► Order Ability Profiles

006

»»»"Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.







User: **Yoshitsune Hiiragi**

Wish: **To Deny the World**

Ability: **Negating reality**

The Eurasian bullfinch (a type of bird called "uso" in Japanese) shares its name with the word for "lie" (also "uso"), so it's revered as a creature able to turn the ills of the previous year into "lies" by negating them. Every year, the Usokae ("uso exchange") Festival is held at Tenmangu Shrine, near the Dazaifu Government Offices. Hiiragi's spirit bird takes its name from this tradition because Hiiragi sought to deny Gennai and the world that Gennai corrupted. He hasn't been able to achieve this goal yet, though.

Hiiragi's ability has both active and passive forms. The active form requires him to specify a change, vocally, which will immediately occur. By using the passive form, Hiiragi can lay out specific conditions that, when met, will cause the ability to activate. In Volume 2, Eiji told Hiiragi not to use his powers, but Hiiragi had in fact already declared, "If someone tells me not to use my ability, that will be a lie," which later caused Fact to Fiction to activate. As a general rule, when conflicting Order abilities clash, passive effects will almost always override active ones.

*Hiiragi can't use the active and passive effects simultaneously. Furthermore, his range is limited to a 10-meter radius, and it won't work if too much time has passed after the event in question.

FACT TO FICTION

BIG
ORDER

Subject 18

ZA (SPLASH)
ZA
ZA

...SO IT'S NOT TOO FAR FROM THE SEA.

THE CAVE WAS ACCIDENTALLY UNEARTHED DURING REPAIRS TO THE HARBOR...

EIJI AND IYO ARE NOW IN INOME CAVE, A PLACE OF GREAT IMPORTANCE TO THE GODS IZANAMI NO MIKOTO AND IZANAGI NO MIKOTO.

.....

ZA
ZA

MAYBE I SHOULD SUMMON DAISY, JUST IN CASE.

ZO (WRITHE)
ZO
ZO

ACCORDING TO THE REPORT, EIJI HOSHIMIYA ENTERED THE CAVE ABOUT TWELVE HOURS AGO.....

PICHA (DRIP)

HMPH. THEY'VE PROBABLY ALREADY FOUND KAMIMUSUBI, THEN. DAMN THAT SLOWPOKE HANZO.

ZO

ONCE I STEAL THE BALL FROM KAMIMUSUBI, SHE'LL COME WITH US TO SEE SENA...!

I MANAGED TO GRAZE IT JUST NOW, SO THIS IS LOOKING DOABLE...!

NIKO (SMILE)

SQUEEZE.

ALL TO CURE SENA...!

THEY'RE GETTING LESS IN SYNC WITH EACH OTHER.

GUESS HE STILL DOESN'T TRUST IYO-CHAN COM-/ PLETELY.

BUT...I SURE AM GETTING ALONG WELL WITH IYO, DESPITE HER BEING PART OF THE TEN HANDS.

SAVING SENA IS JUST ANOTHER PART OF THE MISSION FOR HER, NO?

WE'LL GET IT THIS TIME, IYO!

ZAN (STEP)

YES, EIJI-SAMA!

ZO (CREEP)

ZO

LET'S GET STARTED AGAIN.

WH-WHAT'S GOING ON? THE CAVE SPRING A LEAK?

...WATER?

!

NO, LOOK BEHIND YOU, EIJI-KUN!!!

.....HUH!!?

ド (DO (ROAR))

ドドドドドドドド (DO)

!!?

!

ZA (SPLASH)

ooo

Subject 18: "Add-On"
Place: Izumo's Inome Cave

ZAN (SPLASH)

I RULE OVER IZUMO AS PART OF THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S DIVISION 6. MY NAME IS FUMAI MATSUDAIRA!

I AM HERE UNDER ORDERS TO TAKE THE LIFE OF KAMIMUSUBI!

ZA ZA

DO DO DO

SOMEONE AFTER KAMIMU-SUBI...!?

IF YOU THINK A LITTLE WATER'LL GET THE JOB DONE, YOU GOT ANOTHER THING COMING.

ZAA

AH .....

ACK ...!?

DO (ROAR)

BY DOUBLING THE DEPTH FROM THIRTY CENTIMETERS TO SIXTY, THE FLOW BECOMES ***FOUR TIMES*** AS POWERFUL!

DO NOT UNDER-ESTIMATE THE POWER OF WATER.

PLENTY OF PEOPLE DROWN IN EVEN THE SHALLOW-EST OF RIVERS.

THE CURRENT'S POWER IS THE ***SQUARE*** OF ITS DEPTH!

FLOO

DO

DO

DO

DO

AN ORDER WHO CAN CON-TROL WATER ...!

THAT'S TWO SQUARED!

IT'S NOT MERELY DOUBLED!

IDIOT! WHAT WERE YOU THINKING, LEAVING IYO-CHAN TO FEND FOR HERSELF?

EIJI-SAMA!

WHOA A!!?

ZA ZA ZA ZA (FSSHH)

...I DID TRY JUST NOW...

...BUT IT DIDN'T WORK!

EIJI-SAMA, YOU MUSTN'T FALL INTO THE WATER AGAIN!

TRY CONTROL-LING THE WATER, THEN WE CAN...

WELL...

DO DO DO DO

DO DO DO (ROAR)

ORDER: ISO-TONIC WATER!!!

LIOOOON (GROWL)

PICHA (DRIP)

PICHA

ISOTONIC WATER: FUMAI'S WATER-CONTROLLING ABILITY. HIS WISH IN THE AFTERMATH OF THE GREAT DESTRUCTION WAS "TO CONTROL FLOODS." HIS AVATAR USES THE PRINCIPLES OF OSMOTIC PRESSURE TO BE ABSORBED BY AND BECOME ONE WITH THE WATER ITSELF.

DO DO DO DO DO DO

BASICALLY, I CAN'T USE MY POWER TO DIRECTLY CONTROL ANY OF THE WATER IN HERE!

THE WATER IS PART OF HIS AVATAR... WHICH MEANS THAT MY ABILITY CAN'T DO ANYTHING AGAINST IT! THAT'S THE RULE!

PICHA

PICHA

THIS GUY'S BAD NEWS!!!

HIS POWER'S STRENGTH LIES IN ITS SIMPLICITY...!!!

THE ONE TO WATCH OUT FOR IS HIS "DOMINATOR"...

"STAR SEEKER" AND "KAMIMUSUBI" AREN'T ABILITIES MEANT FOR ATTACKING.

DO (ROAR) DO DO DO DO

ドドド

FUMAI'S ISOTONIC WATER IS THE ULTIMATE ABILITY WHEN DEEP INSIDE A CAVE!

ALL HE HAS TO DO IS WAIT FOR THE CAVE TO FILL COMPLETELY.

EIJI AND COMPANY WILL DROWN, AND THAT WILL BE THAT.

HOW-EVER...

WOOD KURU ←TURN

IS IT ALL OVER...?

!

DOBON (PLUNGE)

ドボ

!

HMPH. I SEE THOSE ANCHORS OF YOURS, EIJI HOSHIMIYA...!

WHAT DO I DO...!? WHEN WE START TO RUN OUT OF AIR, MY AIR BARRIER WILL.....

SHIT, HE NOTICED US...! AND HE'S PRACTICALLY OMNISCIENT UNDERWATER!

ゴボボボ

GOBO

BO

...EIJI WAS STILL FIGHTING BACK!!!

GOBO (BLUB)

ゴボボボボ

BO

BO

BO

BO

YOU'RE BOTH ORDERS, EIJI-KUN, IYO-CHAN.

EARLIER, I WAS TRYING TO GET YOU TO SYNC UP IN ORDER TO FIND A POWER YOU'LL SOON HAVE NEED OF.

...FUSION!?

EIJI-KUN, YOU HAVE TO TRY ORDER FUSION!

I KNOW THIS IS PRETTY MUCH A TRIAL BY FIRE, BUT YOU'VE GOT NO OTHER CHOICE!

!

BO BO BO (BLUB)

NEVER GONNA HAPPEN. I'VE GOT LESS IN COMMON WITH IYO THAN ANYONE! THIS IS TERRIBLE...I HAVE TO AT LEAST FIND A WAY TO GET IYO TO SAFETY—

YOU HAVE TO SYNC YOUR TWO WISHES...!

GOOOOO (FOOM)

!

NO.

GYU (SQUEEZE)

A PERSON DOESN'T GET THAT KIND OF LOOK ON THEIR FACE, UNLESS THEY GENUINELY CARE.

ALL FOR THE MISSION...? NO, I WAS WRONG.

PAAA (GLOW)

THEY'RE SYNCING...!

!

I'M SORRY.

GOBO (BLUB)

.....

ALL THREE OF US WILL BE MAKING IT BACK TO SENA...

...EIJI-SAMA.

ORDER!!!

BA (TURN)

I'LL PROTECT YOU, IYO ...!!!

I'LL PROTECT YOU, EIJI-SAMA ...!!!

BO BO BO (BLUB)

THEIR VISION IS LIMITED UNDER-WATER! PLUS, I CAN RE-DIRECT MY HARPOONS VIA THE CURRENT HOWEVER I WISH !!!

THEY WON'T BE ABLE TO DODGE THIS!!!

CHA (CHAK)

UWOHHHHH!!!

GASHIN (KLANK)

GASHIN

DON (BAM)

NO TELLING WHERE THE ATTACKS WILL COME FROM ...!

DOMINATOR...

DON (BAM)

...ADD-ON: CLAIR-VOYANCE ENGINE!!!

HE PREDICTED THE HARPOONS' PATHS AND PUT UP AIR BARRIERS TO SLOW THEM...?

GOOD GOING, EIJI-KUN!

HE CAUGHT THEM...!? BUT HOW!!?

WHA— .....!!?

OOO (WHOOSH)

XXX

"DOMINATOR ADD-ON: CLAIRVOYANCE ENGINE"
AN ADDITIONAL POWER FOR DOMINATOR THAT LETS IT READ ONE MOVE AHEAD WITHOUT FAIL.
* "ONE MOVE AHEAD" IMPLIES A DIRECT ATTACK FROM THE OPPONENT (NOT INDIRECT ATTACKS OR THE OPPONENT'S DECISION TO FLEE, FOR INSTANCE). SIMULTANEOUS ATTACKS CAN BE DEALT WITH AS A GROUP, WHILE ONES WITH GAPS IN BETWEEN ARE MANAGED INDIVIDUALLY.

HE'S GONNA GO FOR OUR BLIND SPOT, BEHIND, FROM THE RIGHT!

I CAN FEEL IYO'S THOUGHTS FLOWING INTO MY MIND.....!

GOBO (BLUB)

BO

IN THAT CASE, I'LL HIT THEM FROM BEHIND AND TO THE RIGHT. THAT'S THEIR BLIND SPOT!

ORDER.

BUT HOW ABOUT THIS...?

BUT EIJI-SAMA...

I MAY NOT BE ABLE TO CONTROL THE WATER DIRECTLY...

ZAA (FSSHH)

YEAH, I GOT IT, IYO!

FI—
……?

GYO (GOLD)
ぎょ

DO (WHAM)
FU

S
H
H
H
H
!!?

"FISH GUN" !!!

PICHA (DRIP)
ピチャ

HEY, KAMIMU-SUBI...

WE GOT INTERRUPT-ED, BUT WE CAN COUNT THAT AS A WIN, RIGHT?

...OKAY.

NICE...! NOW WE CAN FINALLY CURE SENA.

GOOD THING IT WAS SEAWATER HE BROUGHT WITH HIM.

SORRY, LITTLE FISHIES.

ZA (SPLASH)

BUT BEFORE THAT...

...WE'VE GOTTA ASK THIS GUY A FEW QUESTIONS.

SU (STEP)

H-HEY...?

GUH .....

HMPH .....

HEH HEH.

YOU REALLY THINK YOU'VE WON?

PICHA (DRIP)

TELL ME!

IS THE SECURITY COUNCIL OUT TO KILL ME, THE SHRINE MAIDEN OF IZUMO...

...BECAUSE THEY'RE PLANNING TO RELEASE "THAT"?

THIS LOCATION..... I'VE ALREADY TRANSMITTED THE EXACT COORDINATES TO HEADQUARTERS. LATITUDE, LONGITUDE, AND DEPTH. SHE WILL BE ARRIVING ANY MOMENT NOW.

HA-HA-HA-HA-HA.

SO SURE OF YOURSELF. IT NEVER REALLY MATTERED WHETHER I WON OR LOST.

WHAT A LOAD OF CRAP. YOU'VE GOT NO WAY TO TRANSMIT ANYTHING!!

HEAD-QUARTERS .....?

DAISY!!!

HA-HA... WE'LL SEE ABOUT THAT !!!

GORO (ROLL)

!!?

WHAT IS IT? YOU HAVE BUSINESS WITH ME?

WHAT A PAIN...

FU (FLOAT)

DIDN'T THE FELLOWS OVER AT DAZAIFU TELL YOU?

YOUR FACE TELLS ME YOU'RE SOMEHOW UNAWARE.

WHY'S SHE HERE!?

.....IT'S DAISY!

SHE'S ESSENTIALLY AN INFORMATION MANAGEMENT SYSTEM.

DAISY'S ORIGINAL ROLE WAS TO GATHER INFORMATION ON ORDERS.

THAT'S HOW WE CAN USE HER LIKE THIS.....!

TCH.

!? THE GROUND ...

ZAAAAA (FSSHH)

DAISY!! OPEN UP A TWO-WAY CONNECTION !!!

I'VE BEEN WATCHING, EIJI.

HMPH.

ONCE YOU DECIDED TO ABANDON ME, YOU STARTED FLIRTING WITH IYO, HUH?

OHH?

(WHOOSH)

EIJI-SAMA ...!

THEY'RE NOT REALLY HERE. IT'S JUST A PROJEC-TION!

GUI (TUG)

RIN...!?

BA (LUNGE)

GASSHAN (KLANK)

HOW INTER-ESTING... THEIR FUSION FALLS TO PIECES WHEN THEY FALL OUT OF SYNC WITH EACH OTHER.

TCH.

WELL, NO TIME TO STAND AROUND CHATTING NOW, IS THERE?

ZA (STEP)

ZA

WE'LL HAVE TO CONTINUE THIS LATER, EIJI-KUN.

UNTIL THEN—! ♪

I LEAVE THE REST TO YOU, JUUBEE.

ORDER.

ZA

HATORI ...!!!

ヤタロウ サイゲンなき セイバー

SHIRIN (SLICE)

D-MENSION SWORD!!

……

…
KA—

KAMIMUSUBI!!!

DA (DASH)

JUUBEE'S SWORD CAN CUT THROUGH DIMENSIONS THEMSELVES.

WE'VE KILLED OFF KAMI-MUSUBI, WE'VE LEARNED THE WEAKNESS OF EIJI-KUN'S NEW POWER...

HEH-HEH.

...AND WE'VE ELIMINATED ONE OF OUR OWN FAILURES.

BEAUTIFULLY DONE! ♪

ZU (SWIRL)

Subject 18: END

► Order Ability Profiles

007

»» "Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.



BATTLE ON

User: Benkei Narukami

Wish: To Be the Strongest

Ability: Destroying the target down to the atomic level

Benkei's ability makes him the strongest physical fighter out there, as his original goal was to serve as a weapon for Hiiragi. The two are close and understand each other well. Although he fought earnestly in Hiroshima (in Volume 2), Rin was a particularly bad matchup for him due to her "Rebirth Fire," which allows her to recover even from complete obliteration. He might have won that fight, but he couldn't actually kill her. A good half of Benkei's power is still sealed away, meaning that his true strength has yet to be seen.

BIG
ORDER

Subject 19

IF SHE DIES NOW.....!

DA (DASH)

KA— .....

...WE'LL HAVE NO WAY LEFT TO CURE SENA...!

KAMIMUSUBI!!!

ZA (STEP)

BARA

BARA

BARA (FWOOM)

OKAY.

TWO DAYS LATER, IN THE SKIES ABOVE IZUMO, ABOARD A HELICOPTER

COLONEL.

WE'RE ALMOST AT THE DES-TINATION!

Subject 19: "Hoshimiya Institute"
Place: Izumo

I SUPPOSE...

...I SHOULD TELL EIJI EVERYTHING SOON.

IZUMO,
AT A LODGING FACILITY

.....I SEE.

WE'LL BE DELIVERING KAMIMUSUBI'S REMAINS TO HER AFFILIATES AT THE SHRINE.

NATURALLY, TOO MUCH TIME HAS PASSED FOR ME TO MAKE HER DEATH INTO A "LIE."

AFTER OUR LITTLE FLYOVER, WE RAN INTO THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S MAIN FORCE AND BEAT THEM BACK.

AS A RESULT, SHIMANE IS NOW UNDER OUR CONTROL.

GOOD WORK, EIJI.

IT WAS ALL POINTLESS IF I STILL CAN'T SAVE SENA.

.....
.....
GOOD WORK, MY ASS.

HIIRAGI JUST KEEPS USING ME TO GET WHAT HE WANTS.

GU (TENSE)

GU...

SO, EIJI...

THE NEXT MATTER...

WE NEED YOU TO WITHDRAW FROM THE DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT ALTOGETHER.

THE OPERATION GOING FORWARD WILL HINGE ON BENKEI AND LAURYN, SO THANKS FOR YOUR HARD WORK UP UNTIL NOW.

ZA (STEP)

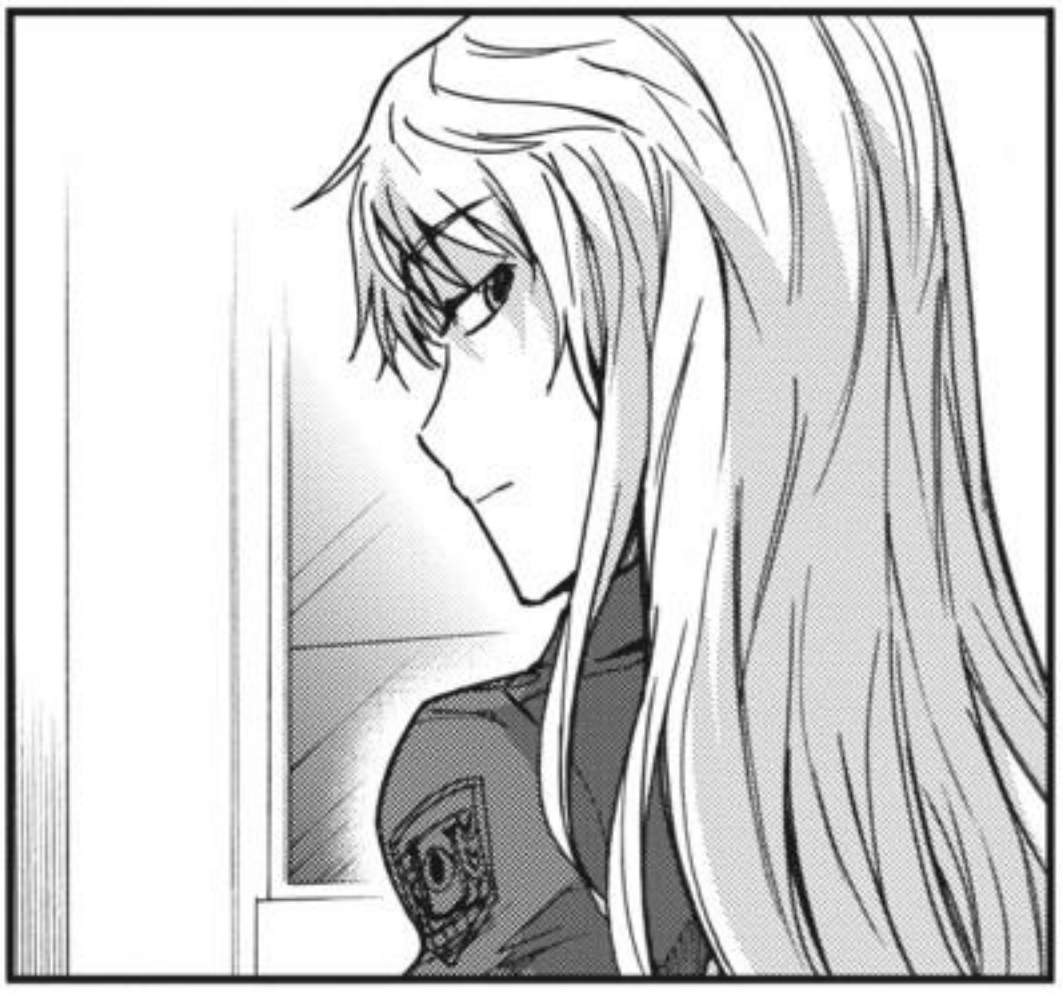
THAT'LL BE ALL.

!?

HEY, HOLD ON.

GATA (STAND)

.....
.....




HEH.
..... OHHH, I GET YOUR GAME!
I'M NOT USEFUL ANYMORE, SO YOU'RE BENCHING ME!?


EIJI, WHAT ARE YOU SAYING !?
HA HA...
GREAT. I'M HAPPY TO OBLIGE, THEN.


WHADDAYA MEAN, "WITHDRAW," HIIRAGI?
DAN (SLAM)
WHAT ABOUT SENA ...!!?

!?

HMPH.

I WOULDN'T DO THAT IF I WERE YOU, EIJI-SAMA.

I'LL HEAD OUT AND FIND A CURE FOR SENA MYSELF!

IF THAT ASSHOLE GENNAI CAUSES ANOTHER GREAT DESTRUCTION ...

...YOU'LL HAVE MORE THAN JUST SENA TO WORRY ABOUT.

HMMM.

ISN'T THIS MEETING BORING YOU TO TEARS TOO?

COME ON, STAND WITH ME, MAN.

!

WATCH IT, AYAHITO..... YOU'VE ALREADY SAID TOO MUCH.

HMPH.

DOSU (FWUMP)

MY DAD WANTS ANOTHER GREAT DESTRUC-TION .....?

WHAT'S THAT ALL ABOUT!?

♪

PATA

PATA (FLAP)

SIT, EIJI.

WE HAVE A GOOD REASON TO REQUEST YOUR WITH-DRAWAL.

THIS STORY BEGINS...

...MORE THAN TEN YEARS AGO—EVEN BEFORE THE GREAT DESTRUCTION.

I WAS A RESEARCHER AT A CERTAIN INSTITUTE...

...ONE LED BY YOUR FATHER, GENNAI.

星宮エネルギー
開発研究所

SIGN: HOSHIMIYA ENERGY DEVELOPMENT RESEARCH LABS

HIIRAGI-KUN!

MOGU (MUNCH) モグ MOGU モグ

ELEVEN YEARS AGO— AT THE HOSHIMIYA ENERGY DEVEL-OPMENT RESEARCH LABS IN TSUKUBA CITY, IBARAKI PREFEC-TURE

AN INSTITUTE ...?

YES.

THE HOSHIMIYA ENERGY DEVELOPMENT RESEARCH LABS, DUBBED THE "HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE" FOR SHORT.

DIRECTOR HOSHIMIYA... HOW CAN I HELP YOU?

I JUST CHECKED MONDAY'S NUMBERS ON THE TRANSFORMATION COIL. THEY SHOWED A MARKED IMPROVEMENT.

THANK YOU, SIR.

.....EATING WHILE YOU WALK?

HMM.

SECTION CHIEF HIIRAGI SURE IS A STRANGE ONE.

DON'T WORRY ABOUT ME. IT'S A TIME-SAVER, REALLY.

LETS ME GET AHEAD ON MY RESEARCH.

...AND YOU SOUGHT TO BETTER YOUR CIR-CUMSTANCES THROUGH EDUCATION?

IMPRES-SIVE.

I UNDERSTAND YOU LOST YOUR PARENTS IN AN ACCIDENT WHEN YOU WERE YOUNG...

YOU GOT BIT BY THE RESEARCH BUG, IN SPITE OF YOUR GOOD LOOKS. ♡

MOGU (MUNCH)

モグ

MOGU

モグ

BUT NOW, YOUR PRIORITIES HAVE SHIFTED, HAVEN'T THEY?

.....

BACK THEN, I THOUGHT, "I'M FINE DOING NOTHING BUT RESEARCH. THERE'S NO NEED FOR A GREATER MEANING TO IT ALL."

IN TRUTH, I DIDN'T CARE EITHER WAY.

...WAS TO TRANSFORM HUMAN WILL ITSELF INTO LIMITLESS ENERGY. A PROJECT THAT HAD THE POTENTIAL TO ELEVATE HUMANITY TO NEW HEIGHTS.

THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE WAS ACTUALLY A SECRET ORGANIZATION AFFILIATED WITH THE JAPANESE GOVERNMENT, AND ITS GOAL...

NOT ESPECIALLY, BUT...

I THOUGHT YOUR SMALL-SCALE COIL MIGHT BE PUT TO AN ALTERNATE USE, SO I WHIPPED UP SOME PROTOTYPES. INTERESTED YET?

I DIDN'T ACTUALLY CARE ABOUT THAT EITHER, THOUGH.

SOMETHING YOU WANT TO SHOW ME, SIR?

KO (STEP)

KO

I INTEGRATED THE TECHNOLOGY INTO THIS PATIENT'S PROSTHETIC LIMBS.

THEY MOVE ACCORDING TO HER THOUGHTS, AND THIS LIGHTWEIGHT VERSION REQUIRES NO ALTERNATE POWER SOURCE. STILL JUST PROTOTYPES, OF COURSE.

IS THAT...?

THANK YOU FOR EVERYTHING,

YUUICHI...

BURU

SHE LOST BOTH ARMS AND THE ABILITY TO SPEAK IN AN ACCIDENT...

...AND I UNDERSTAND THAT TODAY IS HER SON'S BIRTHDAY.

BURU (TREMBLE)

BURU

HIIRAGI.

SO MY RESEARCH IS...

THIS IS WHAT LIES AT THE END OF OUR DAYS OF TOIL.

IT'S WHAT EVERY RESEARCHER DREAMS OF, IS IT NOT?

"LIFE IS ALL THE MORE WORTH LIVING WHEN ONE HAS ANOTHER TO LOOK UP TO."

THE DIRECTOR ONCE TOLD ME THAT.

...THE SORT OF MAN I WANTED TO BE.

AND TO ME, HE WAS THAT PERSON...

HE TAUGHT ME HOW LIFE COULD HAVE MEANING.

WELL...

...THAT'S WHEN THE PROBLEMS STARTED, EIJI.

MY DAD DID ALL THAT...?

SO WHAT HAPPENED AFTER THAT!?

POFU (FWUMP)

IT WAS A SUDDEN CHANGE.

I DIDN'T UNDER-STAND IT.

IT WAS LIKE THE DIRECTOR BECAME A DIFFERENT PERSON ENTIRELY.

THE DIRECTOR TOOK ALL THE FRUITS OF OUR LABOR— EVERY-THING HIS EMPLOYEES WORKED THEMSELVES TO THE BONE TO PRODUCE...

...AND TOSSED IT ASIDE.

WHAT HE WAS LEFT WITH WAS SOMETHING NONE OF US HAD SEEN...

...AN UN-KNOWN TECH-NOLOGY.

HIS RESEARCH TOOK A DRASTIC TURN FOR THE ECCENTRIC.

THESE NUMBERS AREN'T RIGHT... HE'S PRODUCING ENERGY DIRECTLY, WITHOUT A TRANSFORMATION COIL!?

OOOOOOO (WHOOSH)

WHAT'S GOING ON HERE!?

.....
WHAT IS ALL THIS!?

PISHI (SNAP)

... HIIRAGI-KUN?

PERFECT TIMING.

BEHOLD— THE CUL-MINATION OF ALL OUR LONG-STANDING DESIRES!

OOOOOO

DIRECTOR! WHAT HAVE YOU DONE!?

A MANAGEMENT SYSTEM THAT MAKES WISHES INTO REALITY...

...THE "DESIRE ACCESSIBLE INFORMATION SYSTEM"—

"D.A.I.S.Y."

YOU KNOW WHAT HAPPENED AFTER THAT.

DAISY UNLOCKED YOUR ABILITY, WHICH RAN RAMPANT AND NEARLY DESTROYED THE WORLD.

TO PUT IT ONE WAY, GENNAI PULLED THE TRIGGER FOR THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION.

YOU WERE JUST THE BULLET.

GO (RUMBLE)

GO

GO

GO

GO

SO MY DAD REALLY CREATED DAISY ...!?

THE GATE IS CLOSING.

ゴゴゴ

GO GO GO

IT ALL STARTS NOW, THOUGH.

FAILURE AND DILIGENCE ARE ALL PART OF THE JOURNEY TO SUCCESS.

GO GO GO GO

UGH...

EIJI... DID YOU FAIL?

I WILL SUCCEED NEXT TIME!

SO MY DAD.....

.....

.....!

GENNAI...

...BE-TRAYED ME.

MY DAD DIED.....!!

MY DAD ....!..

THIS IS WRONG ..!!

WH— .....

WHAT'RE YOU SAYING, HIIRAGI?

...BUT GENNAI HOSHIMIYA IS VERY MUCH ALIVE.

WE WILL ADDRESS THAT MATTER LATER...

THAT'S WHY YOU NEED TO WITHDRAW!

ABOVE ALL ELSE, WE NEED TO KEEP YOU FROM FALLING INTO HIS HANDS.

AND HE'S ATTEMPTING TO BRING ABOUT ANOTHER GREAT DE-STRUCTION.

EIJI, OUR DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT IS AN ORGANIZATION CREATED TO COMBAT GENNAI.

WE NEED TO SEIZE CONTROL OF THE WORLD BEFORE HE USES HIS OWN ABILITY TO BUILD UP HIS FORCES!

SU (SIGH)

ACCORDING TO IYO'S CLAIRVOYANCE, GENNAI IS IN THE PROCESS OF INFILTRATING THE U.N. HEADQUARTERS IN TOKYO...

HE'S BUILDING HIS RANKS FROM WITHIN THE U.N., MUCH TO OUR DISMAY.

NO....

DON'T TELL ME YOU ALL REALLY BELIEVE THIS CRAP!!?

DON (BAM)

NO !!!

THIS IS ALL RIDIC-ULOUS !!!

NEHARA ...?

BENKEI?

IYO...?

AYAHITO?

EIJI.

I...

YOU HAD BETTER NOT BETRAY ME NOW.

WATA (FIDGET)

わた

わた WATA

WE CAN'T REVEAL THAT WE'RE WITH THE SECURITY COUNCIL, SO I'LL NEED YOU TO CHANGE CLOTHES.

YES, WE'RE IN THE PROCESS, BUT THERE ARE PLENTY OF OTHER OPER-ATIONS GOING ON TOO...

SO, NEXT UP IS HYOGO PREFEC-TURE?

...LEMME JUST SAY, MY ONLY REAL GOAL IS TO KILL EIJI.

I KNOW THAT, SECOND LIEU-TENANT.

.....OH YEAH? IF YOU SAY SO, I GUESS.

...SO WE'RE SURE TO BUMP INTO HIM SOONER OR LATER.

THERE ARE GRAND PLANS IN THE WORKS FOR THE SECURITY COUNCIL...

!? WHAT'S THAT?

YOU'RE SURE TO GET BORED ON THE ROAD, SO I'M LETTING YOU BORROW IT.

It's mine, actually.

ANYHOW, YOUR REGENERA-TIVE ABILITY IS A BIG ASSET TO US.

JII (ZIP)

THE SECURITY COUNCIL WELCOMES YOU WITH OPEN ARMS.

SU (FWIP)

?

FEEL FREE TO PLAY *SHIREN THE WANDERER.*

PIKOOON (TA-DAAA)

ピコーン

KACHI (CLICK)

カチ

KACHI

カチ

AS IF! I'M NOT PLAYING ANYTHING!

A PS VINA...!?

WHY!?

IT'S BEEN MODIFIED WITH WIRELESS COMMUNI-CATION CAPABIL-ITIES.

I'M JOKING, OF COURSE.

HA-HA.

HA-HA...

I SERI-OUSLY DON'T GET THIS GUY...

THEN HOW AM I SUPPOSED TO SHOOT ARROWS !?

HOLD ON.

THE "L" BUTTON WILL TRIGGER AN ALARM, SO PRESS IT IF YOU'RE IN TROUBLE.



KURU (TURN)
.....IS WHAT I SHOULD SAY, BUT I'LL MAKE AN EXCEPTION THIS TIME.


SO WHAT'S THE OPERA-TION?
KA (STEP)
KA
I CAN'T TELL YOU. IT'S TOP SECRET.


WE'RE BRINGING THE PARTY TO DAZAIFU.
HEH-HEH.
I'M SURE EIJI-KUN WILL BE THRILLED!

MY DAD IS STILL ALIVE.....!? THEY'VE GOTTA BE WRONG.

THAT THING SURE DIDN'T SEEM LIKE HIM.

I DON'T GET IT...

ARE THEY SAYING I'M REMEMBERING IT WRONG?

AND IF HE'S ALIVE, THEN HOW DID I WATCH HIM DIE...!?

THERE'S SOME-ONE WHO SHOULD BE ABLE TO EXPLAIN EVERY-THING.

RIGHT ...

"ガ"
"イ"
"ン"

GABA (RISE)

DAISY!

Y-YOU ...!!?

HOLD ON. I'VE GOT A GOOD IDEA OF WHAT YOU WANNA ASK, BUT I'M HERE FOR A DIFFERENT REASON.

FU (FLOAT)

YOU RANG, EIJI?

!?

... HUH?

A DIF-FERENT REASON ?

SCREEN: CONNECTION REQUEST / RIN KURENAI -> EIJI HOSHIMIYA

WELL, SHOULD I CONNECT YOU TWO OR NOT?

PI (BEEP)

YOU'VE GOT AN EMERGENCY CALL FROM RIN, EIJI.

接続要求

紅鈴→星宮エイジ

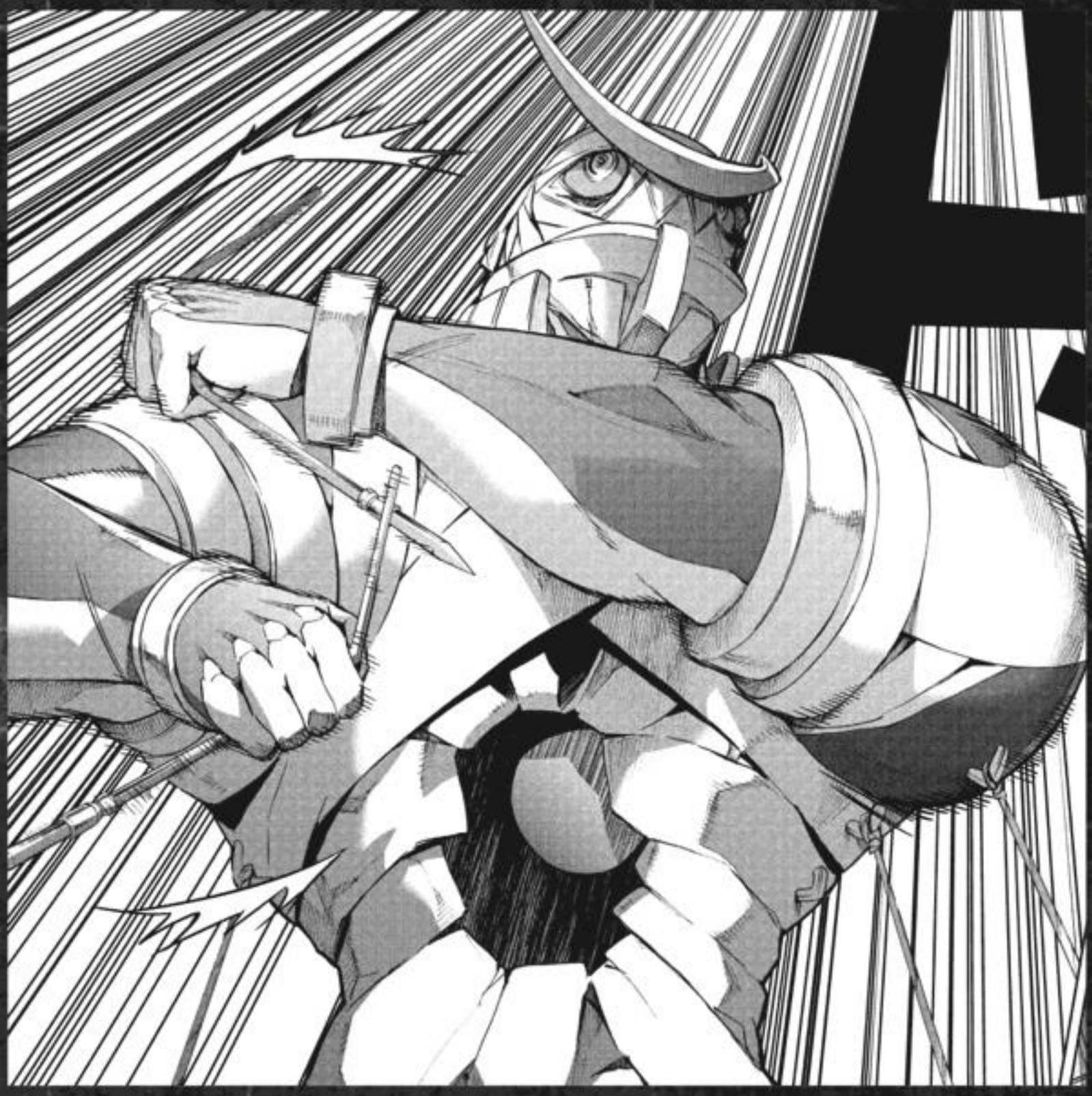
Subject 19:END

► Order Ability Profiles

008

»»»"Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.



Fusion Order #1: DOMINATOR ADD-ON: CLAIRVOYANCE ENGINE





User: **Eiji Hoshimiya + Iyo**

Ability: **Attacks, plus specialized predictions**

Some wishes aren't limited to an individual but can be shared between multiple people. Fusion Orders are the manifestation of such wishes, and "Dominator Add-On: Clairvoyance Engine" gives Eiji the ability to read attacks one step ahead. The fusion Order's main weakness is that the effect will be interrupted once the two users are no longer emotionally in sync. Naturally, Eiji can also fuse with other ability users, but their wishes still need to align first.

BIG
ORDER

WHAT DO YOU SAY, EIJI? RIN'S CALLING.

SHOULD I CONNECT YOU TWO OR NOT?

SCREEN: CONNECTION REQUEST

H-HOLD ON. MY HEAD'S STILL KINDA SPINNING FROM ALL THIS CRAP ABOUT MY DAD.

HUH?

NO..... NO, NO, NO.

WHAT AM I SAYING?

THIS IS MY CHANCE TO TALK TO RIN. CONNECT US, DAISY.

ZA (SCOOT)

ZA

ZA

YOU PICKED ONE HELL OF A TIME TO SHOW UP...

KUWA (ROAR)

WAY TO TAKE YOUR SWEET TIME, EIJI!

NICE OF YOU TO FINALLY ANSWER MY CALL!

RIN!

Subject 20: "The Light vs. the Ogre"
Place: Izumo and Dazaifu

DOKA (STOMP)

DOKA

DOKA

HATORI TOLD ME HIMSELF, SO I KNOW THE INTEL'S GOOD.

THE DAZAIFU OFFICES ARE PROBABLY UNDER ATTACK AS WE SPEAK.

IN THE MIDDLE OF THE NIGHT...!

A PLAN TO KIDNAP SENA .....!?

YEP.

DOKA

DOKA

RIN!

WHAT!?

U-FU-FU-FU.

FU-FU. I KNEW THIS WOULD GET YOU WORRIED, EIJI.

THAT'S THE FACE I WAS HOPING TO SEE~ NOW I'M SATISFIED! ♪

I MEAN, YOU WENT OUT OF YOUR WAY TO TELL ME THIS, DIDN'T YOU?

THANKS.

I WAS JUST TESTING THIS CONNEC-TION TO SEE IF IT REALLY WORKED ...

Y-YOU'VE GOT IT ALL WRONG. DON'T MAKE IT SOUND LIKE A GOOD THING!

I'D NEVER HELP YOU ON PURPOSE.

...HUH?

!?

ARE YOU EVEN LISTENING TO ME!?

EVEN IF IT MEANS GETTING HIIRAGI OUT OF BED, I'VE GOTTA PROTECT SENA!

!

BASH!

HEY!

LISTEN WHEN I'M TALKING!

BASH! (WHAP)

BAN (SLAM)

HIIRAGI!

GOOOOOO (FOOM)

ゴオオオオオ

THEY'RE ALREADY PREPARED FOR BATTLE!!?

SEE? IT'S BEGUN.

EIJI...

... AND RIN?

!

WE NEED TO REPEL THE INTRUDER!

Colonel! We're investigating the source of the blast. It could be an enemy incursion.

ZAWA (CHATTER)

GOOD. I'LL BE TAKING COMMAND OF DAZAIFU FROM MY CURRENT POSITION!

DAISY!

DOYO (MURMUR)

どよっ..

YOU...

NO.

...HMPH. LOTS OF FAMILIAR FACES.

MAKES SENSE. PLENTY OF FORMER HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE EMPLOYEES.

YOU'LL BE DEALT WITH LATER.

RIN!

KACHI (CLICK)

KACHI

WHAT?

WHY'S SHE PLAYING A GAME?

IF YOU'RE SUPPOSED TO BE SPYING, THIS IS A LITTLE CONSPICUOUS. WE'LL HAVE TO CUT THE CONNECTION..... BUT FIRST, I NEED TO ASK YOU SOMETHING.

IS THE ENEMY SOME-WHERE IN THE *UNDERGROUND* AREA?

GOHO (COUGH)

HUH!? WAIT A SEC-OND!

I GUESS SHE'S A DOUBLE AGENT NOW...

KACHI

KACHI

HUH? HOW WOULD I KNOW? I MEAN, HOW ELSE WOULD THEY GET IN...?

GREAT. IT'S DEFINITELY UNDERGROUND. SEND OUR TROOPS DOWN!

OOOOOO (WHOOSH)

OOOO (WHOOSH)

GRR.

JUST GOTTA ABDUCT SENA HOSHIMIYA IN THE MEANTIME.

ZA (STEP)

UNDER THE DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT OFFICES, 2F BLOCK

GOOOOU (FOOM)

LET'S SEE...

SECURITY COUNCIL'S DIVISION 6: MOMOTARO HYAKKI

WITH THIS WARP-GATE, COURTESY OF JUUBEE'S DIMENSIONAL TEAR, I'VE GOT A GOOD FIFTEEN MINUTES.

Can you hear me, Momotaro-kun? ♪

UNDER-STOOD, HATORI-CHI.

GRR.

Your exact orders will be coming from me now, so don't miss a word. ♪

MEKI (BULGE)

OGRE DRIVE!!!

LET'S GET THIS OGRE WITH!

DON (ZOOM)

MEKI

"OGREDRIVE"
HE POSSESSES ONE HUNDRED OGRES WITHIN HIS BODY, GRANTING HIM THEIR STRENGTH AND SPIRITS. HIS WISH WAS "TO DEFEAT EVIL."

FRAN...?

THAT GUY ...

FIRST LIEUTENANT FRAN HEADED DOWN ON HIS OWN, BUT THERE'S TOO MUCH INTERFERENCE TO REACH HIM.

LIEUTENANT COLONEL KUNOU IS MAKING HER WAY DOWN, BUT WHO KNOWS IF SHE'LL MAKE IT IN TIME...

THE PROBLEM IS THAT WE DON'T KNOW WHY GENNAI WOULD WANT TO ABDUCT SENA IN THE FIRST PLACE.

CALM DOWN, EIJI. PANICKING WON'T DO YOU ANY GOOD— THERE'S NOTHING MORE WE CAN DO.

AND AYAHITO'S WARPING ABILITY IS CURRENTLY ON COOLDOWN.

IT'S NOT JUST MY DAD THAT'S GOT ME WORRIED...

...TO ME, DAD WAS JUST A GUY WHO LIKED TO FIDDLE WITH BONSAI TREES.

SO EITHER I HAD HIM PEGGED ALL WRONG, OR SOMETHING WEIRD IS GOING ON, RIGHT...?

I KNOW A LOT OF STUFF WENT DOWN BETWEEN YOU AND HIM...

...
BUT...

THESE PAST TEN YEARS, I WAS SO SURE THAT I KILLED MY OWN FATHER...!

THAT IT WAS ALL BECAUSE OF ME AND MY STUPID DESTRUCTION ...!

ALL I WANNA DO NOW IS SAVE MY SISTER!

EIJI'S FATHER ...?

.....
.....

THIS'LL BE OGRE IN NO TIME!

TAN (TMP)

I DON'T GIVE A DAMN ABOUT THE GREAT DESTRUCTION ANYMORE!

SENA'S IN REAL TROUBLE, AND THERE'S NOTHING I CAN DO ABOUT IT!

SHIT.

JUO (PEW)

HMM?

!!?

DON (VOOM)

A L-LASER BEAM!?

TA (TMP)

CLOSE ONE!

HYUN (FWOOSH)

I'LL HAVE TO BRING YOU DOWN MYSELF!

DORO (MELT)

DORO

DORO

IF OUR OPPONENT'S ONLY HERE TO KIDNAP, NOT FIGHT, THEN RAIDOU'S "SLEEPING SHEEP" WON'T BE OF ANY USE.

COLONEL, WE'VE GOT A VISUAL ON THE UNDERGROUND MONITORING FACILITY!

WHAT A NUISANCE.

DORO

DORO

DORO

MARI...!

PA (FLASH) PA

!

CURVE RAY!!!

"CURVE RAY"
MARI'S LIGHT-MANIPULATING ABILITY. SHE CAN FIRE LASER BEAMS, USE CAMOUFLAGE, SEE FARAWAY THINGS, AND PERFORM OTHER LIGHT-BASED ACTIONS. HER WISH, OWING TO HER POOR VISION, WAS "TO SEE THE LIGHT."

HIIRAGI!

NOT A PROBLEM. THERE ARE PLENTY OF OTHER CAMERAS DOWN THERE.

SHU (FWIP)

I've lost sight of the enemy!

WE'LL SPOT HIM AGAIN SOON, AND HE CAN'T RUN FROM MARI'S LASERS FOREVER!

DON (VOOM)

Lieutenant Colonel Kunou! He's at 2 o'clock, 45 degrees above you!

GOT IT!

DA (TMP)

DA

HE'S GONE ...?

DORO (MELT)

DORO

DORO

F" F" F" F"

!

NO, SHE CAN'T.

SHE CAN'T HIT HIM AT ALL!

DO

6 o'clock, ma'am...

Wait, below you, 2 o'clock!

DON

OO (WHOOSH)

DODGING HER LIGHT-BASED ATTACKS... EVEN FROM HIS BLIND SPOTS?

HOW IS HE DOING IT!?

HOW ODD ..... !

AN ABILITY?

NO...

HIIRAGI!!!

HE'S ALMOST THERE!!!

COLONEL!!!

THE ENEMY'S ABOUT TO REACH SENA'S CHAMBER. ONLY TWENTY METERS TO GO!

(WHOOSH)

YOUR CONFUSION IS UNDER-STANDABLE.

WE USED YOU AND GOT YOU CAUGHT UP IN THIS MESS, IT'S TRUE.

BUT WHEN IT COMES TO PROTECTING SENA, WE ARE NOT YOUR ENEMY!

!

MMGH...

THERE'S JUST NO RELYING ON THESE PEOPLE ...

MAYBE I COULD TRY CONTROLLING MARI DIRECTLY WITH MY VOICE? MAYBE IT'S NOT TOO LATE—

BA (CLAMP)

WAIT, EIJI.

CALM DOWN, EIJI.
ALL OF OUR INTEL IS BEING LEAKED TO THE ENEMY.
THAT'S HOW HE KEEPS EVADING OUR ATTACKS.

!?
WHAT'RE YOU...?
(SLI)
(FWIP)

!?

I'M SURE THEY'RE DOING IT VIA RIN'S MONITOR.
THERE MUST BE A RECORDING DEVICE IN HER ROOM.

IT'S RIN ...!?

.....

IT WOULD BE EASY TO CUT THE CONNECTION NOW, BUT THAT'S NOT WHAT WE SHOULD DO AT THE MOMENT.

...UNDER-STAND?

Work with me, Eiji!

BAN (SLAM)

!

WE'RE UNDER ATTACK! HURRY UP AND...

DON (BANG) DON DON

HEY, IYO!

I'M COMING IN!

IT'S NO GOOD, EIJI-SAMA...

...COLONEL...!

HAA.

HAA.

THIS OPERATION .....IS DOOMED TO FAIL.

HIIRAGI'S SUSPICION WAS CORRECT.

HATORI! I'M AT THE GATE. WHAT'S YOUR NEXT ORDER?

No, just hold on. The enemy's on the move.

TA (TMP)

HE WAS JUST WAITING FOR RIN TO MAKE CONTACT WITH EIJI.

HATORI HAD MULTIPLE CAMERAS INSTALLED IN RIN'S ROOM.

THE PS VINA HE GAVE HER WAS SERVING AS A WIRETAP ALL ALONG.

AND HE KNEW EXACTLY WHAT EIJI'S NEXT MOVE WOULD BE!

THEY SPOTTED YOU AGAIN. BETTER DODGE.

BASED ON HIIRAGI'S REACTIONS IN THE CONTROL ROOM...

...HE KNEW EVERY TIME MOMOTARO'S POSITION WAS COMPROMISED.

YOU'RE IN TROUBLE.

"MARI, TURN TO THE RIGHT AND FIRE YOUR LASER" !!!

BAN (BAM)

ORDER!

THE RIGHT? GOT IT, HATORI-CHI!

Momotaro-kun, the laser will come from below and to the right. ♪

BUT, IT'S ALL FOR NAUGHT WITH OUR LITTLE WIRE-TAP.

SO VERY LOUD AND CLEAR... HOPING TO CATCH US OFF GUARD BY CONTROLLING LIEUTENANT COLONEL KUNOU DIRECTLY ...!?

TOO EASY.....

SU (FWIP)

……!!?

GATA (STAND)

DON (BOOM)

…ROCKET LAUNCHERS!!?

RO…

OO (WHOOSH)

WAS EIJI-KUN'S COMMAND JUST A DIVERSION .....!?

BUT HOW...!? WHEN DID THEY ORDER THOSE SOLDIERS TO GET INTO POSITION !?!?

SPECIF-ICALLY TO DROWN OUT HIIRA-GI'S VOICE ...!

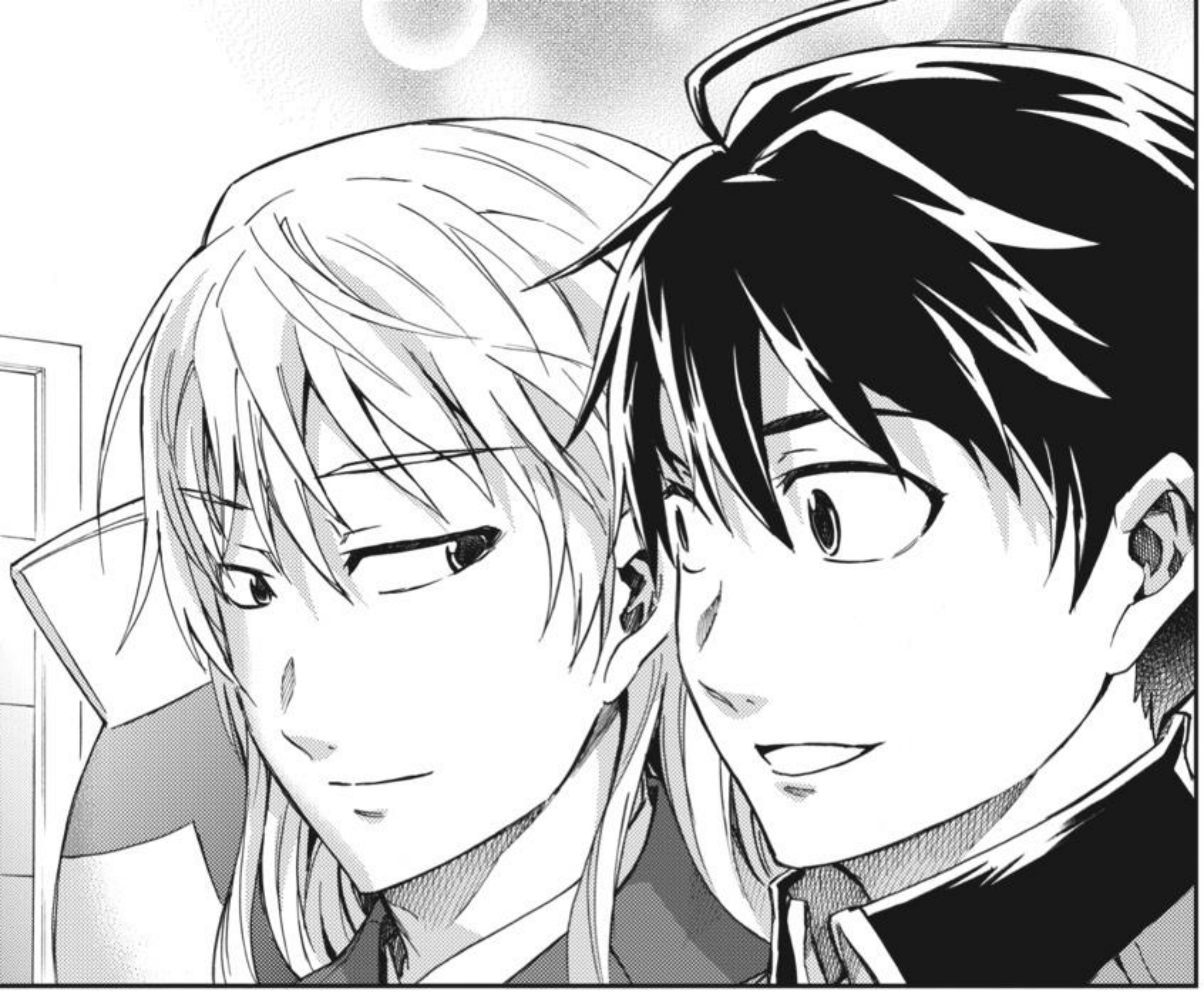
SHOUT-ING LIKE THAT...

GU (TENSE)

GU

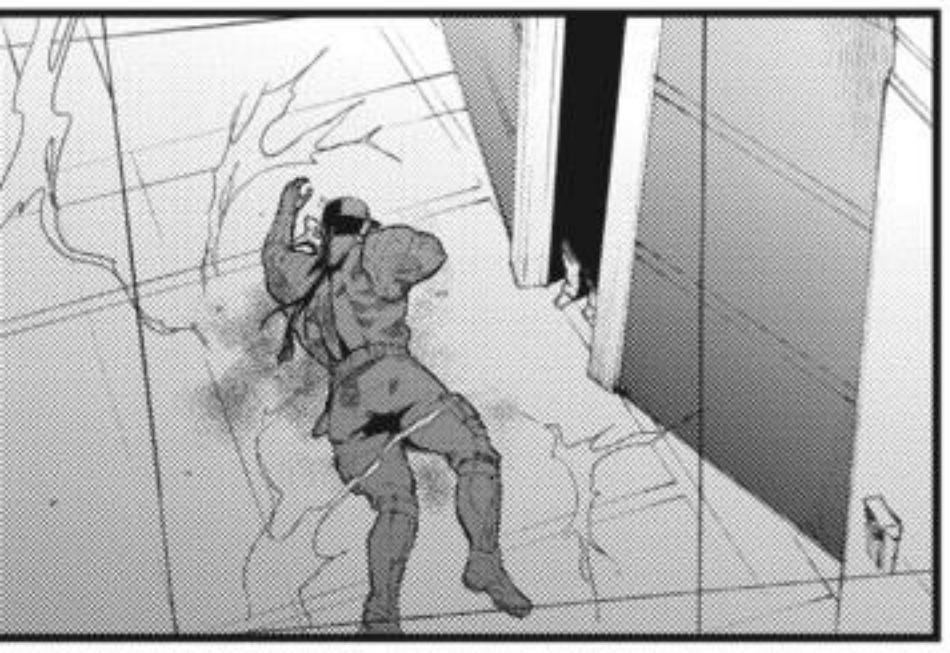
GU...

THEY'RE ON TO OUR WIRETAP ...!










WHEW.
WE DID IT...
NOW SENA IS SAFE, AND...

SU
(STEP)

OW...

MUKURI (DAZED)

UGU

ZA (STEP)

SORRY ABOUT THIS, EIJI.

BU (BZZT)

The plan is moving ahead smoothly ...That's all.

ZA (KZZT)

ZA

ZA

GATA (STAND)

.....!?

FRAN ...!!?

THE CONNEC-TION'S BEEN SEVERED! WE'VE LOST OUR EYES DOWN THERE!

FRAN...? NO.

ZA

ZA

GIVE HER BACK? WHAT A STRANGE THING TO SAY.

WHO THE HELL ARE YOU?

GIVE US BACK SENA!

ZA

HMPH.

!!?

GENNAI...!

Next Stop: Hyogo

Subject 20:END

ZA

ZA

ZA

YOU AND SENA HAVE ALWAYS BEEN MY TOOLS— TOOLS NECESSARY FOR THE GREAT DESTRUCTION.

ZA (KZZT)

ZA

TRANSLATION NOTES

Page 59: Eiji's undercover code name during this mission is a reference to Akira Kurosawa's classic film *Yojimbo*, in which the titular bodyguard played by Toshiro Mifune adopts the alias "Sanjuro Kuwabatake."

Page 186: The name of Hiiragi's spirit bird—Uso—is a homonym in Japanese that can mean either "lie" (referencing his ability) or the common Eurasian bullfinch—a type of bird.

Page 245: Kemari is an ancient Japanese ball game developed in the 7th century A.D. Players work together (cooperatively, not competitively), using any body part besides the hands and arms to keep the ball in the air.

Page 251: Daikokuten is known as the Japanese god of wealth, so it's no surprise that he presides over the betting pool during Eiji's challenge.

Page 252: Another god in the Japanese Shinto pantheon, Benzaiten, is the goddess of water, time, words, music, knowledge, and all else that "flows." Bishamonten, or sometimes just Bishamon, is the god of warriors.

Page 308: The Yagyu Shinkage sword style is a historical one created by Nobutsuna Kamiizumi in the 16th century. The founder was constantly exploring the potential of swordsmanship in order to help it adapt to changing times and technology.

Page 361: One of the most famous Japanese folktales stars Momotaro, the "peach boy," who goes on a journey with three animal companions in order to defeat the ogres (or "oni") at their stronghold. The Momotaro in this series, however, seems to have befriended the ogres.

BIG
ORDER

Catch it all in the Awaji Arc, coming in Volume 3!!

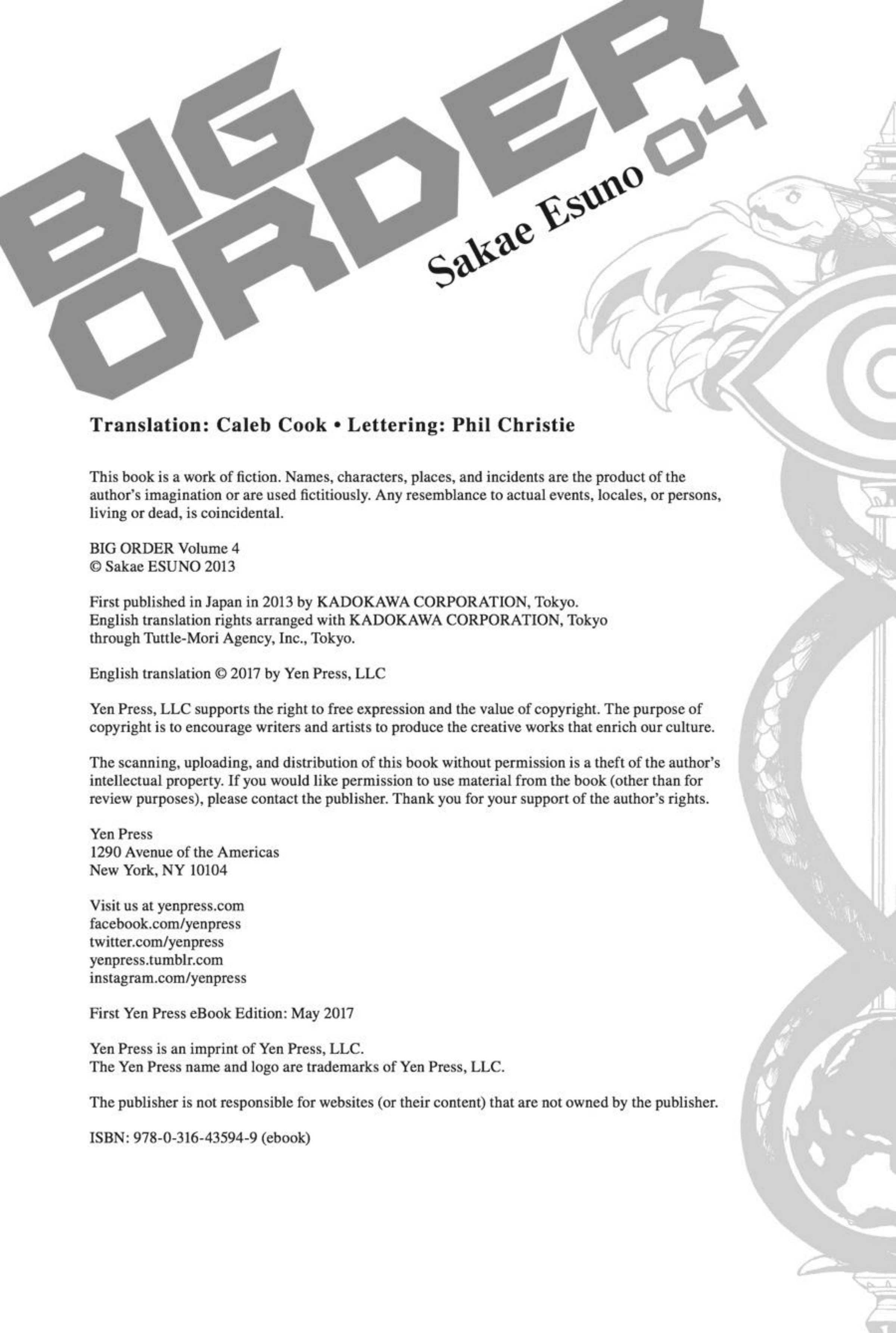


"The Strongest Joker"

Sena awakens!!!

Sena is captured, and Eiji grieves. But the story takes an unexpected turn thanks to his omniscient sister...!!

Then there are Kamimusubi's contemporaries—the other five shrine maidens who dot the land. What is it they protect? Meanwhile, Hatori's scheming brings Eiji face-to-face with unbeatable ability users!!



Translation: Caleb Cook • Lettering: Phil Christie

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, or persons, living or dead, is coincidental.

BIG ORDER Volume 4
© Sakae ESUNO 2013

First published in Japan in 2013 by KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged with KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo
through Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., Tokyo.

English translation © 2017 by Yen Press, LLC

Yen Press, LLC supports the right to free expression and the value of copyright. The purpose of copyright is to encourage writers and artists to produce the creative works that enrich our culture.

The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book without permission is a theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like permission to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), please contact the publisher. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Yen Press
1290 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10104

Visit us at yenpress.com
facebook.com/yenpress
twitter.com/yenpress
yenpress.tumblr.com
instagram.com/yenpress

First Yen Press eBook Edition: May 2017

Yen Press is an imprint of Yen Press, LLC.
The Yen Press name and logo are trademarks of Yen Press, LLC.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

ISBN: 978-0-316-43594-9 (ebook)

Sakae Esuno

05

BLEACH

PARENTAL ADVISORY
WARNING
EXPLICIT CONTENT

ZAZA (KZZT)

THIS IS REALLY GENNAI ...!?

WH—

NO...MY DAD IS NOTHING LIKE THIS GUY... HE'S AN IMPOSTOR!

HMPH.

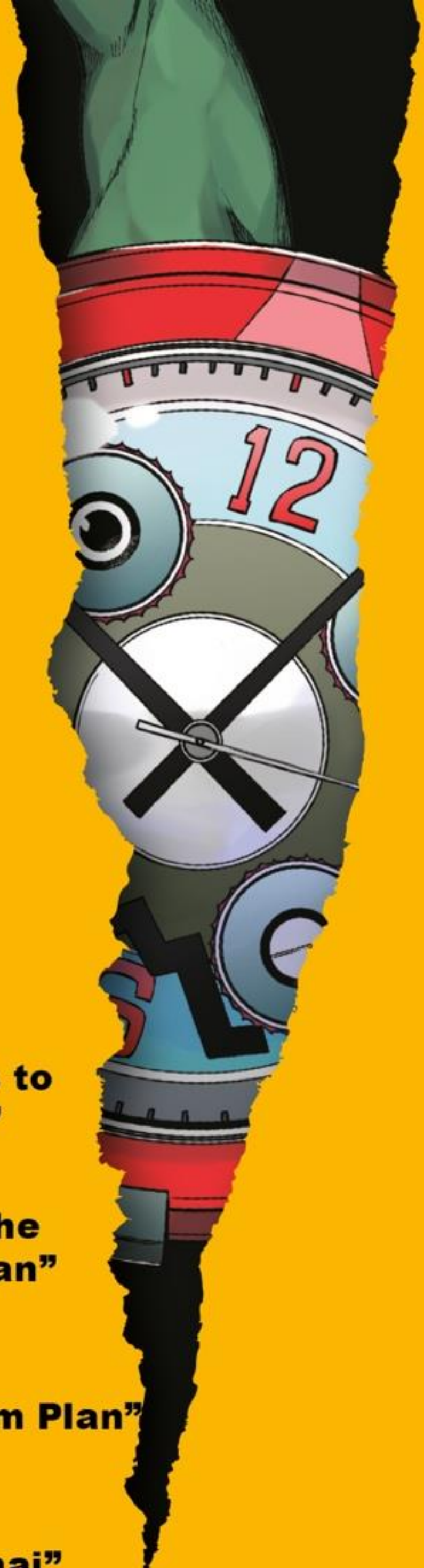
WHO THE HELL ARE YOU!?

Subject 21: “The Victor”
Place: At Sea

BIG ORDER

05

Sakae Esuno



BIG ORDER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

001 **Subject 21: “The Victor”**
Place: At Sea

043 **Subject 22: “What It Takes to Be a Bastard”**
Place: Hyogo and Awaji Island

061 **Subject 23: “Inception of the Pentagram Plan”**
Place: Awaji Island

099 **Subject 24: “The Pentagram Plan”**
Place: Osaka

121 **Subject 25: “Sena vs. Gennai”**
Place: Osaka

157 **Subject 26: “Don’t Give Up!”**
Place: Osaka

YOU AND SENA HAVE ALWAYS BEEN MY TOOLS—

TOOLS NECESSARY FOR THE GREAT DESTRUCTION.

Characters & Story

This story begins when the world was destroyed.

The world was brought to the verge of ruin when young Eiji Hoshimiya's wish was somehow granted. Ten years later, Eiji—now in high school—is attacked by an assassin named Rin Kurenai who knows about his past, and their battle reawakens his power. In the aftermath, he and his sister, Sena, are captured and brought to the Dazaifu Government Offices. The Ten Hands who rule over Dazaifu use Sena as leverage to force Eiji into becoming the king of Kyushu and declaring war on the world. Despite being Dazaifu's puppet, Eiji risks it all to save his sister before her illness claims her life. But everything changes when Hiiragi stuns Eiji by declaring that Eiji's father, Gennai—a man presumed dead—is seeking to cause another Great Destruction...Not long after, he learns that the Security Council is plotting to kidnap Sena. Later, Momotaro attacks Dazaifu, but Eiji and Hiiragi manage to fend him off with some quick cooperation. At that moment, however, Fran betrays Dazaifu and captures Sena, delivering her right to Gennai.....!



Rin Kurenai (Second Lieutenant):
Lost both parents in the Great Destruction caused by Eiji ten years ago and has been plotting to kill him ever since. She's really cute but also a bit dumb.



Rebirth Fire:
Rin's ability. She's essentially immortal thanks to her strong regenerative properties. She can also restore objects and other people to an undamaged state.

Gennai Hoshimiya:
A mysterious man. Supposedly Daisy's creator and Eiji's father...?

Hanzo Hatori:
A member of the United Nations Provisional Government Security Council and one of Gennai's cunning underlings.

Momotaro Hyakki:
A member of the Security Council's Division 6. His ability grants him one hundred ogres that live within his body.

Ten Hands of Dazaifu:
The top brass at the Dazaifu Government Offices, which served as the seat of power for Kyushu's Provisional Government. Each is a powerful ability user in his or her own right.



First Hand

Raidou Fuwa
(Lieutenant Colonel)



Third Hand

Yoshitsune Hiiragi (Colonel):
As Colonel, he's the highest ranking member of the Ten Hands. Shrewd and competent.



Fifth Hand

Taikei Nehara
(Lieutenant Commander)



Ninth Hand

Mari Kunou (Lieutenant Colonel):
A tactician who works directly under Hiiragi. She has a way with words and a strong personality.



Seventh Hand

Kokudo Soumoku
(Captain)



Eighth Hand

Nene Minamoto
(Lieutenant Commander)



Second Hand

Benkei Narukami
(Lieutenant Colonel):
Has the ability to destroy anything down to the atomic level. Good-natured.



Tenth Hand

Ayahito Sundan
(Lieutenant Commander)



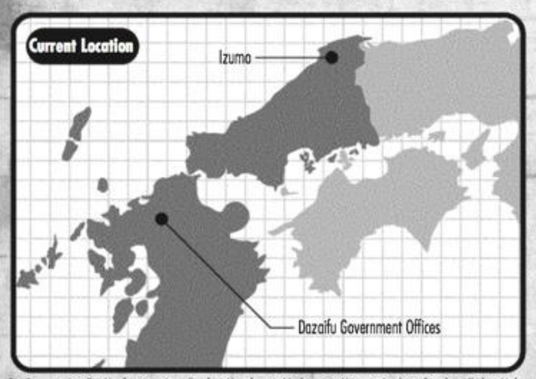
Sixth Hand

Lauryn Wright (Captain):
Has the ability to fly. He tends to pepper his speech with English words.



Fourth Hand

Iyo (First Lieutenant):
Has the ability to make 100% accurate predictions. She's particularly fond of Eiji.



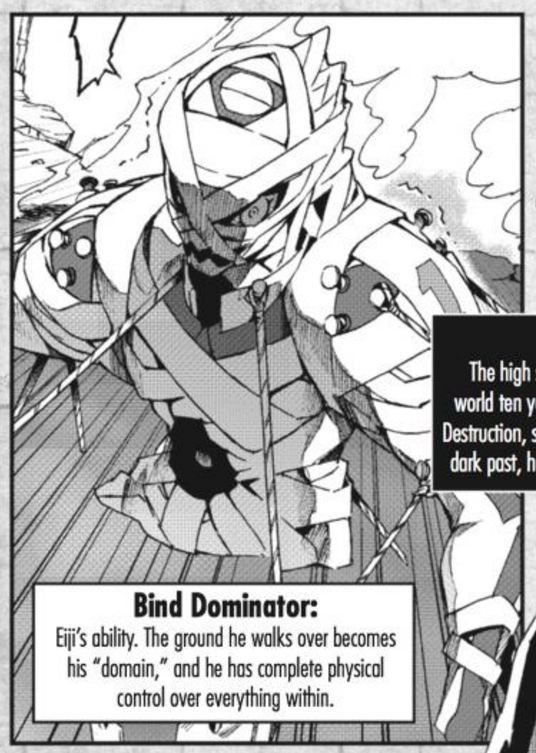
At Izumo ► Eiji Hoshimiya, Iyo, Benkei Narukami, Yoshitsune Hiiragi, Ayahito Sundan, Taikei Nehara
At Dazaifu Government Offices ► Sena Hoshimiya, Raidou Fuwa, Kokudo Soumoku, Nene Minamoto, Mari Kunou



Sena Hoshimiya:
Eiji's stepsister. She doesn't have long to live, and she's just been kidnapped by the Security Council.



Daisy:
A mysterious being who turns people's wishes into abilities.



Bind Dominator:
Eiji's ability. The ground he walks over becomes his "domain," and he has complete physical control over everything within.



Eiji Hoshimiya:
The high school student who nearly destroyed the world ten years ago. He lost both parents in the Great Destruction, so his only living relative is Sena. Despite his dark past, he's got a rather straightforward personality.

BIG
ORDER

THE WAY THEY DID TEN YEARS AGO...?

OUR SIGNAL'S BEEN HIJACKED...! RECOVERING NOW!

ZA

W-WAIT!

EIJI... I'LL BE TAKING SENA BACK NOW.

ZAZA (KZZT)

ZA

THINGS WON'T GO THE WAY THEY DID TEN YEARS AGO.

MARI.

WHAT OF SENA HOSHI-MIYA?

PA (BAM)

!

I'm so sorry, Colo-nel.

We've lost Sena-sama and the intruder, First Lieutenant Fran.

I was in pursuit, but they managed to get away...

A DIMEN-SIONAL CUT.....

RIGHT FROM UNDER MY NOSE...

GRR .....

I COULDN'T PROTECT HER.....

SENA...!

GU (CLENCH)

DAAAAAMMIT!!!

GUU (ROAR)

ZA (SLOSH)

ZAN

C-23

ZA (SLOSH) ZAAA AAA...

のそ
NOSO
(SHIFT)

HUH
...?

.....

KAPA
(LIFT)

HOT
SOUP...

...IT'S
GOTTA BE
FROM BIG
BROTHER.

WHERE
AM I...?

DID
I GET
MOVED
AGAIN?

FIRST, THEY
MOVED ME
FROM UNCLE
HOSHI-
MIYA'S
HOSPITAL
TO A PLACE
WITH EVEN
MORE
DOCTORS...

STILL, I HAD A PRETTY GOOD IDEA ABOUT HOW SICK I REALLY WAS.

YUMMY ...

BIG BROTHER'S ALWAYS LOOKING OUT FOR ME...

SENA, YOU SHOULDN'T WORRY. I'LL FIGURE SOMETHING OUT!

ZU (SLIP)...

...I'LL BE HAPPY AS LONG AS BIG BROTHER'S BY MY SIDE.

EVEN IF I'VE ONLY GOT A LITTLE TIME LEFT...

AH...

KACHI
カチ
KACHI (TICK)
カチッ
!?
PITA (FREEZE)
AH.
!
THE PLATE... IT.....
HOW ODD.

KACHI (TICK)

カチ

C-23

KACHI

カチ

ORDINARY PEOPLE SHOULDN'T BE ABLE TO PERCEIVE AVATARS...

YOU CAN SENSE ITS PRESENCE THERE, YES?

!?

BA (RISE)

ABRAHAM LOUIS FRAN.

... WHO'RE YOU!?

SENA HOSHIMIYA.

HMPH.

!?

RIGHT. CAN'T HAVE YOU MAKING A SCENE HERE.

I'D BETTER EXPLAIN EVERY-THING.

YOU'RE PART OF A TRADE I'M ABOUT TO MAKE.

YUP.

HYOI (PEEK)

ヒョイ

HOLD ON.

PACHI

PACHI

PACHI (CLAP)

YOUR END OF THE BARGAIN IS COMPLETE... JOB WELL DONE, FIRST LIEUTENANT FRAN.

SENA-SAMA LOOKS WELL. VERY GOOD.

RIN KURENAI

MOMOTARO HYAKKI

HANZO HATORI

...HUH?

SORRY, HATORI, BUT THE DEAL I MADE ISN'T WITH YOU.

I'M SUPPOSED TO HAND SENA OVER TO GENNAI DIRECTLY.

I'VE BEEN GIVEN FULL AUTHORITY IN THE MATTER, BUT YOU'RE STILL NOT SATISFIED?

GIRORI (GLARE)

THIS WILL BE A LONG TRIP, THOUGH, SO...

ZA (SLOSH) ZA

I HAVE ...ONE DEMAND.

HMPH.

EVERY TEAM HAS ITS SHARE OF FRIENDLY QUARRELS.

..... WELL, WHAT-EVER.

WHAT'S GOING ON HERE...!?

ONBOARD WERE SENA, FRAN, RIN, AND THE ENTIRE SECURITY COUNCIL.

ZA

THE SHIP DEPARTED FROM HIROSHIMA, MAKING FOR KOBE BY WAY OF AWAJI ISLAND.

ZA ZA ZA

SIGN: WOMEN'S BATH

KAKOOON (CLUNK)

女湯

KAKOOON (CLUNK)

GIRL'S NOT IN THE MOOD FOR CHIT CHAT, I GUESS...

.....

HUH?

YOU WILL BE IN CHARGE OF LOOKING AFTER SENA-SAMA, SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI.

THIS IS TOTALLY GRUNT WORK.

PICHA

YOUR HAIR'S SO PRETTY, SENA-CHAN.

AHHH.

PICHA (SPLISH)

ZABAA (SPLASH)

BIG BROTHER ...

...CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION.....

...AND THEN HE DECLARED WAR ON THE WORLD.....

LEMME WASH YOUR HAIR FOR YOU, SENA-CHAN.

PRETTY CRAZY SITUATION, HUH?

PETA (STEP)

YEP.

AND I'VE GOT A SCORE TO SETTLE WITH HIM.

TIME TO HAVE SOME FUN WITH HER.

FU FU.

HUH?

WHAT'S THAT THING?

KYU (TUG)

SENA HOSHIMIYA, EIJI'S LITTLE SISTER.

POOR GIRL SEEMS LIKE A TIMID LITTLE THING.

HMM? CAN'T WASH MY HAIR WITHOUT PUTTING THIS ON.....

YOU KNOW HOW CIVIL WARS BROKE OUT EVERYWHERE AFTER THE GREAT DESTRUCTION?

HE WAS DESPERATE TO SAVE THEM, SO IT WAS THEN...

...THAT HE ACQUIRED HIS "STOP TIME" ABILITY.

WASHA (SCRUB)

WASHA

WASHA

IT WAS IN ONE OF THOSE WARS THAT FRAN LOST HIS WIFE AND TWO KIDS.

WASHA

WASHA

BUT HE COULDN'T SAVE THEM IN THE END...?

NOPE.

HEY.

.....

THAT'S PROBABLY THE KIND OF DEAL HE MADE.

IN EXCHANGE FOR HANDING YOU OVER, I BET THEY'RE SAYING THEY'LL REVIVE HIS FAMILY.

EIJI'S TO BLAME, Y'KNOW.

YOUR BIG BROTHER'S JUST SOMEONE WHO NEEDS TO BE KILLED.

PICHA (DRIP)

DON (SLAM)

!

WHAT'S THE MEANING OF THIS ...!?

DON (BAM)

NOW THAT WE'VE GOT SENA HOSHI-MIYA...

...YOUR ROLE IN ALL THIS IS OVER!

END OF THE LINE, MAN. WE TOLD YOU "JOB WELL DONE," RIGHT?

AAH!!

WAHHH.

SO THIS GUY USES LITTLE OGRES TO FIGHT FOR HIM? TOO MANY...!

GAHHH.

BWAHHH.

I CAN ONLY STOP **THREE THINGS** AT A TIME WITH MY POWER.

TCH.

STILL...

DO

DO

DO

DO (STOMP)

I ALWAYS KNEW THEY MIGHT NOT GIVE ME WHAT I WANTED, EVEN IF I BETRAYED DAZAIFU FOR THEM...!

I KNEW THAT FROM THE START.

...THAT WAS A RISK I HAD TO TAKE!

BEG! (CRUNCH)

GRRAWR

ZAA (STEAM)

YOU'RE WRONG.

POTA

POTA

RIN KURENAI...

POTA (DRIP)

...YOU'LL NEVER BE ABLE TO TAKE REVENGE ON MY BROTHER.

SIGH.

TRYING TO RULE THE WORLD FOR MY SAKE... IS JUST THE SORT OF DUMB THING MY SILLY BIG BROTHER WOULD DO.

HE'D PROBABLY DIE HAPPILY IF IT MEANT SAVING ME. THERE'S NO STOPPING HIM!

HUH...?

PICHA (SPLISH)

!? WHERE'S THIS COMING FROM ...?

D-DO YOU EVEN UNDERSTAND WHAT YOU'RE SAYING!?

PI (DRIP)

AND IF HE DIES SATISFIED, WILL THAT REALLY COUNT AS REVENGE FOR YOU?

HE PROBABLY EVEN WANTS TO DIE.

YOU'RE LUCKY IT'S JUST ME YOU'RE TALKING TO.

SPOUTING THAT SORT OF CRAP OUTSIDE WOULD BE A GOOD WAY TO GET YOURSELF KILLED!!

BA (POP)

I THINK YOU NEED TO TAKE IT DOWN A NOTCH. YOU'RE SICK, AFTER ALL!

ZA (SLOSH)

ZA

ZA

.....

RIGHT.

NIKO (SMILE)

LET'S CALL A CEASE-FIRE FOR NOW, MOMOTARO-KUN.

IT APPEARS THAT SENA-SAN IS READY.

THE GIRL ...!?

BA (TURN)

HAA.

HAA.

KEEP YOUR DISTANCE... WE'RE FIGHTING OUT HERE.

GET BACK TO YOUR ROOM!

ZA

ZA

!

WHA ……!!?

!?

THAT'S WHY YOU LET YOUR WIFE AND CHILDREN DIE.

ZA (SLOSH)

YOU REALLY ARE A COWARD, HUH?

I'VE HEARD ABOUT HOW ORDERS HAVE THEIR WISHES MADE INTO REALITY.

YOU GOT YOUR "STOP TIME" POWER BECAUSE YOU WANTED TO KEEP YOUR FAMILY FROM DYING SO SOON, RIGHT?

O (ROAR)

.....MOVE. YOU'RE IN THE WAY!

SENA!

HOLD ON...!

YOU WANT OTO DIE...!?

TA (TMP)

AW

!?

HOW NAIVE YOU ARE. THIS TIME, YOU GOT TEMPTED BY THE ENEMY, AND NOW IT'S YOU WHO'S ABOUT TO DIE...

THAT'S WHAT HAPPENS WHEN YOU RELY ON OTHERS.

IT'S NO BIG DEAL IF I DIE, REALLY.

I'VE ONLY GOT HALF A YEAR LEFT AS IT IS.

BLEHHH.

!

GORI (CRUNCH)

RI

IN FACT, BIG BROTHER WOULD PROBABLY BE BETTER OFF IF I DIED.

PERO (CLICK)

NOT THAT I'M GONNA, THOUGH.

BECAUSE UNLIKE YOU, I DON'T NEED TO RELY ON WISHES.

I'LL WIN ALL ON MY OWN!

IN EXCHANGE, YOU JUST GOTTA PROTECT ME.

I'M SURE THAT'LL KEEP THEM FROM KILLING YOU.

HOW ABOUT THIS? WE CAN THREATEN THEM, SAYING THAT IF YOU DIE, I DIE TOO.

WELL?

WHAT'S HER GAME...!?

YOU'VE GOTTA MAKE YOUR OWN WISHES COME TRUE.

ZA (SPLASH)

ZA

ZA

ZA

ZA

FIRST, I WANNA MEET WITH THE ENEMY GENERAL...

...BECAUSE I'M TRYING TO PROTECT BIG BROTHER.

SU (FWIP)

HOW'D I EVER THINK SHE WAS TIMID, OF ALL THINGS?

THIS GIRL'S FIERCE BEYOND WORDS!

YOU'LL NEVER BE ABLE TO TAKE REVENGE ON MY BROTHER.

EVEN IF THEY'RE NOT RELATED BY BLOOD...

...SHE'S DEFINITELY EIJI'S SISTER!

SHE'S STRONG...!

WON'T YOU BE MY KNIGHT IN SHINING ARMOR, FRAN?

ZA
ZA
ZA
ZA

MOMOTARO-KUN, LET'S PUT A HOLD ON DISPOSING OF FRAN.

WE'LL SEE HOW THIS PLAYS OUT.

ZA (SPLASH)
ZA
ZA

SHE MIGHT BE THE BIGGEST PAIN OF ALL.

SHEESH ...

TCH.

Subject 21 : END

► Order Ability Profiles

009

»» "Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.





User: **Mari Kunou**

Wish: **To See the Light**

Ability: **Light manipulation**

Mari Kunou's ability allows her to manipulate light in just about any way imaginable. She can fire a powerful, concentrated laser beam or even camouflage herself using light. However, the strongest use of her power in combat is how she can seek out and spot far-off enemies (up to two hundred meters away). During her fight against Momotaro in the previous volume, she was being fed his location as viewed through the security cameras and firing off lasers at him, but her "seeker" ability would have allowed her to see him, even at a great distance. Curve Ray was given to Mari as a way of granting her wish "to see the light of this world," which was prompted by her poor vision. She had almost lost her sight completely during her days as a researcher at the Hoshimiya Institute. Mari gained her sought-after "light" and combat abilities from Daisy, the system created to grant wishes in the wake of Gennai's rampage.

CURVE RAY

BIG
ORDER

IZUMO

ORDER!

FU (FWIP)

STARSEEKER!!!

BAD LUCK

凶

THE ONE YOU SEEK

ON THE ISLE OF AWAJI

INQUIRE ABOUT THE LOCATION OF

TO SAVE HER, CALL ON THE MAIDEN OF IZANAGI SHRINE.

AWAJI ISLAND...

IZANAGI SHRINE...

A SHRINE MAIDEN !?

...AND THIS INTEL IS MISSING BITS AND PIECES.

!

IYO...!

DA (DASH)

I'M TERRIBLY SORRY, EIJI-SAMA...

FOR SOME REASON, I'M UNABLE TO DIVINE SENA-SAMA'S LOCATION DIRECTLY...

Subject 22: "What It Takes to Be a Bastard"
Place: Hyogo and Awaji Island

SENA'S BEEN KID-NAPPED !!

IF THOSE SECURITY COUNCIL BASTARDS ARE HEADING TO AWAJI ISLAND, THEN THAT'S WHERE SENA'S GONNA BE!

DA (DASH)

DA (TMP.) DA

WAIT! CALM YOUR-SELF, EIJI.

DA DA

EIJI.

HOW CAN YOU EXPECT ME TO BE CALM AT A TIME LIKE THIS!?

IS SAVING SENA WORTH LETTING THE WORLD FALL TO RUIN?

BA (BAM)

I DON'T GOTTA TAKE ORDERS FROM YOU PEOPLE!

.....

O (WHOOSH)

ZA (STAND)

AS I'VE MENTIONED BEFORE, WE CAN'T HAND YOU OVER TO GENNAI.

WE MAY NOT KNOW WHY HE'S TAKEN SENA, BUT NOTHING ELSE HAS CHANGED.

"RELEASE THE TEN HANDS FROM MY TERRI-TORY"!

ORDER!

!

DON (BAM)

SU (PASS)

GUESS THIS IS GOOD-BYE, HIIRAGI.

WHAT YOU DO NOW IS YOUR BUSINESS.

!

BIRI

BIRI (TINGLE)

I FEEL A SENSE OF IMPENDING DANGER...

...IF YOU GO TO AWAJI ISLAND.

YOU MUSTN'T, EIJI-SAMA!

I'M SORRY, IYO...

...BUT I DON'T HAVE A CHOICE.

AH...

CAN I BORROW YOU FOR A MINUTE, AYAHITO?

I KNOW YOU TOLD ME NOT TO BETRAY YOU GUYS, BUT...

WAIT, EIJI!

JIIII (ZIP)

...HIIRAGI.

...IT'S NOT LIKE WE'VE EVER REALLY BEEN WORKING TOGETHER...

MARI, GET IN CONTACT WITH AYAHITO!

OF ALL THE PEOPLE HE COULD CHOOSE TO TAKE WITH HIM...

...TCH.

Colo-nel!

SU (FWISH)

AWAJI ISLAND

BEYOND ITS EXTENSIVE TERRACED RICE FIELDS, THE ISLAND IS ALSO FAMOUS FOR ITS ONIONS.

BUT THE GREAT DESTRUCTION LEFT HEAVY SCARS.

津名港ターミナル

SIGN: TSUNAKOU TERMINAL

BIRI (TINGLE)

BIRI

EIJI-SAMA ...!

I'LL HUNT DOWN THOSE SECURITY COUNCIL ASS-HOLES...

...AND TAKE SENA BACK FROM THEM!

...WHAT'RE WE DOING HERE, EIJI-SAMA?

GOING TO IZANAGI SHRINE, OF COURSE!

SO...

ZA (SPLASH) ZA

ZA

SENA'S ONLY GOT SIX MONTHS TO LIVE.....

Can you hear me, Ayahito!? Get yourself and Eiji-sama back here this instant!

GA (ZZT) GA

NOW THAT SHE'S OUT OF THAT GUY'S TIME FREEZE, TIME'S REALLY OF THE ESSENCE...

KZZT

!

TA (TMP)

HEH HEH.

I'VE BEEN WAITING FOR THIS MOMENT. ♡

WE'RE FINALLY ALONE, EIJI-SAMA.

CHA (SHINK)

A KNIFE...!?

KZZT

BACK OFF, AYA-HITO!

I'M NOT GOING BACK!

NO WAY. HA-HA.

DA (DASH)

ZAN (SLASH)

...FOR A WHILE NOW.

NO NEED TO WORRY.

I'VE BEEN ON YOUR SIDE...

!?

GASSHAA (CLATTER)

WHAT'S THIS GUY GETTING AT ANYWAY?

ZA (STEP)

I GET IT. YOU WANNA KILL SOME TIME OUT HERE BEFORE HEADING BACK.

KEEPING UP THAT ACT WAS GETTING HARD, YEAH?

ACT...?

NI (SMILE)

HUH ...?

THE WHOLE "SAVING SENA" THING IS JUST YOUR COVER, RIGHT?

YOU'RE TRYING TO THINK UP AN EXCUSE BEFORE RETURNING.

KISHI GRIND

NIKO (SMILE)

NIKO

NIKO

..... OH?

AM I WRONG?

TA (TMP)

..... !?

WE'RE ON TOTALLY DIF-FERENT PAGES HERE!

THIS DUDE IS FREAK-ING ME OUT...!!

FU (APPEAR)

WHAT'S THE POINT?

!?

RISKING YOUR OWN LIFE TO SAVE SOMEONE WITH SIX MONTHS LEFT? YOU'VE GOTTA BE JOKING, RIGHT?

'COS THERE ISN'T.

DON'T TELL ME... YOU THINK THERE'S ACTUALLY A WAY TO SAVE HER?

DA (DASH) DA

DAMN YOU...!

NOT ENOUGH FOR YOU? WITH YOUR POWER TO DOMINATE, YOU COULD HAVE ANY GIRL YOU WANTED. ♡

IF IT'S WOMEN YOU WANT, YOU'VE ALWAYS GOT IYO.

I BET SHE'D BE HAPPY TO SHAKE HER ASS FOR YOU.

TA (TMP)

WAIT, DON'T TELL ME...

...YOU HAVE A *LOLITA COMPLEX?*

YOU'RE NOT RELATED BY BLOOD, SO IT'S OKAY... IS THAT IT?

GIRI (GRIND)

WRONG AGAIN?

...HUH?

DOGON (POW)

TCH.

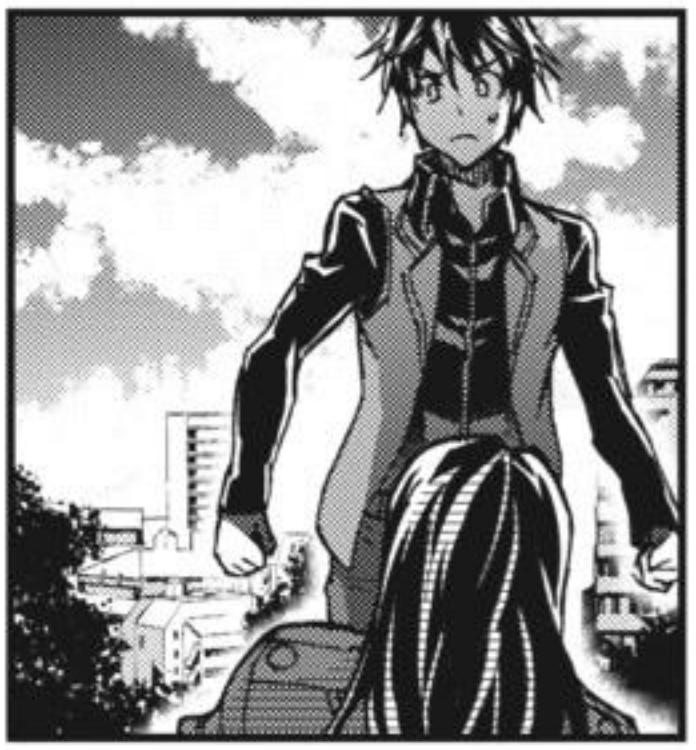
DOZZAA (THUD)

GET A GRIP, YOU CREEP!

MUKURI (RISE)

I KNEW THERE HAD TO BE MORE TO YOU THAN I THOUGHT, EIJI-SAMA.

WHOA, WHOA, WHOA, WHOA, WHOA, WHOA!?






HERA (GRIN)
AM I RIGHT?
STILL, I CAN'T SHAKE THIS FEELING THAT YOU'RE NOT REALLY OUT TO SAVE SENA-SAMA.


AH, EIJI-SAMA, WAIT UP!
ACK...
OF COURSE HE'S TOTALLY WRONG ABOUT EVERY-THING !!!


!
DON (PIERCE)
"STAY RIGHT HERE FOR A WHILE" !!!!!!
NO ORDER!

THIS RUINED CITY...

ALL THE PEOPLE WHO DIED BACK THEN... IT'S ALL MY FAULT .....!

NO WAY IN HELL I'M NOT SAVING SENA!

ALL FOR SENA'S SAKE !!!

A NORMAL PERSON WOULD KILL THEM-SELVES...!

BUT I CHOSE TO KEEP ON LIVING!

Subject 22 : END

Subject 23

IF IYO'S PREDICTION WAS RIGHT, THEN...

IZANAGI SHRINE...!!!

伊邪那岐神社

SIGN: IZANAGI SHRINE

(WHOOSH)

DOZA (SKID)

OVER THERE...!

RIGHT.

OKAY.

GARA (CRUMBLE)

THAT'S THE GUY FROM THE SECURITY COUNCIL... MOMOTARO!

Subject 23: "Inception of the Pentagram Plan"
Place: Awaji Island

GRR.

...SHE'S GONE MISSING, JUST LIKE KAMIMUSUBI DID.

WHAT A PAIN. CAN I HEAD BACK NOW, HATORI-CHI?

AS FOR THE ALL-IMPORTANT SHRINE MAIDEN...

LOOKS LIKE THIS SHRINE ALSO GOT WRECKED IN THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION.

HE'S TALKING TO HATORI...?

.....
.....

THE GIRL...?

HOW'RE THINGS GOING ON YOUR END WITH THE GIRL?

~~~~~~~~~!

G-GOT IT.

I'LL FINISH UP HERE AND RETURN.

ZAKU (CRUNCH)
~~~~~~~~~

DAMN THEM...!

HE MUST BE TALKING ABOUT SENA.....

SHE'S GOT TO BE AROUND HERE.

I'LL CONTROL HIM AND MAKE HIM GIVE UP SENA'S LOCATION!

ANYWAY, I'M LUCKY THIS GUY'S ALONE.

I'LL GET A RUNNING START AND SURPRISE HIM...!

DA (TMP) DA

ZAKU (CRUNCH) ZAKU

!

HUH?

ALL RIGHT. HE'S IN MY TERRITORY NOW!

DAN (LEAP)

ORDER!

ZA (STEP)

GRR.

!?

EIJI HOSHI-MIYA?

NI (SMILE)

YOU TOOK LONGER THAN I THOUGHT.

WHA ...!?

HE SPLIT INTO PIECES ...!?

BARA (DIVIDE)

DAMN. ONE OF THEM GOT ME.....

GASHI (GRAB)

!!?

ZU (MELD) ZU ZU ZU

!?

HE FUSED WITH MY THROAT .....

I CAN'T SPEAK ...!

ZU ZU ZU ZU

HATORI-CHI TOLD ME TO CAPTURE YOU ALIVE, SO...

...I'VE TAKEN THE LIBERTY OF KEEPING YOU FROM ISSUING ORDERS VIA YOUR DOMINA-TOR.

ZAKU (CRUNCH)

ZAKU

NATURALLY, WE ANTICI-PATED THAT YOU'D COME TO RESCUE YOUR SISTER.

GOT CARELESS 'COS YOU THOUGHT I WAS OUT HERE ALONE?

AH-HA-HA. THAT'S WHAT YOU GET, LEAPING INTO THE FIRE LIKE THAT.

PERSONALLY, I THINK WE SHOULD JUST KILL YOU AND BE DONE WITH IT.

SEEMS LIKE YOU'LL GET IN THE WAY OF OUR "PENTAGRAM PLAN," THOUGH.

IT'S NO USE. HE'S STUCK ON THERE GOOD.

YORO (WOBBLE)

ヨロ…

……!?

AKNEE……!

ANYWAY, I'LL BE SLICING YOUR TENDONS TO KEEP YOU FROM RUNNING.

SHURAN (SHINK)

SO LONG AS I'M STILL KICKING, THAT IS!

FU (FWIP)

AYAHITO ...!

SHU (FWISH)

HANG ON TIGHT, EIJI-SAMA!

WE'LL BE MAKING BACK-TO-BACK JUMPS!

BA (LEAP)

.....

...THIS THING LOOKS NASTY...

IF YOU CAN'T TALK, THEN YOUR DOMINATOR'S USELESS!

...AND IT WON'T DETACH UNTIL WE BEAT THAT BASTARD.

GUH.....

DOES IT HURT OR SOME-THING ...!?

CHA CCHAK

WH-WHAT'S WRONG?

OF COURSE IT HURTS...

SHIT. FORGET TALKING. I'M EVEN HAVING TROUBLE BREATHING NOW!

THERE ARE SOME SLUMS OVER IN THIS DIRECTION.

MY ABILITY'S ON COOLDOWN NOW, SO LET'S HEAD OVER THERE TO RECHARGE!

IT'S A GOOD LEARNING EXPERI-ENCE!

AS I THOUGHT, I NEED TO SHARE YOUR PAIN, EIJI-SAMA...!

ZAKU (SLICE)

ザク

DARA (OOZE)

ダラ...

OW, OW.

OH, AND THERE'S A WAY WE CAN BEAT THAT GUY.

SFX: POTA (DRIP) POTA

UNLESS I FEEL YOUR PAIN, I CAN'T BE CLOSE TO YOU, EIJI-SAMA.

WHAT ARE.....

...YOU.....?

KIHI CGRIND

WE CAN USE ORDER FUSION!

IF YOU CAN'T GIVE YOUR USUAL ORDERS, THEN I'LL DO IT FOR YOU, EIJI-SAMA!

AH.

SUCH AN AWESOME PLAN, ISN'T IT?

YAAAY.

...AND I GET TO BE CLOSER TO YOU...

ACTUALLY, WE'LL BECOME ONE!

YOU GET TO BEAT THAT GUY...

WHAT'S UP WITH HIM...?

PERO
(CLICK)

YOU'VE ALWAYS BEEN MY *OTHER HALF*, EIJI-SAMA.

SO WE'RE SURE TO BE PERFECTLY COMPATIBLE!

...OTHER HALF...?

WHAT'S HE GOING ON ABOUT NOW...!?!?

OKAY?

IZUMO

THE PROBLEM IS WE DON'T KNOW WHY GENNAI HAS TAKEN SENA HOSHIMIYA.

INDEED. HE SAID SOMETHING ABOUT HER BEING THE "KEY" TO THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION.

WHAT'S SO SPECIAL ABOUT SENA HOSHIMIYA...? THAT BASTARD STILL SEEMS TO KNOW SOMETHING I DON'T.

IT'S ALSO UNCLEAR WHY HE FELT THE NEED TO KILL OFF KAMIMU-SUBI.

HOLD ON. IZUMO? AND AWAJI ISLAND, WHERE EIJI IS NOW? COULD IT BE...?

WHAT'S MORE...

HIS FEELINGS TOWARD EIJI ARE SURE TO MAKE HIM UNCOOPERATIVE TOWARD US.

WHAT WILL WE DO WHEN THE REAL TROUBLE BEGINS?

EIJI TOOK AYAHITO WITH HIM, OF ALL PEOPLE...

EIJI...

.....WHAT SHOULD I DO!?

BUT I CAN'T DENY THAT FUSION IS A GOOD IDEA.

(CHIRA (GLANCE) チラッ

AYAHITO SUNDAN... THIS GUY'S TROUBLE!

AHHHH! ♪ FUSION, FUSION, GONNA BE SO FUNNN.

YOU SHOULD KNOW, EIJI-SAMA...

...I'M GRATEFUL TO YOU FOR THE GREAT DESTRUCTION YOU CAUSED.

ORPHANS ...?

HE'S GRATEFUL FOR THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION .....!?

?

I'LL BET THE COLONEL NEVER TOLD YOU THIS.

...AND KILLING THAT SHITHEAD GENNAI USED TO BE THE ONLY THINGS I WANTED IN LIFE.

DESTROYING THE HOSHIMIYA INSTI-TUTE...

BECAUSE WHAT YOU DID WAS SOMETHING I WANTED TO DO MYSELF.

THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE SECRETLY RAN HUMAN EXPERIMENTS.

OOOOOOOOO (WHOOSH)

AND I WAS ONE OF THEIR GUINEA PIGS.

THE INSTITUTE SNATCHED UP ORPHANS LIKE ME.

FIGURING OUT HOW TO GRANT HUMAN WISHES NATURALLY REQUIRED ACTUAL HUMANS FOR CLINICAL TESTING.

THE OTHER ORPHANS THEY SCOOPED UP BECAME THEIR NEXT VICTIMS.

THAT'S WHY...

...MY WISH WAS THE ABILITY TO KILL PEOPLE LOCKED AWAY IN SAFE ROOMS.

OOO

THAT'S WHAT I ENDURED THE TESTING FOR.

...THEN, ONE DAY...

...MY WISH CAME TRUE, JUST LIKE THAT.

LATER, I LEARNED THAT IT WAS YOUR DOING, EIJI HOSHI-MIYA.

MY OTHER HALF MUST'VE GRANTED MY WISH!

NO, WAIT!

THIS IS TOTALLY WHAT I WISHED FOR!

GO (RUMBLE)

GO GO GO GO GO GO

HAH...

AH-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA!

GO (BOOM)

INCRED-IBLE!

THE WORLD'S GETTING DESTROYED ON ITS OWN? AND I DIDN'T EVEN WISH FOR THIS...!!

AYAHITO, ESCAPING THE FACILITY DURING THE GREAT DESTRUCTION

ZUI (THRUST)

HOLY SHIT..... THIS GUY'S TOTALLY INSANE!!!

SO YOU'RE ME, AND I'M YOU, EIJI-SAMA.

THAT'S WHY WE NEED TO BECOME ONE!

DA (DASH)

HUH!?

YEAH, I'M NOT FUSING WITH THIS GUY!

HE NEVER QUITE SUCCEEDED, SO HE WANTS TO FEEL COMPLETE BY JOINING WITH SOMEONE WHO DID.

WAIT. WHO CARES ABOUT HIS SCREWBALL REASONING!?

THE SLUMS!

THERE'S NEVER BEEN ANYONE WHO ACTUALLY APPROVED OF MY GREAT DESTRUC-TION ...!

WHY'RE YOU RUNNING AWAY!?

HOLD ON, EIJI-SAMA!!

(WHOOSH)

!

THIS GUY... WE COULD NEVER REALLY BE IN SYNC!

TA (TMP)

WHA.....?

I FIGURED YOU'D PROBABLY TRY TO RUN AND HIDE HERE.

...HUNTING DOWN THAT SHRINE MAIDEN WAS SURE TO BE A PAIN.

AND...

SO I JUST DECIDED TO SLAUGH-TER EVERY-ONE.

THE DAMAGE IS PRETTY MUCH ALREADY DONE.

ZAN (STAND)

YOU TWO ARE LATE.

ALL RIGHT! THIS IS OUR CHANCE TO FUSE, EIJI-SAMA.

SHIT...!

THIS WON'T END WELL...

...BUT I'VE GOT NO OTHER CHOICE!

DON (BAM)

INCLUD-ING YOU, EIJI HOSHI-MIYA!!!

ORDER!!!

DO (BAM)

MY ONLY OPTION... ORDER FUSION!!!

GASHIN (KERRACK)

WE'VE WON!

!?

GASHIN

DOSSUN (SLAM)

HYOI (HUP)

WHAT IS THAT?

.....
.....
A STONE STATUE!?

WHA !?

OF COURSE...

HUH...!?

WE FAILED...

FAILED000

WE FAILED! HAVING THE SAME WISH ALLOWED US TO FUSE, BUT...

...WE WEREN'T PERFECTLY IN SYNC, SO IT CAN'T EVEN MOVE ...?

FAILED.....?

OGRE-DRIVE!!!

ORDER!

SLAY THEM ALL!!!

I KNEW IT, BUT STILL... I CAN'T LET THESE KIDS DIE ALONG WITH US!

DOGAN (KERSLAM)

JUST LIKE I THOUGHT. OF COURSE I COULDN'T FUSE WITH A NUTCASE LIKE HIM!

I'VE GOT TO SAVE THEM SOMEHOW!

A...

.....YA-HITO !!!

GARARA (CRUMBLE)

I'VE GOTTA...!

FIRST, TO SNAP AYAHITO OUT OF IT...

...BUT HOW DO I DO THAT WITHOUT TALKING?

YOU PIECE OF SHIT !!!!!!!!!

DOGGAA (KAPOW)

AND NOW YOU'RE JUST GONNA LET THESE OTHER ORPHANS DIE!!?

YOU SAID YOU WERE AN ORPHAN, RIGHT...?

BA (TURN)

HUH !!?

E-EIJI-SAMA...!?

LOOKS LIKE WE'RE SPIRI-TUALLY LINKED ...

I CAN TELL BECAUSE THIS IS HOW IT WAS WITH IYO TOO.

GET UP, AYAHITO. TIME TO FUSE AGAIN!!!

OOO (WHOOSH)

THEY ALL FELL DOWN THERE ...

NO COMING BACK FROM THAT...

FUSION ...!

BUT I'M STILL OUTSIDE YOUR TERRITORY. IF YOUR ANCHORS CAN'T REACH ME, YOU CAN'T TAKE ME DOWN...!

GASHIN (GRAB)

!?

ORDER!

WE'LL SAVE EVERY LAST ONE OF THEM !!!!!!

DOMI-NATOR ADD-ON: MAGIC HAND !!!

DOMINATOR ADD-ON: MAGIC HAND

AN ADDITIONAL EFFECT FOR THE DOMINATOR ABILITY. ALLOWS USERS TO CONTROL UP TO SIX OBJECTS OUTSIDE OF THEIR DOMAIN (WITHIN A 200-METER RADIUS AROUND EIJI).

DOGAA (KERSLAM)

WH-WHAAAT ...!?

OOO (WHOOSH) キキキ

BUT WE GOT HIM!

HOW, EVEN!? THIS MUCH POWER, JUST BECAUSE WE BOTH WANTED TO SAVE THE KIDS?

SO THIS IS FUSION WITH EIJI-SAMA...!? CRAZY...

Subject 23 : END

010

»» "Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.



Fusion Order #2: DOMINATOR ADD-ON: MAGIC HAND

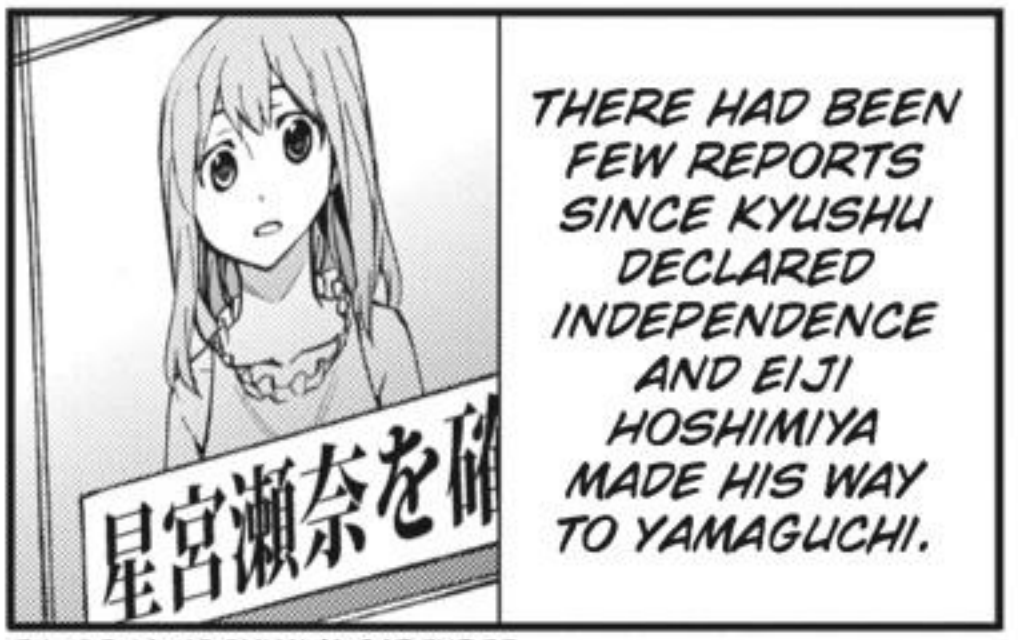
User: Eiji Hoshimiya + Ayahito Sundan

Ability: Grabbing and controlling objects outside one's domain

Add-Ons work by augmenting Eiji's basic Dominator ability in some way. One of the big downsides to Eiji's power is that it can only control people and objects within his territory, but "Magic Hand" makes up for that by allowing him to grab up to six things outside his domain (within a 200-meter radius). However, Eiji's link with Ayahito is pretty unstable, so their fusion success rate isn't all that good.

BIG
ORDER

EIJI HOSHIMIYA'S YOUNGER SISTER, SENA HOSHIMIYA, HAS BEEN CAPTURED!



TV: SENA HOSHIMIYA CAPTURED





ZAWA (CHATTER)

WITH HIS SISTER TAKEN HOSTAGE, KILLING EIJI HOSHIMIYA MIGHT JUST BE A POSSIBILITY !!!

どよ...
DOYO (GAB)

...THAT WAS JUST HOW THE SECURITY COUNCIL PRESENTED THE INTEL.

THEIR TRUE GOAL WAS THE CAPTURE OF EIJI HIMSELF.

HOWEVER ...

CHUGOKU HIGHWAY
(ONE SECTION STILL DAMAGED)

oo (WHOOSH)

ooo

SO THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S MADE THEIR MOVE.

THEY'LL HAVE AN EASIER TIME IF THE PEOPLE THINK JUSTICE IS ON THEIR SIDE.

IT'S A PUBLICITY WAR.

HMM?

Follow-up report on the Pentagram Plan.

GO ON.

Colonel!

PA (APPEAR)

MOGU (MUNCH)
モグ...

IS THAT...

...A STAR?

NO... WELL, YES...IT'S A PENTA-GRAM.

HAVE YOU ALL HEARD OF "LEY LINES"?

Izumo

Motoise

Mt. Ibuki

Holy Mt. Fuji

Awaji

Ise

Kumano

BAN (BAM)

It's just as you suspected.

Mount Ibuki, Ise, Kumano, Motoise, and Awaji all represent key spiritual locations, and the shrine maidens of both Mount Ibuki and Kumano have recently experienced mysterious deaths.

NOW THAT EIJI IS IN AWAJI, I CAN'T HELP BUT WONDER WHAT'S BECOME OF THE SHRINE MAIDEN THERE.

Subject 24:
"The Pentagram Plan"
Place: Osaka

LEY LINES CONNECT MULTIPLE POINTS OF SPIRITUAL ENERGY IN A STRAIGHT LINE.

THE BEST EXAMPLES OF LEY LINES HERE IN JAPAN FORM A GIANT, INVERTED PENTAGRAM IN THE KYOTO REGION, ONE LINE OF WHICH CONNECTS MT. FUJI AND IZUMO.

Mt. Fuji

Mt. Ibuki

Matoise

Ise

Izumo

Awaji

Kumano

NO...?

THAT SPIRITUAL POWER FLOWS THROUGH THESE "PULSE LINES," SO NATURALLY, THEY WERE A PART OF THE INSTITUTE'S RESEARCH.

OOOO (WHOOSH)

A COIL ON THIS GRAND SCALE REPRESENTS A GREAT WELL OF UNTAPPED POWER.

SO IT'S JUST AN UPSIDE-DOWN STAR!

CHUUU (SIP)

R-RIGHT ...

THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE'S GOAL WAS TO CONVERT SPIRITUAL POWER INTO TANGIBLE ENERGY...

So you think that's what Gennai has his eye on?

WE CAN'T ACCEPT THAT THE DEATH OF KAMIMUSUBI IN IZUMO WAS MERE COINCIDENCE.

IT'S TOO SUSPI-CIOUS.

WAIT, HIIRAGI.

YOU MENTIONED A "COIL," BUT THIS IS...

IF THE INVERTED PENTAGRAM REPRESENTS THE HEART IN THIS EXAMPLE...

...THEN THE LEY LINE BETWEEN IZUMO AND FUJI IS THE AORTA.

BAN (BAM)

THIS WOULD BE THE OPPOSITE— A SUPER-MASSIVE COIL.

MY SPECIALTY WAS SMALL-SCALE ENERGY TRANSFOR-MATION COILS.

GO (RUMBLE)
GO
GO
GO
ゴゴゴゴ

MAKE NO MISTAKE. IF IT'S ACTIVATED, THE ENERGY WILL RUN RAMPANT.

IT'LL BE ANOTHER GREAT DESTRUC-TION!

GO
GO

OSAKA CITY, OSAKA PREFECTURE

ZAWA (CHATTER)

ZAWA

ZAWA

HAVE YOU BEEN ABLE TO REACH EIJI AND AYAHITO?

I'D WAGER THAT SENA AND EIJI ARE THE KEYS TO IT...

No, not yet.

GENNAI'S ALREADY THREE STEPS AHEAD OF US.

OOO (WHOOSH)

THIS WILL GO A LOT SMOOTHER ONCE WE LEARN SENA'S LOCATION.

A CERTAIN HOTEL

ZA (STAND)

NOW THEN, SENA-SAMA.

WE'LL BE SOJOURNING IN THIS HOTEL FOR TODAY.

WE'VE ARRANGED A MEETING FOR YOU AT SIX P.M. WITH THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S VICE-DIRECTOR.

PLEASE RELAX AND ENJOY YOUR-SELF UNTIL THEN.

HA-HA-HA. NO, OF COURSE NOT.

I BET YOU'RE GONNA DOCTOR THE FOOTAGE BEFORE RELEASING IT TO THE WORLD, RIGHT?

(WHOOSH)

YOU MAY TAKE YOUR MEALS ON THE RESTAURANT FLOOR...

HUH!?

BY THE WAY, WE'VE RENTED OUT EVERY FLOOR OF THE BUILDING, SO YOU MAY MOVE FREELY THROUGHOUT.

TRY NOT TO GO OVERBOARD, AS WE ARE ON A BUDGET.

YOU CAN'T LEAVE, THOUGH.

...RIGHT.

I LEAVE SENA-SAMA IN YOUR CAPABLE HANDS, SECOND LIEU-TENANT KURENAI. ♪

TA (TMP)

GETTING THAT MEETING IS ALL I HOPED FOR, REALLY.

LOOKS LIKE YOU'LL GET YOUR FACE-TO-FACE WITH THE BOSS AFTER ALL.

SO WHAT NOW, SENA-CHAN?



...TO SPARE MY BIG BROTHER...

I'LL CONVINCE THE VICE-DIRECTOR ...

...AND TO STOP USING HIM FOR EVIL!

TWO HOURS EARLIER, ABOARD THE SHIP

WHA—!?

ZA (SPLASH) H" ZA H" ZA H" ZA H"

THE BOSS IS MY PAPA...!?

YES.

CONVINCE HIM, HUH...

LET'S TAKE A LOOK AROUND THE PLACE.

OKAY.

WELL, I GUESS THAT'S HER ONLY OPTION.

...THAT OUR ENEMY, GENNAI HOSHIMIYA, IS VICE-DIRECTOR OF THE UNITED NATIONS PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT SECURITY COUNCIL.

COLONEL HIIRAGI TOLD ME AS MUCH...

AFTER ALL...

NO WAY. CAN PAPA STILL BE ALIVE.

.....
.....
NO WAY.

IT'S ALL A BIT COMPLICATED, REALLY.

AND APPARENTLY, THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S PLOTTING TO CAUSE AN-OTHER GREAT DESTRUCTION.

STILL, DON'T BE SO NAIVE AS TO THINK THAT A SICK LITTLE GIRL CAN REALLY CHANGE ANYTHING.

I STILL HAVE TO RECEIVE MY COMPENSATION, THOUGH.

WHICH IS WHY I'LL SEE YOU THROUGH THIS SAFELY...AS YOUR SO-CALLED "KNIGHT."

SENA-CHAN?

WC

HUH?

...BUT IF SHE'S GOT A PLAN TO TURN THINGS AROUND, I'M HAPPY TO HELP...

JAAAA (FSSHH)

RIGHT... SHE'S ABOUT AS HELPLESS AS A PLANT SWAYING IN THE WATER...

THERE SHE IS.

?

LOOKS LIKE THE PHONES AND INTERNET IN THIS HOTEL ARE DOWN.

HMM... I BET HATORI'S BEHIND IT.

WHATCHA DOING?

WC

THEY LENT ME THIS CELL AT THE FRONT DESK...

PI (BEEP)

CAN'T USE IT AT ALL...

!

...BUT THE SIM CARD'S MISSING...

Can't make any calls.

W-WOW, HATORI THOUGHT OF EVERY-THING.

I'VE GOT A PLAN TO SAVE MY BIG BROTHER.

RIN-SAN. THINK YOU CAN HELP ME OUT?

?

JUUUU

JU (SIZZLE)

MOGU (MUNCH)

YOU'RE GETTING AHEAD OF YOUR-SELF.

WHETHER YOU PICK A FIGHT OR NOT, THIS MEETING'S NOT GONNA CHANGE ANYTHING.

HUH!?

JUUUU (SIZZLE)

HATORI'S PROBABLY PREPARED WITH ALL SORTS OF LIES. REMEMBER, THEY'RE THE ONES CONTROLLING THE INFORMATION.

YEAH, BUT I STILL WANNA PRACTICE.

PAKU (CHOMP)

YOU WANT ME TO HELP YOU PRACTICE DEBATING ...?

CAN I GET YOU TWO ANYTHING ELSE?

VERY WELL!

YOUR MOST EXPEN-SIVE ITEM !!!!!!

HEE HEE.

KATA (CLAK)

KIA

HMM?

WHAT'D YOU JUST PRESS?

FU-FU-FU. ARE YOU READY OR NOT?

I'LL BE GOING ON THE OFFENSIVE, ASKING ABOUT EVERYTHING FRAN-SAN TOLD ME.

ALL RIGHT, SO I'M GONNA START ASKING QUES-TIONS.

YOU JUST ANSWER THE WAY YOU NORMALLY WOULD, RIN-SAN.

PI (BEEP)

MY BIG BROTHER DIDN'T ACTUALLY CAUSE THE GREAT DESTRUCTION. IT WAS THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE...

...LED BY MY *PAPA*, GENNAI HOSHIMIYA, RIGHT?

REC

Recording

Subject 24:END

► Order Ability Profiles

011

»» "Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.







User: **Momotaro Hyakki**

Wish: **To Defeat Evil**

Ability: **Harbors one hundred ogres within his body**

Momotaro's father was a police officer, and the boy himself used to have a fairly typical sense of justice, but those values were shattered during the Great Destruction ten years ago. Surrounded by mangled corpses in the aftermath, he experienced true hell. Whereas beforehand he believed in saving everyone — even the weak — he came to believe that many people were just too weak to be saved. Instead, it was their destiny to die like dogs. What Momotaro presently views as "evil" is weakness in people.

When Momotaro's wish for strength was granted, he acquired ogres within his body, representing power itself. The ability allows him to physically split his body into an army of ogres, while also lending him monstrous vitality, stamina, and strength. He is essentially immortal but not quite in the same way as Rin Kurenai.

OGRE DRIVE

BIG
ORDER

Subject 25

OSAKA CASTLE!

VOILÀ!

THIS IS TO BE THE SITE OF THE MEETING BETWEEN SENA-SAMA AND GENNAI-SAMA.

ZA (STEP)

GENNAI-SAMA AWAITS WITHIN.

BA (TURN)

NOW THEN, SENA-SAMA.

...THE CASTLE IS A SYMBOL OF OSAKA'S RESTO-RATION.

IT'S BEEN BURNED DOWN TWICE AND DESTROYED A THIRD TIME IN THE GREAT DESTRUCTION, SO...

HUH?

JUST *THE MEDIA.* I ASKED THEM TO COME!

SFX: ZORO (CROWD) ZORO ZORO

THEY COULD MANIPULATE THE MEETING ALL THEY WANT IN A CLOSED ROOM!

YOU ASKED THEM?

POOON (DING)

WHICH IS WHY...

AH... W-WAIT A MINUTE, SENA-SAMA!?

ZA

ZA (STEP)

WHAT IS THIS!?

WHO ARE THESE PEOPLE .....!!?

Subject 25: "Sena vs. Gennai"
Place: Osaka

ZA (STAND)

...WE SHOULD BE BROAD-CASTING THIS LIVE TO THE WORLD!

WAH!

VICE-DIRECTOR GENNAI HOSHI-MIYA, A QUES-TION...!

YOU'VE SECURED EIJI HOSHI-MIYA'S YOUNGER SISTER, SENA HOSHIMIYA ...

BA (THRUST)

BA

BA

BA

...SO WHAT OF THE RUMORS THAT YOU YOURSELF ARE EIJI HOSHI-MIYA'S FATHER !?

BA

GENNAI HOSHI-MIYA!!!

NEVER EXPECTED HER TO ASK AT THE FRONT DESK FOR THE CELL PHONE TO BE DELIVERED TO THE MEDIA.

AT LUNCH, SHE WAS RECORDING ALL THE QUESTIONS SHE WANTED TO ASK GENNAI.

TA (TMP)

Aw!

!

OH YEAH? WELL, WHY DON'T YOU HEAD BACK NOW THAT YOU'VE DELIVERED HER TO US?

I STILL HAVEN'T RECEIVED MY COMPENSATION.

HUUH?

SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI... WEREN'T YOU ONLY SUPPOSED TO BE LOOKING AFTER HER?

WHY COME HERE NOW?

SO THAT'S WHAT ALL THIS IS ABOUT.

DOWAWA (CHATTER)

SENA-CHAN'S A SMART GIRL.

(WHOOSH)

COME ON, THIS IS EXCITING! A ONE-ON-ONE DUEL BETWEEN SENA-CHAN AND GENNAI !!!

WHAT'LL YOU DO WITH THE WORLD WATCHING?

OKAY, MR. IM-POSTOR.

I WAS RIGHT... THIS TOTALLY ISN'T THE PAPA I USED TO KNOW.

HIS FACE AND THE WAY HE LOOKS ARE TOTALLY DIFFER-ENT...!

KATSU (STEP)

!

GABBAA (HUG)

TEN WHOLE YEARS!

IT'S BEEN FAR TOO LONG, MY DEAR SENA! ♡♡

I'M SO GLAD TO FIND YOU WELL! ♡♡

!!?

BA (LIFT)

AND SO BIG! ♡♡

GURI (RUB)

GURI

AND YOU'VE GROWN SO BEAUTIFUL! ♡

GURI

HEY.....

.....

DOGASHAA (KAPOW)

KYAHHHH!

KY.....

.....

OH? EVEN IN THE CHEST AREA, HUH?

THE HELL ...?

.....

MUKURI (RISE)

DO YOU KNOW WHY I PICKED OSAKA CASTLE FOR OUR REUNION...

...SENA?

GARA (SLUMP)

HOW WOULD YOU KNOW THAT...?

NO, DOESN'T MATTER. ANYONE COULD FIND THAT OUT WITH A LITTLE DIGGING!

PAN (PAT)

PAN

YOUR AND YOUR MOM'S OLD HOUSE WAS AROUND HERE.

THE FOUR OF US USED TO COME TO THE CASTLE ALL THE TIME.

NIKO (SMILE)

I KNOW I CAN'T ASK FOR YOUR FORGIVENESS, BUT JUST KNOW THERE WERE PLENTY OF EXTENUATING CIRCUMSTANCES.

I'M SORRY FOR LEAVING YOU ALL ALONE FOR THE PAST TEN YEARS.

THIS MAN...

HA-HA.

COME HERE, SENA.

WHAT'S THAT, NOW?

SO YOU'RE GONNA KEEP PLAYING THE IMPOSTOR, HUH?

MEMBERS OF THE MEDIA!

AND ALL THE PEOPLE OF THE WORLD WATCHING THIS BROADCAST!

BA (BAM)

PAPA!

IF THIS IS HOW HE WANTS TO PLAY IT...

...TO MANIP-ULATE INFORMA-TION OR TO TRY CONTROL-LING ME WITH HIS WEIRD POWER!

WITH THE WHOLE WORLD WATCH-ING, IT'LL BE THAT MUCH HARDER ...

HMPH.

...

THIS IS PERFECT.

LET HIM TRY TO KEEP UP THE ACT!

I'LL LAY THE BLAME FOR EVERY-THING ON HIM AND CLEAR BIG BROTHER'S NAME!!!

FIRST, ABOUT THE SO-CALLED "HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE"!

ZAWA

ZAWA (CHATTER)

SENA'S LIVE BROADCAST BEGAN SPREADING LIKE WILDFIRE.

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA

I'LL GET JUSTICE FOR BIG BROTHER!!!

...AND ACROSS THE ENTIRE WORLD!!!

FROM OSAKA...

ZAWA (CHATTER)

HOSHIMIYA INSTI-TUTE?

...TO THE KANSAI REGION...

WHAT'S THIS "INSTITUTE" ANYWAY...?

TOPIX

TOPIX

...TO ALL OF JAPAN...

BAN (BAM)

PLEASE, PAPA.

THE CAMERAS ARE ROLLING, SO I NEED YOU TO BE HONEST.

TELL EVERYONE THAT THE GREAT DESTRUCTION WASN'T BIG BROTHER'S FAULT!

TELL THEM HOW YOU USED TO BE THE BOSS AT THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE ...

...AND IT WAS THE RESEARCH THERE THAT CREATED ABILITY USERS AND WAS THE ACTUAL CAUSE!

ZAWA (CHATTER)

...WASN'T EIJI HOSHIMIYA'S FAULT...!?

THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION...

WHAT'S ALL THIS ABOUT RESEARCH ON ABILITY USERS...!?

ŻAWA

ZAWA

NEVER MIND THAT.

BIG BROTHER WAS NEVER REALLY TRYING TO DESTROY THE WORLD—

IT WASN'T *ONLY* EIJI'S FAULT...IS WHAT SHE'S SAYING.

SU (FWIP)

HOLD ON, SENA.

BUT I DOUBT HE'LL ADMIT THAT SO EASILY.

.....
HE'S DENYING EVERY-THING!!!

GRR.

.....
BUT STILL ...!

I HEARD IT ALL SECOND-HAND FROM FRAN-SAN, SO I'VE GOT NO REAL PROOF.

GU (TENSE)

WHAT'S THIS HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE YOU'RE GOING ON ABOUT?

FIRST I'VE HEARD OF IT.

PAPA.

I ONLY HAVE SIX MONTHS LEFT TO LIVE...!

I DON'T NEED PROOF!

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA

ALL I HAVE TO DO IS GIVE PEOPLE THE FEELING THAT BIG BROTHER'S NOT TO BLAME. THAT'LL BE GOOD ENOUGH!

ZAWA (CHATTER)

I'm not lying!

THIS IS NO FOR-MAL COURT-ROOM.

CHUGOKU HIGHWAY

(WHOOSH)

Colonel!

Check out this broad-cast!

I'M ALREADY WATCH-ING.

SHE MADE A LAST-DITCH EFFORT WITH THIS LIVE BROADCAST, BUT...

...WE'RE AT A SIGNIFICANT DISADVANTAGE IN THIS BATTLE.

WE'RE IN TROUBLE IF EIJI IS NO LONGER SEEN AS THE VILLAIN.

AFTER SEEING THIS BROAD-CAST...

IT WON'T END WELL IF THE WORLD AT LARGE COMES TO REALIZE THAT TRUTH.

IT'S REALLY GENNAI AND THE SECURITY COUNCIL TRYING TO CAUSE ANOTHER GREAT DESTRUCTION, WHILE EIJI AND OUR KYUSHU GROUP TRY TO STOP THEM.

...Indeed.

...WE CAN BE SURE THAT EIJI WILL CHARGE IN RECKLESSLY!

!?

BUT THERE'S AN EVEN MORE PRESSING CONCERN AT THE MOMENT.

RIGHT.

MY FISTS WILL ROAR!

OO (WHOOSH)

BEN-KEI!

YOU MOVE ON TO MOTOISE, JUST AS PLANNED. PROTECT THAT SHRINE MAIDEN!

BAN (SLAM)

ARE YOU RE-CHARGED, IYO?

PAN (CLAP)

YES.

OOOO

IYO AND I WILL CONTINUE ON TO OSAKA IN ORDER TO STOP EIJI!

ZAWA (CHATTER)

IF THIS GIRL'S RIGHT, THEN THIS HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE IS TO BLAME...

ZAWA

WAIT.

ARE WE REALLY SUPPOSED TO BELIEVE EIJI HOSHIMIYA'S OWN SISTER...?

IT'S A WIFE'S DUTY TO PROTECT HER HUSBAND!

EVEN WHEN FAR APART, I CAN ALWAYS SENSE EIJI-SAMA'S PRES-ENCE.

ALL RIGHT!

Did she just say "wife"...?

...THIS MAN ...!

...BUT NOW...

I KNOW I CAN'T GET THE WORLD TO TOTALLY FORGIVE BIG BROTHER ...!

I JUST WANTED TO LIGHTEN HIS LOAD A LITTLE...

ANYONE WHO COULD BE SO CRUEL TO BIG BROTHER AND ME...

...IS NO FATHER OF MINE!

SENA WAS DEEP IN THOUGHT.

!

I ACKNOWL-EDGE THE EXISTENCE OF THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE.

THE NERVE OF THIS GUY...

SU (SWF)

I HAD HOPED TO AVOID THIS CONVERSATION, GIVEN HOW LITTLE TIME YOU HAVE LEFT, SENA, SO FORGIVE ME.

ZAWA (CHATTER)

!

I AM ALSO THE ONE RESPONSIBLE FOR THE CREATION OF ORDERS IN THIS WORLD.

HOW-EVER...

HE'S ADMIT-TING IT!?

チャキ CHAKI (SNIP)

!!!
!!!
!!!
!!!
!!!

...WHAT DOES THAT MAT-TER?

BACHIN (SNAP)

DON'T LET HIM GET TO YOU.

IT DOESN'T CHANGE THE FACT THAT EIJI IS THE ONE WHO KILLED HUNDREDS OF MILLIONS OF PEOPLE.

I CAN'T LOSE HERE.

I HAVE TO FIRE BACK WITH SOME-THING !!!

Izuma
Motoise
Mt. Ibuki
Holy Mt. Fuji
Awaji
Ise
Kumano

JAKI (KACHAK)

THE SECURITY COUNCIL IS ON THE SIDE OF JUSTICE, ATTEMPTING TO PREVENT THAT!

BY LIBERATING THE SPIRITUAL LOCATIONS AT MOUNT IBUKI, ISE, KUMANO, MOTOISE, AND AWAJI, THEY HOPE TO USE THE PENTAGRAM'S ENERGY TO UNLEASH A SECOND GREAT DESTRUCTION!

WE OF THE SECURITY COUNCIL ARE ON TO THE "PENTAGRAM PLAN" THAT EIJI HOSHIMIYA AND HIS KYUSHU GOVERNMENT ARE ABOUT TO ENACT!

!?

WHAT THE ……?

WHAT'S HE SAYING !!?

IF EIJI WANTS TO CAUSE ANOTHER GREAT DESTRUC-TION...

BACHI (SNAP)

GATA (STEP)

WHA ...!?

...THEN IT'S MY DUTY AS HIS FATHER TO STOP HIM, SENA!

THERE'S NO GOING BACK NOW.

TCH. DAMN THAT GENNAI! TRYING TO BLAME US FOR THE PENTAGRAM PLAN...!?

BIRI (TINGLE)

SO EIJI HOSHIMIYA REALLY IS THE VILLAIN HERE...!

THAT'S RIGHT.

COLONEL! I'M SENSING THAT EIJI-SAMA IS IN OSAKA!

SOME-ONE'S GOTTA KILL HIM ...!!!

OOOOO

DON (SLAM)

YOWCH…

THERE'S GOTTA BE A SOFTER WAY TO LAND, AYAHITO!

OSAKA CASTLE, DEAD AHEAD! THAT'S WHERE SENA-SAMA IS, EIJI-SAMA!

SHUUUU (FSSHH)

UGH…

O (WHOOSH)

SENA …!

E-EIJI HOSHIMIYA …!?

IT'S EIJI HOSHIMIYA …!

DA (DASH)

NO THANKS. WHY WOULD WE HAVE TO FUSE AGAIN ANYWAY?

WELL!? AREN'CHA GLAD I NOTICED THAT BROAD-CAST?

HOW ABOUT WE FUSE AGAIN TO RESCUE SENA-SAMA?

Breaking news, folks. It seems that Eiji Hoshimiya himself has just appeared outside Osaka Castle.

We're getting word that he is currently making a break for the castle!

LIVE

WAS THAT YOUR INTENTION ALL ALONG, SENA?

KI (GLARE)

AND YOU'RE DEFINITELY NOT MY PAPA!

YOU'RE ...

...THE EVIL ONE HERE.

SU (FWIP)

KOO

OSAKA CASTLE

IT'S A COMMEM-ORATIVE COIN FROM OSAKA CASTLE.

IT WAS STAMPED ELEVEN YEARS AGO, ON THE DAY WE ALL CAME HERE.

ARE YOU REALLY ...!?

I STILL TREASURE IT, YOU KNOW. IT'S ALWAYS IN MY JACKET POCKET.

!!?

DON (BOOM)

Subject 25 : END

Subject 26

SIX HOURS EARLIER, ON AWAJI ISLAND
(JUST AFTER THE BATTLE WITH MOMOTARO HYAKKI)

THIS GIRL IS THE AWAJI ISLAND SHRINE MAIDEN .....!?

GORO (ROLL)

ゴロ...

..... TCH.

THAT'S ..... RIGHT.

SHE WAS MIXED IN WITH THE OTHERS WHO WERE SENSELESSLY MURDERED HERE. THAT PHOTO CONFIRMS HER IDENTITY.

OSAKA

BUT YOU WANT TO KNOW ABOUT YOUR SISTER, RIGHT? SHE'LL BE NEAR OSAKA HARBOR ABOUT NOW.

HA-HA... THAT MEANS MY MISSION FROM GENNAI-SAMA IS COMPLETE.

ACCORDING TO OUR INTELLIGENCE, GENNAI IS ALWAYS ACCOMPANIED BY HIS BODYGUARD, JUUBEE!

.....

BISHI (SNAP)

MAY I ADVISE, EIJI-SAMA?

I SUGGEST REUNITING WITH THE COLONEL'S GROUP BEFORE TAKING FURTHER ACTION!

MUST BE THAT GUY...

.....HE'S KNOWN AS AN INFAMOUS GOD OF DEATH IN UNDERWORLD CIRCLES...

HEH HEH ...

...SO HE'S SURE TO BE TROUBLE IF WE RUN INTO HIM.

THAT'S RIGHT...

JUUBEE'S ABILITY IS "DIMENSION SWORD," WHICH LETS HIM SLICE THROUGH ANY DEFENSE!

.....IS THAT SO?

STILL, I CAN'T SEE THAT DISCOURAGING EIJI-SAMA.

SO, LET'S COME UP WITH A STRATEGY.

SPOILER ALERT: YOU WON'T STAND A CHANCE AGAINST HIM!

DO (BOOM)

BACK TO THE PRESENT

JUUBEE YAGYU! THERE HE IS!!!

PLAN A IS "AVOID JUUBEE" !!!

WHOA...

JUST LIKE WE PLANNED, EIJI-SAMA!!

YEAH!

BASHU (LEAP)

OH!?

I DON'T NEED TO FIGHT THIS GUY IN ORDER TO RESCUE SENA!

DON (BAM)

IN FRONT OF OSAKA CASTLE

!

Subject 26: "Don't Give Up!"
Place: Osaka

Castle Tower

Carved Seal Stone Plaza

Current Location

① Warp in from Awaji Island.

② After drawing out Juubee, warp across to the castle tower to create some distance.

WE'LL WARP IN NOT TOO FAR FROM THE CASTLE TOWER, AND WHEN JUUBEE SHOWS UP TO GET US, WE'LL WARP AGAIN AND MAKE OUR ESCAPE!

PLAN A IS THE "EVASION" STRATEGY!

PA (POP)

SO WE COULDN'T JUST WARP STRAIGHT TO WHEREVER SENA IS, AYAHITO?

NAHHH. NOW YOU SEE WHAT AN ANNOYING ABILITY WARPING IS.

AFTER THE SECOND JUMP, WE'LL BE RIGHT IN FRONT OF THE TOWER!

IF PLAN A FAILS AT ANY POINT AND WE'RE FORCED TO FIGHT, WE'LL MOVE TO PLAN B, THE "SUBJUGATION" STRATEGY...!

OO (WHOOSH)

!

BA (TURN)

GENNAI-SAMA!

EIJI HOSHIMIYA IS HEADING THIS WAY!

BIG BROTHER ...!

!

UNLESS YOU HAPPENED TO FEEL LIKE GETTING STUCK INSIDE THE WALL, JUST LIKE IN OLD RPGs...!

TA (TMP)

AUGH

SHIT, NOT AGAIN...

WHY'D YOU GOTTA DRAG ME HERE TOO ...?

DOBE (THUD)

...HE'LL DEFINITELY COME OFF AS THE VILLAIN .....!

IF HE REALLY BUSTS IN HERE TO SAVE ME NOW...

THIS IS BAD!

IT'S ALL MY FAULT ...!

!

ガッ...
GUI (TUG)

I'LL NEED YOU TO COME WITH ME. YOU'RE OUR HOSTAGE, AFTER ALL!

STAY AWAY, BIG BROTHER!

I'M DOING JUST FINE ON MY OWN...!

BA (TURN)

HEY.

...KYAH!

DON'T YOU LAY A HAND ON SENA-CHAN.

WH-WHAT'S THE MEANING OF THIS ...!?

スッ
SU
(STEP)

I STILL HAVEN'T BEEN COMPENSATED, SO I'M NOT READY TO HAND SENA OVER JUST YET.

THIS GIRL'S TRYING HER BEST HERE, AND I'M NOT SO CRUEL AS TO ABANDON HER IN HER TIME OF NEED.

YOU TWO...

GU (CLENCH)

DAMN THE BOTH OF YOU...!

.....
HMPH.

THE TOP FLOOR.

PA (FLASH)

NO.

I NEVER WANTED HER TO HAVE TO KNOW ABOUT ANY OF THIS, BUT NOW...

WHAT'S EVEN WORSE IS GIVING UP ON SENA SURVIVING TO SEE NEXT YEAR!

CHIIIN (DING)

HOW PATHETIC OF ME TO LET MYSELF QUIT LIKE THAT!

(WHIRRR)

I'M PATHETIC ...!

GETTING POOR, SICK SENA CAUGHT UP IN ALL THIS CRAP AND MAKING HER WORRY...!

DO
(SLASH)

SENAAAAAA!!!!

ZAN
(SLICE)

WHA—

U

AH.

BIG BRO—

ドドド

BARA

BARA (CRUMBLE)

SU (STEP)

IT'S BEEN A WHILE SINCE WE WERE TOGETHER LIKE THIS, EIJI.

ALL THREE OF US.

KYAHHHHH!!!

.....!

DON (BOOM)

BUT I CAN'T LET YOU TAKE SENA!

MEKYA (CRUNCH)

キャ

GYAHH!

MERI (CRACK)

GUH.....

NO. THAT'S NOT MY DAD...!

GEN...

...NAI?

DO (RUMBLE)
DO
DO
DO
DO
DO
COME TO ME, AND YOU CAN BE WITH SENA FOREVER.
COME OVER TO MY SIDE, EIJI.
WE CAN FIX UP THAT HAND OF YOURS.
BOTA (DRIP)
TA
GRR...
SHIT. I'M PASSING OUT ...
WHAT'RE YOU... PLANNING TO DO WITH SENA!?
AYA-HITO'S... UNDER-NEATH THAT RUBBLE.
SLI (STEP)
ME? WHAT'S YOUR GOAL IN TAKING HER BACK?
KURA (SLUMP)
WHO THE HELL WOULD EVER JOIN UP WITH A SHADY GUY LIKE YOU?

SENA IS GOING TO DIE, NO MATTER WHAT...

...SO HER LIFE MIGHT AS WELL SERVE MY RESEARCH.

THAT DAY TEN YEARS AGO...CERTAIN FACTORS LED TO SENA BECOMING THE KEY TO ALL THIS.

DO (RUMBLE)
DO
DO
DO
DO

...AND YOU, EIJI, ARE THE STABILIZATION DEVICE NEEDED TO CONTROL THE POWER THAT WILL EMERGE.

TO ME, YOU ARE BOTH ESSENTIAL TOOLS.

SHE'S THE KEY TO OPENING THE "GATE."

HER LIFE WILL BE CONSUMED TO OPEN THE DOORS...

...I CAN'T FORGIVE THIS BASTARD!!!

I'VE GOT NO CLUE WHAT ALL THAT MEANS, BUT...

WHAT'S HE SAYING!?

UHH...

PLEASE...

...RUN AWAY...BIG BROTHER.

I'VE ALREADY *GIVEN UP.*

GO GO GO GO (RUMBLE)

LIKE HELL I'M RUN-NING...

O (ROAR)

I'LL KILL YOU !!!

DON'T YOU DARE TELL ME THAT SENA'S GONNA DIE...!!!

I'VE GIVEN UP ON LIVING.....

BOTA (GUSH)
ボタ
BOTA
ボタ
BOTA
ボタ
.....

DOSHA (THUD)
ドサッ
MY STRENGTH IS...

I'M PATHETIC.....

HA... TA (TMP)

VICE-DIRECTOR, SORRY TO KEEP YOU WAITING.

JUUBEE?

WE'RE PULLING OUT.

YOU GRAB EIJI AND BRING HIM ALONG.

ZUZU (VIMMO)

BECAUSE THERE'S NO REASON TO...?

BECAUSE THERE'S NO MORE POINT IN SAVING HER...?

BECAUSE IT'S MEANING-LESS...?

SHE'S GIVEN UP...?

IF SENA GIVES UP, DOES THAT MEAN I CAN TOO .....?

PAA (GLOW)

NO!

TO (TMP)

トッ

HMM?

VICE-DIRECTOR, DO I HAVE PERMISSION TO ENGAGE HIM IN BATTLE?

POTA (DRIP)

POTA

POTA

POTA

!

ZAN (STAND)

GIMME BACK...

NO, I DON'T NEED A DAMN REASON ...

...SENA...!

...TO SAVE MY SISTER!!!

ORDER FUSION...

OHH...

IT MATTERS NOT, JUUBEE.

HURRY UP AND SLICE OFF THOSE LIMBS AGAIN.

HE'S CONTROLLING HIS OWN SEVERED APPENDAGES AND MANIPULATING THEM BY FORCE.

WHAT IMPRESSIVE WILLPOWER. I MUST COMMEND HIM.

ZA (STEP)

A FOOLISH PLAN.

...AND MAGIC HANDS ...?

MINI OGRES ...

EIJI WAS AT A DIS-ADVANTAGE ...

...BUT WHEN A MASTER SWORDSMAN IS PERPLEXED, EVEN AN AMATEUR CAN FIGHT BACK.

DON (BAM)

EIJI VERSUS THE UNYIELDING BLADE!!!

ORDER!

IT'S PLAN B! OPERATION "JUUBEE SUBJU-GATION" !!!

THE OGRES WOULD GIVE THE BLIND JUUBEE MULTIPLE PRESENCES TO TRACK, AND THEN THE MAGIC HANDS COULD GRAB HIM!

OO (WHOOSH)

THE PLAN B THAT AYAHITO CAME UP WITH WAS A SIMPLE ONE.

ONCE THE OGRES AND HANDS WERE DEALT WITH, HE COULD TAKE HIS TIME WITH EIJI, AND THAT WAS WHAT JUUBEE INTENDED TO DO.

HOW-EVER...

!

THAT SAID, THE SWORDSMAN'S BLINDNESS WAS HARDLY A HANDICAP. HE COULD STILL CUT DOWN EVERY ATTACKER IN AN INSTANT.

I WOULD UNDERSTAND... IF THESE OTHERS WERE MERELY BAIT, ALLOWING HIM TO HIDE IN SAFETY!

...IN THAT MOMENT, JUUBEE WAS CONFUSED!

...WHAT DOES HE HOPE TO ACHIEVE BY CHARGING AHEAD OF THE DECOYS...!!?

DA (DASH)

BUT...

!!?

ZAN (SLASH)

TCH .....

EIJI'S FORWARD CHARGE WAS PROOF OF HIS BURNING DESIRE TO SAVE SENA!

A DESPERATE MOVE NOT PART OF THE ORIGINAL PLAN!

A MOVE THAT WORKED IN HIS FAVOR!

HIS STRATEGIC PLAN ITSELF WAS, IN FACT, THE DECOY! ALL SO HE COULD CHARGE IN DEFENSE-LESS.....!

TH—

THIS AMATEUR ...!!!

MERI (CRUNCH)

DOZZAA (SKID)

DON (SLAM)

...THE SPOT RIGHT IN FRONT OF HIM WAS THE SAFEST PLACE TO BE!

OWING TO THE FACT THAT JUUBEE'S BLADE COULD CUT THROUGH DIMENSIONS ...

DO (RUMBLE)

DO

DO

THE CASTLE'S CRUMBLING, AND WE'RE ABOUT TO LOSE OUR FOOTING.

THAT'S ENOUGH, JUUBEE.

DO

DO

DO

DO

I SUPPOSE OUR MATCH IS A DRAW, EIJI.

YOU'VE MANAGED TO SHOW ME THE PURITY OF YOUR DESIRES.

BUT YOUR GROWTH SURPRISES ME. YOU WILL MAKE A FINE RECEPTACLE FOR THE "CONSCIOUSNESS."

ZAN (SLASH)

WAIT..... GENNAI!

...YOU SAYING ...?

WHAT ARE...

DO

DO

DO

COME FIND ME, EIJI.

EIJI... I ONCE SAW YOU AS A MERE COG IN THE WORKS, BUT I'VE SINCE REVISED THAT OPINION.

YOU'VE STILL GOT ROOM TO GROW AND THE POTENTIAL TO PLAY AN EVEN GREATER PART IN ALL THIS.

DO (RUMBLE)

DO

I'LL BE WITH SENA AT THE PENTAGRAM'S CENTER...

...WAITING AT NARA HEIJOUKYOU!

DO

DO (BOOM)

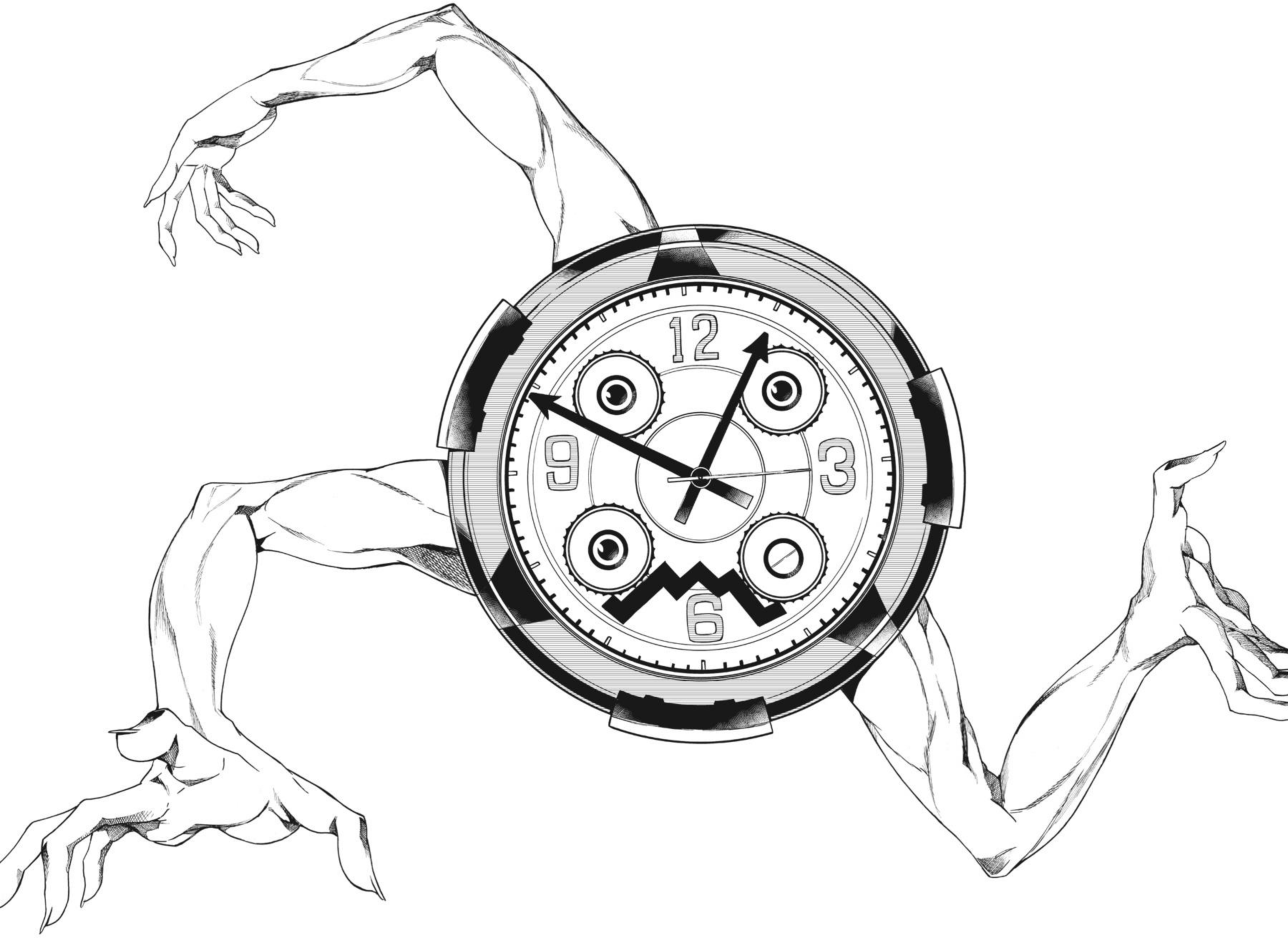
SENA...!!

Next Stop: Nara Heijoukyou

Subject 26:END



To be continued...


12
3
6
9



Translation: Caleb Cook • Lettering: Phil Christie

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, or persons, living or dead, is coincidental.

BIG ORDER Volume 5
© Sakae ESUNO 2014

First published in Japan in 2014 by KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged with KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo
through Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., Tokyo.

English translation © 2017 by Yen Press, LLC

Yen Press, LLC supports the right to free expression and the value of copyright. The purpose of copyright is to encourage writers and artists to produce the creative works that enrich our culture.

The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book without permission is a theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like permission to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), please contact the publisher. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Yen Press
1290 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10104

Visit us at yenpress.com
facebook.com/yenpress
twitter.com/yenpress
yenpress.tumblr.com
instagram.com/yenpress

First Yen Press eBook Edition: September 2017

Yen Press is an imprint of Yen Press, LLC.
The Yen Press name and logo are trademarks of Yen Press, LLC.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

ISBN: 978-0-316-43596-3 (ebook)

Sakae Esuno

06

BLEACH

PARENTAL ADVISORY
WARNING
EXPLICIT CONTENT

Subject 27

MY PREDICTIONS CAN SEE FAR INTO THE FUTURE.

CHAPU

CHAPU

SOMEWHERE IN OSAKA

CHAPU (SLOSH)

CHAPU

...IT HURTS TO THINK ABOUT IT BECAUSE I KNOW IT'LL HAPPEN, AND THAT ONLY MAKES ME WANT IT MORE.

BUT EVEN IF I CAN FORESEE FUTURE HAPPINESS...

WHEN WILL EIJI-SAMA AND I...?

EIJI-SAMA...

KATA (CLUNK)

SASU (RUB)

Subject 27: “Eve of the Decisive Battle”
Place: Somewhere in Osaka

BIG ORDER



BIG ORDER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

001 Subject 27: “Eve of the Decisive Battle”
Place: Somewhere in Osaka

025 Subject 28: “Bound Memories”
Place: Osaka and Nara Heijoukyou

059 Subject 29: “Sena’s Reversal”
Place: Nara Heijoukyou

091 Subject 30: “Deception”
Place: Nara Heijoukyou

125 Subject 31: “The Truth”
Place: Nara Heijoukyou

161 Subject 32: “Because I Want Us to Be Together Forever”
Place: Nara Heijoukyou

I DON'T NEED A DAMN REASON TO SAVE MY SISTER!!!

BIG
ORDER

UNDER HIIRAGI'S ORDERS, BENKEI HAS TRAVELED TO THE PENTAGRAM PLAN'S FINAL SPIRITUAL LOCATION, MOTOISE, TO SECURE THE SHRINE MAIDEN THERE.

...HERE I AM, IN MOTO-ISE!

A BEAUTIFUL RURAL AREA SURROUNDED BY MOUNTAINS.

MY, MY. GETTING PAST THAT CHECKPOINT ATE UP VALUABLE TIME, BUT...

KIND SIR.

THANK YOU FOR GETTING ME IN VIA THE BACK ROADS.

DO

DO

DO (VROOM)

S'NO PROBLEM. DON'T GET MANY TOURISTS NOWADAYS.

COME TO THINK OF IT...

MAKE SURE YOU DON'T GET GOBBLED UP, Y'HEAR?

...THERE'S A LEGEND ROUND THESE PARTS ABOUT THE DEMON OF MT. OOE.

MM.

DA (DASH)

BE CAREFUL, NOW.

TA (TMP)

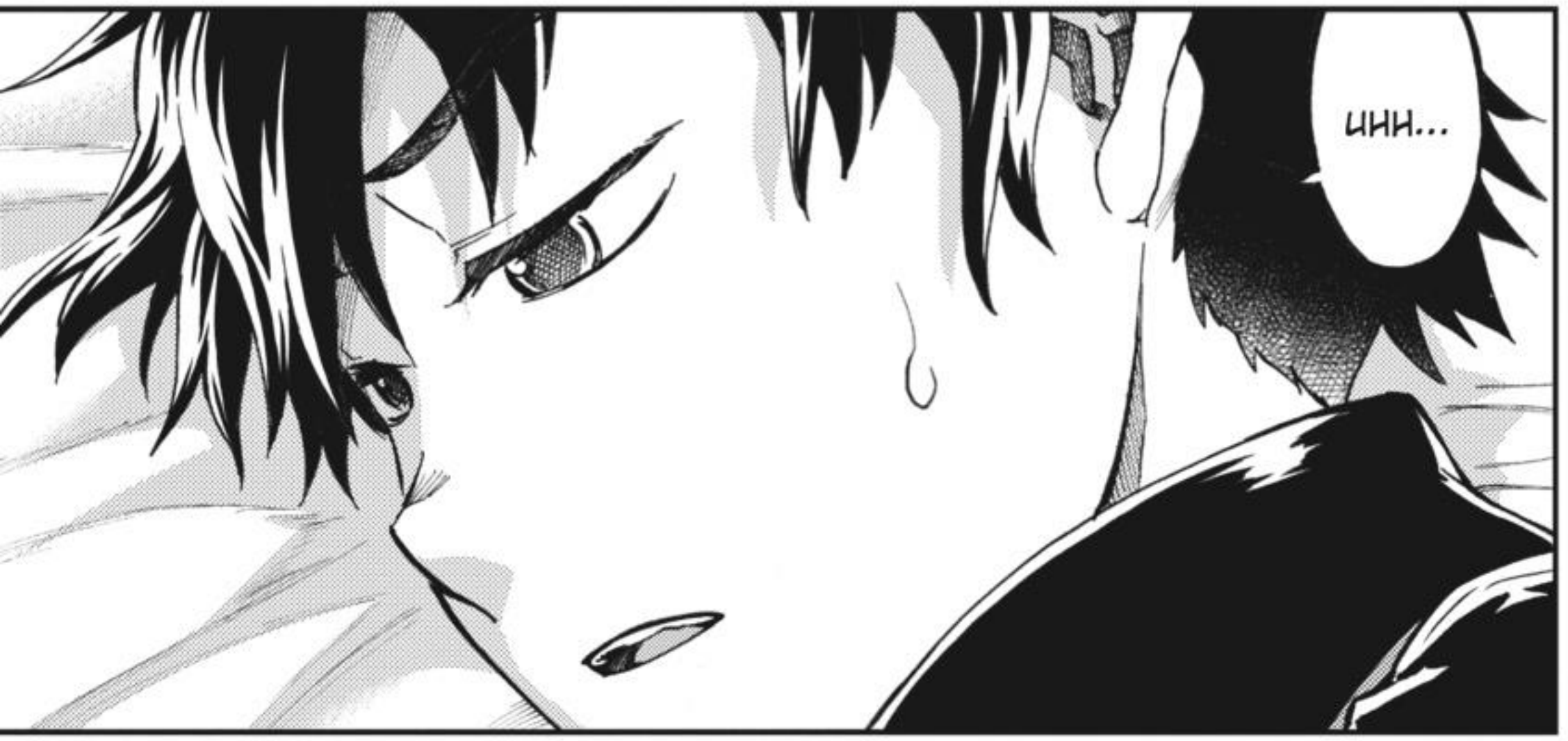
ACCORDING TO OUR SOURCES, THIS IS THE FINAL SPIRITUAL LOCATION OF THE PENTAGRAM PLAN...

...SO NATURALLY, THE SECURITY COUNCIL IS AFTER THE MAIDEN HERE...I CAN ONLY HOPE I'VE MADE IT IN TIME.

NI (GRIN)

I MEAN IT.




UHH...

WHERE AM I?

GACHA (RATTLE)

WHAT'S WITH THESE CUFFS .....?

THIS IS...

LAST I REMEMBER ...

GACHA

I WAS ABOUT TO GET CRUSHED.

SO HOW'M I STILL ALIVE ...?

...OSAKA CASTLE WAS FALLING TO PIECES...

GACHA

?

AH!

.....

FURU (TREMBLE)

THANK GOOD-NESS.

EIJI-SAMA!

IYO...

!

MY HAND?

GISHI (CREAK)

H-HOLD ON A SEC. DON'T SIT ON MY HAND LIKE THAT.

I WAS STARTING TO THINK YOU'D NEVER WAKE UP...!

THE COLONEL REVERSED THE DAMAGE DONE TO YOUR ARMS AND LEGS.

YES.

MY HAND...

BUT WASN'T IT...?

RIGHT. GENNAI TOOK SENA AND...

I'M START-ING TO REMEM-BER.

HIIRAGI ...? GREAT. JUST ANOTHER DEBT I OWE THE GUY.

AH.

GACHA (CLICK)

SHIT...! THAT BAS-TARD!

I'VE GOTTA HURRY AND GET SENA BACK...!

AH!?

Y-YOU CAN'T, EIJI-SAMA.

GET OFFA ME, IYO!

BA (REACH)

BUT ...

...THIS IS...

SENA!!! HE KID-NAPPED HER AGAIN!

GOO (WHOOSH)

!

B-8

B-10

IT'S A SAFE HOUSE IN THE KINAI REGION THAT DAZAIFU'S BEEN MAINTAINING FOR WHEN WE MADE IT THIS FAR.

AN ABANDONED TUNNEL IN OSAKA.

.....

WHA—!?

WHERE THE HELL ARE WE...!?

……

YOUR PRISONER, MOMOTARO, IS BEING KEPT ON AN EVEN LOWER LEVEL.

NEITHER THE MEDIA NOR THE ENEMY CAN GET IN.

WE HAVE TIGHT SECURITY AND WALLS ONE METER THICK ON EVERY LEVEL.

…THAT YOU'LL HAVE QUITE A HARD TIME LEAVING, EIJI-SAMA.

IT ALSO MEANS…

ooo (WHOOSH)

オオ

IYO ……

…WHERE'D THE OTHER MEMBERS OF THE TEN HANDS GO!?

I CAN'T TELL YOU.

…I KNOW YOU WON'T STOP ASKING UNTIL YOU FIND OUT, EIJI-SAMA.

FUU (SIGH)

…THAT'S WHAT I SHOULD SAY, BUT…

…RESCUE SENA-SAMA!

!

AT PRECISELY MIDNIGHT, THE TEN HANDS ARE GOING TO LAUNCH A FULL-SCALE ATTACK ON GENNAI'S BASE IN NARA HEIJOUKYOU.

THEIR OBJECTIVE IS TO DEFEAT GENNAI AND…

I'M SERIOUSLY BEING DETAINED HERE...!!?

THEY WANT ME TO LEAVE SENA'S RESCUE TO THEM!?

KA

KA (STEP)

HOWEVER, THE COLONEL HAS ORDERED ME TO KEEP YOU HERE, EIJI-SAMA!

WE CANNOT LET THE ENEMY GET HIS HANDS ON YOU.

ARE YOU KIDDING ME?

WH.....?

.....

WE'LL BE OFF NOW. YOU TAKE CARE OF THINGS HERE, IYO.

EIJI-SAMA IS ANXIOUS ABOUT SENA-SAMA.

SURELY HE'LL TRY TO ESCAPE...

KA (STEP)

HEE HEE.

HYOI (PEEK)

YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WHO CAN HOLD EIJI BACK AT THIS POINT.

KEE HEE.

YUP, YUP.

THAT WAS YOUR ORIGINAL ROLE, AFTER ALL.

BY NO MEANS ARE YOU TO LET HIM LEAVE THIS PLACE.

HAH.

...AS A MEANS OF CONTROLLING HIM EMOTIONALLY.

PROVIDING EIJI-SAMA WITH MENTAL CARE AND PLEASURES OF THE FLESH...

BA (TURN)

...EXPER-IMENT #23!!

WE'RE GIVING YOU THE JOB OF PROTECTING EIJI-SAMA. SHOW SOME GRATITUDE...

BITCH ...!

OUCH.

PAN (SLAP)

AS VULGAR AS EVER, EXPERIMENT #1.

UNDERSTOOD, COLONEL.

I'LL KEEP EIJI-SAMA DETAINED HERE, WHATEVER IT TAKES!

G! (CREAK)~ ギッ

H-HEY, IYO.

WANNA COME A LITTLE CLOSER SO WE CAN TALK? I MEAN, IF YOU'RE NOT BUSY.

? MOJI (FIDGET) もじ

もじ MOJI

? スッ SU (SHIFT)

SO IYO'S HERE TO KEEP WATCH OVER ME...?

LET'S HEAD BACK TO THE ROOM, I GUESS.

THERE'S A DECENT CHANCE SHE KNOWS A WAY OUT OF HERE. LET'S FIND OUT.

!?

POSU (FWUMP)

I...

HUH ...!?

!?

PLEASE.

PLEASE DON'T LEAVE ME NOW, EIJI-SAMA.

BA (LUNGE)

WH-WHOA. THAT'S A LITTLE TOO CLOSE!!

IYO ...!?

HARARI (DRAPE)

EIJI-SAMA, WON'T YOU TOUCH MY RIBBON?

WAIT .....

NO WAY. IT'S NOT LIKE I'YO TO ACT THIS WAY ALL OF A SUDDEN...

SU (FWIP)

!

IYO, YOU...

YOU'RE GONNA COME ON TO ME JUST TO STOP ME FRO—

LET'S MAKE A BABY.

IYO...

THIS TIME, FOR REAL.

GOOD.

ooo (WHOOSH)

COLONEL. WE HAVE WORD FROM BENKEI. HE'S SECURED MOTOISE'S MAIDEN.

...THE FINAL BATTLE.

THEN LET'S BEGIN...

Subject 27:END

Subject 28

YOU...!?

IYO ...!!!

...SHE'S GOING THIS FAR ...?

EIJI-SAMA...

IN ORDER TO KEEP ME HERE ...

CRAP!

BIG
ORDER

HER BODY'S WEIGHT, NICE AND SOFT...

THAT SWEET, FEMININE SCENT...

SHE'S... NOT HOLDING BACK!

GAHHH!

CRAP... I CAN'T THINK STRAIGHT.

MOZO (SQUIRM)

MOZO

MOZO

PARTS OF ME ARE REACTING IN WAYS I WISH THEY WOULDN'T...

KUSU (GIGGLE)

W-WAIT, IYO!

I'VE GOTTA GO SAVE SE—

CHU (KISS)

.....MMGH.

TCH...

NO CHOICE. I'LL HAVE TO CONTROL IYO...

...AND PUSH HER OFF BY FORCE!

ORDER...

.....

ANOTHER KISS...

I-I CAN'T GIVE AN ORDER WITH OUR LIPS LOCKED LIKE THIS...!

CHU (KISS)

MMM...

REMEMBER HOW I TOLD YOU I LIKED YOU?

EIJI-SAMA..... YOU STILL HAVEN'T GIVEN ME THE ANSWER I WANTED TO HEAR IN IZUMO.

GU (GRIP)

URU (WHIMPER)

WILL YOU REALLY ... ... ABANDON ME AND OUR CHILD?

!?

BA (GRAB)

HER RIBBON ...!

WHA ...?

OUR CHILD, INSIDE ME?

POTE (PLUMP)

ぽて

IYO'S IN HER IMAG-INARY PREG-NANCY MODE!

BA (JUMP)

H-H-H-H-HOLD ON, IYO!

NOT AGAIN...!!

.....

.....

.....

LOOK AT THAT, SWEETIE. YOUR PAPA IS SAYING HE'S GOING TO LEAVE YOU BEHIND.

SASU

さす

SASU (RUB)

さす

WHOA.....

I REALLY DON'T HAVE TIME FOR THIS NOW!

THIS IS HIIRAGI WE'RE TALKING ABOUT. HE'S SURE TO PRIORITIZE THE MISSION OVER RESCUING SENA!

THAT'S WHY I'VE GOTTA GO.

YOU SHOULD BE HERE WITH US, EIJI-SAMA.

UGH...

TSUUUN (POUT)

NO, IT'S QUITE FAIR.

DOSA (THUMP)

TH-THAT'S NOT FAIR, IYO.

AT THAT MOMENT, IN NARA HEIJOUKYOU, ENERGY RESEARCH COMPLEX #2

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

SENA-SAMA? OR THE WORLD?

EVEN IF YOU WENT TO NARA NOW, YOU'D ONLY GET IN THEIR WAY.

WHICH IS MORE IMPORTANT TO YOU, EIJI-SAMA?

Subject 28: "Bound Memories"
Place: Osaka and Nara Heijoukyou

ZA (STAND)

ONCE MORE, NOW.

I, MARI KUNOU OF THE TACTICS DIVISION, WILL GIVE AN OVERVIEW OF THIS FACILITY.

THREE HOURS AGO, OUR SATELLITE TEAM...

...WAS ABLE TO CONFIRM THAT GENNAI AND HIS PEOPLE ENTERED THE UNDERGROUND AREA.

星宮源内
Gennai Hoshimiya

GIVEN CURRENT DEVELOPMENTS, IT'S CLEAR THAT GENNAI IS USING IT FOR HIS EXPERIMENTS.

OUR INTELLIGENCE DIVISION HAS HAD ITS EYE ON THIS ENERGY RESEARCH COMPLEX FOR QUITE SOME TIME NOW...

葉
Ha

YES.

.....JUST AFTER OSAKA CASTLE COLLAPSED.

LABELS: ABOVEGROUND FACILITY [TOP], B3: MASSIVE ENERGY CONVERGENCE FACILITY [BOTTOM]

ZAZA (KZZT)

地上施設

B1

B2

B3

大型エネルギー収束施設

BASED ON OUR INTELLIGENCE, THE FACILITY HAS THREE UNDERGROUND LEVELS.

WE CAN BE SURE THAT THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S ABILITY USERS ARE GUARDING THE WAY DOWN.

WE HAVE TO BREAK THROUGH.

BENKEI.

That's fine. As long as you've secured the shrine maiden, the advantage is ours.

APOLOGIES! I'M HEADING THAT WAY, BUT...

...IT DOESN'T SEEM AS THOUGH I'LL BE THERE BEFORE THE OPERATION BEGINS.

PATA

PATA (FLAP)

OO (WHOOSH)

FOR TEN YEARS NOW, I'VE LED THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE'S FORMER EMPLOYEES AND BUILT UP THE DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT ...

...AND NOW, AT LAST...

AT LAST, THE FINAL BATTLE IS IMMINENT.

THE PENTAGRAM PLAN CAN'T BE FULLY REALIZED WITH THAT FINAL MAIDEN IN CHECK.

IT'S MOST IMPORTANT TO KEEP A LEVEL HEAD JUST BEFORE A MISSION BEGINS...

...BUT HERE'S THE COLONEL, GETTING EMO-TIONAL. HE'S EVEN SMILING.

.....

HE PROBABLY DOESN'T EVEN REALIZE IT HIMSELF...

...THIS CURRENT STATE OF MIND HE'S IN.

COLONEL.

GEN-NAI'S DEFEAT IS AT HAND ...!

THE COLONEL'S TRUE FEELINGS ...

OUR PRIORITY IS GENNAI.

IT'S NEARLY TIME. EVERYONE, TO YOUR POSITIONS.

PATA (FLAP)

RESCUING SENA-SAMA DURING THE OPERATION WILL PROVE DIFFICULT...

THAT DOESN'T MATTER.

IT'S NOT THE THOUGHT OF BEATING GENNAI THAT'S MAKING HIM SO HAPPY.

ROGER THAT.

ZA (STEP)

IN THE ABANDONED TUNNEL

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

SOMEHOW, I'VE GOTTA CONVINCE IYO TO LET ME GO TO NARA!

SHE'S REALLY TAKING HER TIME MAKING THE BED... GETTING READY FOR TONIGHT...?

SA (PRESS)

SA

SIGH.

I'M FEELING LIKE HER PREY OVER HERE.

IT'S THE THOUGHT OF MEETING GENNAI AGAIN.

AT FIRST...

...SENA WAS JUST A STEPSISTER FROM MY DAD'S SECOND MARRIAGE... THAT'S ALL SHE WAS.

BUT OVER TIME, WE BECAME LIKE REAL SIBLINGS.

AND NOW, OUR PARENTS ARE DEAD AND GONE .....

GET WHAT I'M SAYING, IYO? YOU GOTTA LET ME GO.

I CAN'T ABANDON SENA IN HER TIME OF NEED!

I'M NOT GONNA CONVINCE HER THIS WAY!

IYO THINKS THAT KEEPING ME HERE IS FOR MY OWN GOOD...

"DEAD AND GONE"?

.....

I'VE BEEN THINKING THIS FOR A WHILE, BUT, EIJI-SAMA...

...YOUR STORY IS A BIT ODD.

HOW COULD THEY GO AND LEAVE ME, OF ALL PEOPLE, BEHIND ...!?

NO GOOD.

YOU SAW THAT LIVE BROADCAST EARLIER, DIDN'T YOU?

SO WHY ARE YOU ***STILL SO CONVINCED*** THAT GENNAI HOSHIMIYA ***IS DEAD?***

HUH!!...!?

?

SU (STEP)

?

"WHY"? 'COS MY DAD IS DEAD. THAT'S WHY.

A PHOTO ...?

LOOK.

KACHI (TAP)

GATA (PULL)

THERE'S A SINGLE FAMILY PHOTO OF YOURS REMAINING FROM BACK THEN.

...WE WERE KEEPING CLOSE TABS ON YOU AND SENA-SAMA.

LONG BEFORE WE AT DAZAIFU EVER MADE CONTACT WITH YOU, EIJI-SAMA...

!?
!?
!?
!?
!?
!?

WHAT'S UP WITH THIS PICTURE...!? THAT'S NOT MY DAD!

!!?

SURELY, THIS IS THE SAME MAN WE ALL SAW IN THAT BROADCAST...

THE COLONEL HAS ALSO WONDERED WHY YOU AND SENA-SAMA ARE SO CONVINCED OF YOUR FATHER'S PASSING...

!?
!?
!?

UNTIL NOW, WE'VE CHALKED IT UP TO THE NAÏVETÉ OF CHILDREN, BUT...

IT WAS PROBABLY A COMMON THING IN THE CHAOS TEN YEARS AGO.

NO... THAT'S NOT MY FATHER.

YES, THAT IS INDEED GENNAI HOSHIMIYA... I MET THE MAN ONCE.

...IT'S MY MEMORIES THAT ARE SOMEHOW WRONG!

THIS WHOLE TIME, I'VE BEEN PICTURING DAD THE WAY I REMEMBER HIM, IN ALL OF HIIRAGI AND THE OTHERS' STORIES ...

THIS CAN ONLY MEAN THAT...

...BUT NOW IT TURNS OUT THEY ONLY EVER KNEW THIS LONG-HAIRED GUY...!?

GASHAAA (CLAMP)

GRR...

DON'T REMEM-BER.

DON'T REMEM-BERRR.

AN AVATAR ...!?

WHA ...

!!?

!?

OH MY.

WHAT THE HELL IS THIS THING...!?

IT'S LIKE I EXPLAINED BEFORE.

YOU'RE REMEMBER-ING THINGS WRONG.

SO THIS THING IS MESSING WITH MY MEMO-RIES...!?

GA (CLAMP)

!? REMEM-BERING WRONG...?

DAISY...!?

BAN (BAM)

IT SEEMS THE CHARADE CAN'T BE MAINTAINED ANY LONGER.

OH, DON'T WORRY. THAT LITTLE GUY WON'T HARM YOU.

!

THAT'S ...!

BUN (FWIP)

EIJI, YOU OUGHTA HEAD OVER TO NARA.

GOOOO (BLAZE)

ナオオ.

ナオオ

ナオオ

THAT'S NARA AT PRESENT.

IT SEEMS HIIRAGI'S LITTLE OPERATION HAS BEGUN.

NOT EVEN HIIRAGI AND THE OTHERS REALLY KNOW THE TRUTH ABOUT WHAT HAPPENED TEN YEARS AGO.

NARA HEIJOUKYOU, ENERGY RESEARCH COMPLEX #2, BASEMENT LEVEL 3

NO GOOD. WE CAN'T GET IN TOUCH WITH THE BACKUP FACILITY!

BIII

SWITCH OVER TO BACKUP GENER-ATORS!

DOYO (CHATTER)

BIII

THIS IS BAD, VICE-DIRECTOR! THEY'VE KNOCKED OUT OUR ELEC-TRICAL GRID!!

BIII (BZZZ)

DON (BOOM)

ANOTHER EXPLO-SION!

GENNAI-SAMA!

HMPH.

BLIWA (ZOOM)

SEND REINFORCE-MENTS ABOVE-GROUND!

PIECE OF CAKE!

DO (BOOM)

DON

HYA HA HA HA!

GOO (BLAZE)

WE'VE ALSO LOST CONTACT WITH THE GROUP TROOPS UP THERE...!

SHIT. THE TEN HANDS... IN THAT CASE ...!

THEN SWITCH OVER TO THE PRO-PRIETARY GENER-ATORS!

ABOVEGROUND:
MARI, TAKING THE LEAD

IT SEEMS THAT AYAHITO AND LAURYN ARE PROVIDING AMPLE DISTRACTION. GOOD. I'LL PUSH ON!

HOPEFULLY, I CAN TAKE DOWN GENNAI WITHOUT THE COLONEL HAVING TO GET HIS HANDS DIRTY.....!

MY "CURVE RAY" SHOULD LET ME SEE DEEP INSIDE THE FACILITY IN ORDER TO SCOUT AHEAD!

ENTRANCE TO BASEMENT LEVEL 1

B-1

!

I CAN'T LET THAT BASTARD GET ANYWHERE NEAR THE COLONEL!

TA (TMP)

B-1

I AM HONMA Q, OF THE SECURITY COUNCIL!

DON (BAM)

DAZAIFU'S MARI KUNOU, I PRESUME ?

DO

YOU WON'T BE GETTING PAST ME!

GUNII (SQUISH)

!

HEH HEH

IN-DEED!

HEH HEH HEH.

MY ABILITY MANIPULATES YOUR SENSES!

DO (STOMP)

DO

DO

DO DO DO DO

HMPH. SO I TAKE IT GENNAI MUST BE DOWN THIS WAY?

NI NI NIII

THE GROUND IS WARPING ...!!?

THE GROUND ...!?

WHAT IS THIS ...!?!?

COMMAND VEHICLE, BRINGING UP THE REAR

OOOO (ZOOM)

COLONEL! LIEUTENANT COLONEL MARI IS ENGAGING ANOTHER ABILITY USER!

VERY WELL. JUST AS PLANNED.

A-AND I'M GETTING A MASSIVE ENERGY READING EIGHTY METERS UNDERGROUND!

!?

WANDERER SENSE!!!

GUNIIIII (SQUISH)

PEOPLE CAN'T HELP BUT RELY ON THEIR SENSES!

WILL YOU GET PAST OR SUFFER A DIFFERENT FATE? IT ALL DEPENDS ON WHETHER OR NOT YOU CAN BEAT ME!!

"WANDERER SENSE" HONMA Q'S ABILITY LETS HIM DISTORT HIS OPPONENT'S SENSES. HIS WISH WAS "TO MAKE OTHERS SEE THINGS HIS WAY."

REALLY...? IS HE PLANNING TO MOVE THE EXPERIMENT AHEAD BY FORCE, EVEN WITHOUT THE FIFTH MAIDEN OF THE PENTAGRAM PLAN OUT OF THE WAY...!?

IT'S DOOMED TO FAIL.

THE FACILITY IS PREPARING TO OPERATE ON ITS OWN INTERNAL GENERATORS.

...IT SEEMS THE ENERGY CONVERGENCE DEVICE ON B3 IS ABOUT TO ACTIVATE.

WHAT ARE YOU THINKING, GENNAI !!?

Subject 28:END

Subject 29

GRR. GRR.

...WHAT'S THIS AVATAR DOING ON MY HEAD...!?

BESIDES ...

BEFORE SENA HELPS CAUSE ANOTHER GREAT DESTRUC-TION.

OSAKA: UNDERGROUND TUNNEL

EIJI, YOU OUGHTA GO AFTER SENA IN NARA.

WAIT A SECOND, DAISY. I DON'T HAVE A CLUE WHAT YOU'RE TALKING ABOUT...

OO (WHOOSH)

WHY DON'T YOU GO AND SEE FOR YOUR-SELF?

I'LL BE WAITING FOR YOU IN NARA.

HELPS...? SENA WOULDN'T DO THAT.

YOU MEAN HOW SHE'S BEING CONTROLLED BY GENNAI, RIGHT...?

HMM?

WAIT. WHAT'D YOU MEAN, "HELPS" ...!?

FU (FWISH)

EIJI-SAMA!

DAISY!!!

...AND GENNAI HAD THE KIDNAPPED SENA HELD CAPTIVE ON THE LOWEST LEVEL...

...OF NARA HEIJOUKYOU'S ENERGY RESEARCH COMPLEX #2.

AS EIJI MET WITH DAISY...

...MARI WAS STRUGGLING AGAINST THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S HONMA Q...

OW, OW...

THEY SURE DON'T KNOW HOW TO BE GENTLE WITH A GIRL.

OO (WHOOSH)

THESE ROPES ARE GONNA GIVE ME SOME NASTY BRUISES!

THEY MUST'VE TAKEN FRAN SOMEPLACE ELSE...

SHEESH.

ZU (RUMBLE)

ZUN

ZU

!

GIRIRI (TWIST)

Subject 29: "Sena's Reversal"
Place: Nara Heijoukyou

COLONEL HIIRAGI? OR MAYBE EIJI.

WHOEVER IT IS, THEY'RE GOING WILD UP THERE.

ZU

ZU (RUMBLE)

.....

SOUNDS LIKE THE FIREFIGHT'S STARTED UPSTAIRS.

I DON'T THINK HE MADE IT OUT...

WHEN OSAKA CASTLE WAS CRUMBLING, BIG BROTHER, HE...

BIG BROTHER ...

.....

KUWA (ROAR)

SHEESH.

THIS WHOLE PLACE IS GONNA FALL APART AT THIS RATE.


zu
zu
zu
zu




OF COURSE SHE'S GONNA WORRY ABOUT HIM.
SHE'S HIS SISTER.


!
BA (TURN)
I BET HE'S GONNA COME CHARGING IN HERE ANY SECOND, FACE ALL PALE, SHOUTING, "SENAAAA!"


SUKU (STAND)
NO COLLAPSING CASTLE'S ENOUGH TO MAKE EIJI BITE THE DUST.
BESIDES, IF HE'S DEAD, THEN I'M OUTTA LUCK TOO.


HEE HEE.



YOU'RE A GOOD GIRL... SENA-CHAN.

NOT SURE IF THAT THING'S GONNA CAUSE A GREAT DESTRUC-TION OR WHAT, BUT...

...I'M PRETTY SURE THEY'RE PLANNING TO STICK YOU INSIDE THAT WEIRD MACHINE.

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

...ANYWAYS, WE GOTTA GET OUTTA HERE SOMEHOW.

AFTER ALL, MY GOAL IS TO KILL EIJI.

HMPH.

AND EIJI'S GOAL IS TO SAVE YOU, MAKING YOU THE PERFECT BAIT. CAN'T HAVE YOU DYING ON ME.

AND YOU'RE NOT GONNA SURVIVE.

...WILL YOU HELP ME, RIN-SAN?

HMM?

'COURSE I WILL.

BUT ESCAPING WILL BE HARD WITH SO MANY GUARDS.

I DIDN'T HAVE MUCH TIME LEFT ANYWAY, BUT NOW.....

...RIGHT.

AND IF THAT HAPPENS, I'LL TRY TO CONVINCE THEM TO STOP THE WHOLE EXPERIMENT AT THE LAST MINUTE!

RIN-SAN.

GI (CREAK) ギッ

IF THINGS GET BAD, I WANT YOU TO ESCAPE ON YOUR OWN.

CRAP ...!

!

W-WE'LL FIGURE SOMETHING OUT. JUST GOTTA FIND MY KATANA FIRST.

I'VE GOT SKILLS, Y'KNOW, DESPITE HOW IT MIGHT LOOK...

N-NOT YET, NOT YET.

NOT READY TO FACE HIM.....

GATA (STAND)

THAT BASTARD GENNAI ...

HE'S ALREADY HERE!?

SAID ALL YOUR GOOD-BYES TO YOUR FRIEND?

GACHA (CLICK)

FUI (TURN)

...SENA.

TIME TO GO NOW...

GOTTA BUY RIN-SAN TIME...

I REALLY DON'T WANNA DIE WITHOUT KNOWING WHAT IT'S ALL FOR.

OOOO (WHOOSH)

SO AT THE VERY LEAST... COULD YOU EXPLAIN WHAT YOU'RE TRYING TO DO HERE?

<I'LL COME AND SAVE YOU...>

<JUST BUY SOME MORE TIME!>

PAKU (FLAP)

PAKU

.....
YES, OF COURSE.

A QUICK DETOUR IS IN ORDER.

GO (RUMBLE) ゴゴ GO GO ゴゴ GO

RIN-SAN...!

PERHAPS YOU REMEMBER SEEING SOMETHING SIMILAR, SENA?

OR HAVE YOU SOMEHOW FORGOTTEN SOMETHING SO IMPORTANT .....?

?

MY GOAL IS TO OPEN THIS GATE.

A GATE...!?

GO

GOOO (FWOOM)

I CALL THIS...

..."THE GATE."

GO (RUMBLE)

THIS IS...

GO (RUMBLE)

GO

GO

GO

GO

ON THE OTHER SIDE LIES THE HOPE OF ALL HUMANITY.

GO

GO

GO

GO

A WORLD WHERE ALL WISHES WILL BE GRANTED!

!?!? THIS BIG PILLAR .....

I FEEL LIKE I'VE SEEN IT BEFORE.

A WORLD OF DREAMS.

!!?

DOKUN (BADUM)

!

THIS MEMORY .....?

ZUKI (THROB)

GO

GO

GO

...BUT MY RESEARCH DIDN'T GO AS PLANNED.

ONE DAY, THE GOVERNMENT TOLD ME THEY WERE CANCELING THE PROJECT.

TEN YEARS AGO, I WAS RESEARCHING HOW TO TRANSFORM PEOPLE'S THOUGHTS INTO ENERGY...

GO

GO

GO

THE DIVINE ORACLE OF GATE THEORY!

I TRIED DESPERATELY TO KEEP IT GOING, BUT ALAS...

...I COULDN'T BRING MYSELF TO TELL THE EMPLOYEES.

ZUKI

ZUKI (THROB)

BUT, THEN...

...WHEN I WAS AT MY WIT'S END, A VOICE CALLED OUT TO ME.

...I REALIZED THAT I HAD TO FINISH, COME WHAT MAY.

I KNEW THAT COMPLETING MY RESEARCH COULD BRING SALVATION TO SO MANY...!

THAT'S WHY...

HOLD ON.....!?

ZUKI (THROB)

HOLD ...

MY FRIENDS...

...MY COWORKERS, AND MY LIFE—ALL OF IT SACRIFICED FOR THE SAKE OF THE GATE!

I TOSSED ASIDE ALL MY PREVIOUS FINDINGS AND SUCCESSES!

...WAS COMPLETELY FORGOTTEN...!

EVEN THE REASON I BEGAN RESEARCHING IN THE FIRST PLACE...

HEY, DAD, I THOUGHT OF SOMETHING!

HE ASKED ME A SIMPLE QUESTION.

IT WAS AROUND THEN THAT EIJI STOPPED BY THE LAB FOR A VISIT ONE DAY.

I WONDER IF YOU COULD USE YOUR RESEARCH TO CURE SENA!

NO.
I HADN'T
REALLY
FORGOTTEN.

THE FIRST WISHES TO BE GRANTED WILL BE **YOURS AND SENA'S**, EIJI.

OKAY!

RIGHT...
I'LL JUST BE A BIT LONGER, EIJI. WAIT OVER HERE.

IT WAS FOR SENA'S SAKE THAT I DOVE INTO THAT RESEARCH.








DO
(BOOM)
ドドド

AND NOW, I'VE GOT TO TAKE RESPONSI-BILITY FOR IT ALL BY GIVING MY LIFE?

IS THAT IT...?

ZUKI (THROB)

YOU DID IT ALL FOR MY SAKE?

THE GREAT DESTRUCTION HAPPENED BECAUSE OF ME?

ZUKI

ZUKI

NO.

I BROUGHT ABOUT THE DESTRUC-TION. YOU WEREN'T TO BLAME.

SENA.

THE MOST IMPORTANT TAKEAWAY FROM WHAT I'VE TOLD YOU...

OOOO (WHOOSH)

-ZUKIN

ZUKIN

AHH ...

BACK THEN, THE GATE WAS ON THE VERGE OF OPENING, BUT IT WAS DAMAGED AND KEPT CLOSED BY THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION.

...IS THAT THE FIRST TWO PEOPLE TO GAIN ABILI-TIES...

ZUKI

IT ALL COMES BACK TO THE PROBLEM THAT OCCURRED THEN.

...WERE YOU AND EIJI.

DON'T REMEM-BER!

GRRR.

!?

ZUKIN (THROB)

AND THERE'S THE CULPRIT!

ILLEGAL DIGGER!

BAN (LUNGE)

ORDER!

UNTIL I CORRECT THE MISTAKE FROM BACK THEN...

...THE GATE CANNOT BE OPENED!

WHAT...IS THIS.....?

IT'S...

DOKUN (BADUM)

"REMEMBER."

SENA !!!

BACK THEN, YOU...

I.....

RIN'S BLADE RUSHED IN TO CUT THROUGH THE CONFUSION...

...WITH PERFECT, UNAVOID-ABLE TIMING!

RIGHT AT HIS CERVICAL VERTE-BRAE...

...BUT IT DIDN'T CONNECT.

DON (POW)

I REMEM-BER.....

BIG BROTHER, I...

Subject 29:END

WH-WHOA, HOLD ON. THAT'S TOO WIDE.

COLONEL!? IS THAT THE RANGE OF HONMA Q'S ABILITY...!?

WE'RE TALKING ABOUT A 200-METER RADIUS HERE!

OOO (WHOOSH)

<YEAH!>

TCH ...!

DAMN YOU, GENNAI... SLOWING US DOWN JUST TO BUY YOURSELF MORE TIME?

COLO-NEL! WE CAN'T DRIVE PAST THIS POINT !!

WE'LL SALVAGE THIS MISSION YET!

WE'RE HEADING DOWN TO HELP, COLONEL!

GYA

GYA

(REV)

GYA

GYA

GYA

IF BUYING TIME GIVES HIM SOME KIND OF ADVANTAGE ...

...THEN WE OUGHT TO SMASH THROUGH BY FORCE.

BUT TO USE OUR TRUMP CARD SO SOON...

NO. TOO EARLY!

YOU'RE SQUIRMING LIKE A LOWLY CATERPILLAR ...

... LIEUTENANT COLONEL KUNOU.

GU (STRAIN) GU

ぐぐ..

GUH ...

WITHOUT THEIR SENSES INTACT, MOST PEOPLE CAN'T EVEN STAND.

GOOD-BYE...

WHAT DO I DO!!?

.....!

TCH.

BA (TURN)

...LITTLE CATER-PILLAR!

GASHA (KACHAK)

!?

Subject 30: "Deception"
Place: Nara Heijoukyou

IS THAT EIJI!!?

EIJI-SAMA, A BIT MORE TO THE RIGHT!

THAT'S WHERE WE'LL FIND THE ENEMY!

SOUNDS GOOD. "SMASH THROUGH THAT ROOF"!!!

NOT SURE WHAT SORT OF ORDER AWAITS US, BUT ……!!!!!!

BIND

DOMINATOR!!!

ORDER!!!

(WHOOSH)

DOGGAA (KERSMASH)

IT'S ALL OVER IF WE CRUSH THE GUY'S BODY!!!

DO (RUMBLE)

DO

DO

DO

DO

GWAH!?

WH.....

...AAAAT !?!?

HIIRAGI'S NOT HERE... LOOKS LIKE I CAUGHT UP TO MARI, WHO WENT ON AHEAD.

B-1

THAT MEANS SENA MUST BE ON A LOWER LEVEL!

B-1

!

MARI!

WAIT, EIJI-SAMA!

DA (DASH)

OKAY. YOU TAKE CARE OF MARI, IYO! HIIRAGI AND THE OTHERS SHOULDN'T BE FAR BEHIND.

THAT FOOL! DID HE REALLY MANIPULATE GRAVITY IN ORDER TO LEAP FROM OSAKA TO NARA...?

MAKE SURE YOU SURVIVE. FOR OUR CHILD'S SAKE.

HMPH.

MAYBE IT REALLY IS DANGEROUS FOR ME TO GET NEAR GENNAI...

HIIRAGI MIGHT BE RIGHT ABOUT ALL THIS...!

STILL ...!

AHH.

YEAH!

OF COURSE I WILL!

元伊勢

!?

WHAT'RE THOSE...!?

TUBES?

SIGN: MOTOISE

WHO'S GONNA SAVE SENA IF NOT ME?

GOPO (BLUB)

PO

PO

ゴポポポ…

IS THIS ...!?

!

ZAN (SKID)

ザッ

AND ACCORDING TO THIS...

DAMMIT...! IF EIJI GETS TO GENNAI'S LOCATION FIRST...

THAT'S ANOTHER CONDITION NEEDED TO SET OFF A GREAT DESTRUCTION. WE HAVE TO STOP HIM!

COULD SOMETHING HAVE HAPPENED TO BENKEI !?

SHIT. EIJI ALWAYS SHOWS UP AT THE WORST TIME ...!

ENERGY IS FLOWING FROM ALL FIVE OF THE PENTAGRAM'S SPIRITUAL SPOTS— INCLUDING MOTOISE...

Motoise

Current Location
Nara Heijoukyou

BUT HOW!?

Kumano

COLONEL!

When you find Gennai, gun him down immedi-ately!

!

YOU CAN'T LET YOURSELF GET PLAYED BY HIM!

ZAZA

HEY.

I'M HERE.

ZAZAZA (FSSHH)

ZAZAZA

HMPH... EIJI.

ZAZA

WE'VE BEEN WAITING FOR YOU.

I FINALLY FOUND YOU.....!

SENA...!!!

ZAZAZA (FSSHH)

ZAZAZA

!!?

DOZAN (WHIP)

SHE'S AGREED TO HELP ME OUT WITH MY EXPER-IMENT.

I WAS JUST HAVING A CHAT WITH SENA, EIJI.

!?

WHOA.

ZAA (SPLASH)

WHAT IS THIS ...!?

ZA
SENA'D NEVER BE YOUR ACCOMPLICE IN SETTING OFF ANOTHER GREAT DESTRUCTION !
ZA
ZAN
HUHH ...!!?

GASHI (GRAB)
WHAT'S THIS CRAZY BASTARD TALKING ABOUT NOW...!?
TCH!
GYUO (CRUSH)
YOU THINK I'M LYING? ASK HER YOURSELF, THEN.
ALL THAT REMAINS NOW IS YOU, EIJI.
YOU TOO WILL BECOME MY TOOL!

ZAAAAA (WHIRL)

ORDER!!!!!

O (WHOOSH)

!

ZAN (SPLASH)

"CURRENT CONTROL" !!!

TA (TMP)

SENA ...!

ALL RIGHT. JUST GOTTA GET HIM AWAY FROM HER...!

BIG...

.....

...
BROTHER
...?

BUT WAIT. HER EYES... GENNAI'S NOT IN CONTROL ANYMORE ...?

GOOD... DOESN'T LOOK LIKE SHE'S HURT OR ANYTHING.

!?

WE'VE GOTTA GET OUTTA HERE, SENA!

D.....

JIWA (QUIVER)

WHA—!?

YORO (WOBBLE) 30...

.....

DO (PIERCE)

DIE.

YOU WON'T GET IN PAPA'S WAY.

WH
.....

WHY
...?

RIN'S KATANA ooo!?

BIG BROTHER.

I HAVE TO STAY IN HERE IF WE'RE TO OPEN THE GATE!

SO STOP INTER-FERING.

WHAT'S GOING ON.....!? !?!?!?

LOSING BLOOD ....!

YOU'RE ...

... JOKING, RIGHT ...!?

ZAA (RISE)

BUT YOU STILL HAVE A ROLE TO PLAY IN ALL OF THIS...

...SO I WILL MAKE YOU BEHAVE, EVEN IF I HAVE TO RIP YOU LIMB FROM LIMB!

SENA IS COOPER-ATING.

ZABA (SPLASH)

IT'S JUST LIKE I SAID.

ZA (FSSHH)

ZA

ZA

ZA

DON (BAM)

NOW, MY "MIND SET" ...

...."CONTROL EIJI"!!!

WHY?

SENAAAAA

!!

DOGAA (KAPOW)

ORDER!!!

HE.....

...GOT ME...!!!

I'M UNDER HIS CON-TROL.

"DON'T MOVE"! FOOL.

OR DO YOU WANT TO DIE FROM THOSE WOUNDS ?

BURA (DANGLE)

GUH ...

BURA

NO, NO, NO!

GAHH ...

SENA WOULD NEVER DO THIS...!

...VERY WELL. STARTING UP, GENNAI-SAMA.

!

HATORI, THE FIGHT WENT JUST AS PLANNED.

LET'S BEGIN.

ZUKIN (THROB)

UGHH ...!

SENA ....!!?

I'M SURE... HE'S STILL MANIPULAT-ING HER...!

GOTTA STOP HIM...!

POTA (DRIP)

POTA

LET THE EXPER-IMENT BEGIN!

GASHA (CLAK)

GASHA

GASHAN

DON (BAM)

AH……!!!

GOTTA SAVE SENA...!

CAN'T LET HIM MAKE SENA HIS GUINEA PIG...!!!

DO

DO

DO

DO (RUMBLE)

THE ENERGY FROM THE INVERTED PENTAGRAM IS FLOWING DIRECTLY INTO SENA.

SHE IS THE KEY THAT WILL POUR POWER INTO THE GATE!

"MIND SET"
GENNAI'S CONTROL-BASED ABILITY. ALLOWS HIM TO CONTROL THE HEARTS AND MINDS OF ANYONE HE SEES OR TOUCHES WITHIN A TWO-METER RADIUS OF HIMSELF. (AFTER THE EFFECT ACTIVATES, IT WILL REMAIN EVEN IF THE TARGET MOVES OUTSIDE THE RADIUS.) HIS WISH WAS "TO BRING HARMONY AND HAPPINESS TO ALL OF HUMANITY."

(WHOOSH)

...NOW I'VE JUST GOTTA SMACK HIM WITH THIS THING...!

ORDER!!

!

HMPH.

(BAKIKI) (WRENCH)

(SHINK) KIN

"HAND-RAIL, BREAK OFF!!!"

DAMN. FORGOT ABOUT HIM...!

JUUBEE...!?

ZAN (SLASH)

...GOTTA SAVE...

...SENA.

ZA (SKID) ZA

...I'VE...

ADMIT IT TO YOURSELF. THE ONE WHO STABBED YOU WAS SENA HERSELF.

EIJI...

...WHO ARE YOU FIGHTING, EXACTLY?

SHE'S NO LONGER IN NEED OF RESCUING.

THE ONE WHO AGREED TO DONATE WHAT REMAINS OF HER LIFE TO THIS EXPERIMENT...

...WAS SENA.

LET'S EVEN SAY YOU SOMEHOW MANAGE TO CURE HER. THEN WHAT?

HYPOTHET-ICALLY... IF YOU TOOK SENA AWAY FROM HERE, WHAT THEN?





HOW WOULD YOU LIVE ON IN THE WORLD?

SEVERAL BILLION PEOPLE STILL HOLD A GRUDGE AGAINST THE TWO OF YOU.

EIJI.



THESE TEN YEARS, I'VE ALWAYS PROTECTED SENA...

THE WHOLE TIME, SHE ALWAYS BELIEVED IN ME...

YOUR METHODS WILL NEVER ALLOW YOU TO TRULY SAVE SENA.

SO NOW ...

...WHY ...?

Subject 30:END

OO (WHOOSH)

WHAT... IS HE SAYING...?

EIJI, SENA FINALLY REMEMBERED.

SHE REMEMBERED WHAT YOU DID TEN YEARS AGO!

...IS THAT EIJI'S DOING?

THE SPIRITUAL ENERGY'S FLOW IS SLOWING.

GOPO (BLUB)

IT LOOKS LIKE YOUR PRESENCE HERE IS THROWING SENA'S EMOTIONS INTO TURMOIL...

...SO I'LL NEED TO ASK YOU TO LEAVE FOR NOW.

GU (GRIP)

SE...NA.....

WAIT ...

...SE...

I...

...DON'T CARE..... ANYMORE.

WH—

Subject 31: "The Truth"
Place: Nara Heijoukyou

WHY...?

WHY'D SHE TURN AWAY FROM ME .....?

YOU'RE SIMPLY BEING DECEIVED, SENA...

NO WAY .....

GOPO (BLUB)

PO

TEN YEARS AGO...?

...I'VE GOT NO REASON TO GO ON LIVING.

WITH-OUT YOU...

WHAT HAPPENED ...?

...BETWEEN ME AND SENA...?

WHAT HAPPENED BACK THEN...

GOPO

BO (FLOAT)

BO

...EIJI?

SO THIS IS WHERE YOU GIVE UP...

...OR YOU'LL MISS YOUR LAST CHANCE TO TURN THINGS AROUND.

DON'T GO SOFT ON ME NOW...

!

LOOK.

DAISY ...!?


R-r-r-r

HAA.

HAA.

HAA ...

POTA (DRIP)

POTA

WH- WHY'RE YOU HERE, RIN...!?

ZA (DRAG)

BUH.

GAHHH.

COUGH.

COUGH.

DON (BAM)

HAA.

YOU.....

AND WHAT ABOUT SENA-CHAN!?

DON'T TELL ME YOU FAILED AND WOUND UP LIKE THIS ...!?!?

... STUPID IDIOT, EIJI...!

TRYING TO RUN OFF AND DIE AGAIN WITHOUT MY PER-MISSION ...!!

'COS GENNAI'S PROBABLY PLANNING TO DO THE SAME TO ME...KILL ME AND LEAVE ME TO DROWN HERE.

THEN LET'S GET MOVING.

GU (TUG)

OW ... I STILL HAVEN'T REGEN-ERATED.

REBIRTH FIRE!!!

JUOOO (SIZZLE)

NO...

.....

SO COME ON!

SENA.....

I MEAN, YEAH, BUT...

GU

JUOO

NO.

I CAN'T GO BACK.

HUH?

JUOOO

H-HOLD THE PHONE, EIJI.

WHAT'S THAT MEAN? THIS IS NO TIME TO DOUBT YOURSELF.

WHERE'S THAT BATTLE CRY OF "SENAAAA!" I'M ALWAYS HEARING...?

WHAT'S WRONG!?

SENA TURNED AWAY FROM ME...

OOOO (SIZZLE)

...SO I...

...DON'T KNOW WHAT TO DO ANYMORE.

WHAT I SHOULD DO IS PROTECT SENA TO THE END.

BUT IF SHE REJECTS ME...?

BUT.....

BA (BAM)

YEAH, I KNOW ALL THAT ...!!!!!!

GET UP ALREADY! SENA-CHAN'S ABOUT TO DIE, FOR ALL WE KNOW ...!!!

NOW HE'S DISILLU-SIONED !!!

WHY DO I ALWAYS GOTTA DEAL WITH HIS CRAP...?

I SAID GET UP.

ZURU (DRAG)

ズル

ZURU

ズル

SO UNCOOL.

PAN
(SLAP)

!

EIJI.

LEMME SAY THIS MUCH.

FUWA (FLOAT)

YOU'VE GOTTA MAKE A CHOICE.

WILL YOU SAVE SENA OR NOT?

TO SAVE HER, YOU'VE GOTTA RIP HER OUTTA THAT CON-TRAPTION...

GO (RUMBLE)

GO

GO

...BECAUSE IT'S EATING AWAY AT HER LIFE FORCE.

GENNAI'S GOT ONE GOAL—TO OPEN THAT GATE!

GO

GO

GO

GO

GO

GO

IT'LL BE EVEN MORE CHAOTIC THAN THE GREAT DESTRUCTION!

GO

GO

GO

GO

ONCE THE GATE IS FULLY OPEN...

...THE WISHES OF EVERYONE ON THIS PLANET WILL BE GRANTED!

GO (RUMBLE)

...GENNAI HOSHI-MIYA IS RIGHT OVER THERE!!!

THE MAN I'VE PURSUED FOR THE PAST TEN YEARS...

CHA (CHAK)

I'VE FINALLY CORNERED YOU, GENNAI.

FINALLY...

APOL-OGIES, HIIRAGI.

I DON'T HAVE TIME TO HUMOR YOU AT THE MOMENT.

SU (STEP)

WHY DON'T YOU PLAY WITH JUUBEE INSTEAD?

IT'S JUUBEE YAGYU !!!

ZA (ZOOM)

DAMN ...

.....YOUUUU !!!

HE'S UNDEFENDED IN HIS IMMEDIATE SURROUNDINGS:

WHICH MEANS ...!

AYAHITO'S REPORT TOLD ME ALL I NEED TO KNOW ABOUT THIS GUY'S WEAKNESS...!

AYAHITO!

ZUZU (RUSH)

RIGHT!

I'LL SHOOT TOWARD HIM...

NU (MELD)

...AND HAVE THE BULLET WARP IN CLOSE...!

KIN (SHINK)

A TWO-SWORD STYLE...

REALLY!!? !!?

FUWA (FLOAT)

WILL YOU DEFY SENA AND SAVE HER?

OR HONOR HER WISHES AND STOP TRYING?

CHOOSE NOW, EIJI.

...SOMETHING INSIDE ME IS SOUNDING THE ALARM. NOT THAT I HAVE PROOF, BUT IT'S SAYING...

OF COURSE I WANNA SAVE SENA...!

...IF I GO DOWN THIS PATH, I'LL LOSE EVERY-THING.

BUT...

RIN.

GO (RUMBLE)
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
THE GATE IS OPENING.
GO
GO
SHAME. IT ONLY HAD A BIT MORE TO GO.
GO
GO
YUP. EIJI SURE IS AN INTERESTING ONE.
IN THESE PAST TEN YEARS...
...THERE'S NEVER BEEN ANYONE ELSE WHO MADE A WISH QUITE LIKE HIS.

YOU ALWAYS WERE AN IMPATIENT CHILD.

YOU WON'T WAIT IT OUT?

GO

...SO WHY?

I TOLD YOU TO STAY BACK.....

!

.....

I SAID YOU DON'T NEED TO PRO-TECT ME ANY-MORE ...

WHY DON'T YOU UNDER-STAND THAT !!?

DON (BAM)

BECAUSE TEN YEARS AGO, I MADE A PROMISE ...

...THAT I WOULD PROTECT YOU NO MATTER WHAT, SENA!

DAMN...THE ENERGY FLOW IS THROWN OFF WHEN SENA IS FLUSTERED...!

ORDER! "EIJI AND RIN, STOP!!"

GOPON (BLUB)

LET'S MOVE, RIN! TIME TO RIP SENA OUTTA THERE!!!!

DA (DASH)

!

EIJI OVERWROTE MY CONTROL WITH HIS OWN...!?

RIGHT!

NOT A PROB-LEM.

THIS IS MORE LIKE THE YOU I KNOW ANYWAY!

SORRY, RIN, BUT I NEED YOU TO HELP ME OUT!

A REMATCH, THEN...

!

ZA (SKID)

I'M FEELING BETTER ABOUT ALL THIS TOO...

YAGYU SHIN-KAGE STYLE—

DOUBLE DIMEN-SION SWORD!!!

...EIJI HOSHI-MIYA!!!

ZAN (SLASH)

KA (FLASH)

BA (TURN)

HE'S GOT NO DEAD ANGLES TO EXPLOIT ANYMORE ...!!!

TCH. BE CAREFUL, EIJI...!

ZUBA (SLICE)

JUOO (SIZZLE)

TCH...

I'VE SUFFERED FOR TEN YEARS .....!!!

.....

!

IT DOESN'T MATTER !!!!!!

RIGHT.

DON'T UNDER-ESTIMATE ME !!!!!!!!!

DO (POW)

JUOOO (SIZZLE)

I'M THE VILLAIN WHO SLAUGHTERED BILLIONS ...!

A PIECE OF SHIT WHO OUGHTA DIE TO MAKE UP FOR IT!

STAY ...

... BACK ...

STILL ...

...WHATEVER SINS I MUST BEAR, NO MATTER HOW UNFOR-GIVABLE ...!!!

STOP RIGHT THERE, EIJI!

OOO (WHOOSH)

I HOPE...

...WE CAN BE LIKE THIS FOREVER.

I CAN'T LET SENA GO...

...BIG BROTHER ...!

STAY BACK.....

I HAVE TO...

ooo

...COVERING FOR ME.

JUST STOP...

I WAS THE ONE WHO CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION TEN YEARS AGO!

PI
(SKLIT)

Subject 31 : END

...BENKEI HAD FALLEN INTO A TRAP SET IN MOTOISE BY THE SECURITY COUNCIL.

WHILE EIJI AND COMPANY WERE BATTLING GENNAI...

TO THINK...HE WAS JUST ANOTHER ONE OF THE SECURITY COUNCIL'S PAWNS!

GUH.

BARA

BARA (CRUMBLE)

GUH ...

NNN.

GASHI (GRAB)

I THOUGHT HE MIGHT TAKE US OUT OF HERE, BUT IT WAS A MISTAKE TO RELY ON THAT OLD MAN...!

THIS IS BAD.

ドドドド

ooo

NOW EVERY POINT OF THE PENTAGRAM HAS BEEN LIBERATED...!

ooo (WHOOSH)

ドド

GO (RUMBLE)

GO

GO GO

GO

ooo

IT WASN'T YOU WHO CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION TEN YEARS AGO, BIG BROTHER ...

...IT WAS ME!

WE HAD EVERY-THING REVERSED !

EI...

WHA ooooooooo?

ZAA (WHIP)

ORDER!!

SENA AND I WERE "REVERSED" !!?

REVERSED...?

WHAT'S THAT S'POSED TO MEAN!?

GAKA (CLASH)

THERE'S NO ROOM FOR INTERPRETATION. IT'S JUST AS SENA SAYS.

YOU WEREN'T THE ONE WHO CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUCTION TEN YEARS AGO.

Subject 32: "Because I Want Us to Be Together Forever"
Place: Nara Heijoukyou

BASHII (ZING)

HUH!?

SENA WAS!!!

ALL THAT STUFF TEN YEARS AGO?

YOU'RE REMEM-BERING IT WRONG.



ZUZU (PRESS)

THAT CAN'T BE TRUE...!

IF SENA'S THE ONE WHO DID IT, THEN WHY DO I REMEMBER IT DIFFER-ENTLY...?

ZUZU

WE BOTH USE CONTROL ABILITIES... AND HE'S PUSHING ME BACK ...!?

IS YOUR LITTLE SISTER...STILL WEIGHING ON YOUR MIND?

AND THAT TOO...

IS THIS WHAT DAISY MEANT WHEN SHE SAID THAT...?

THE AVATAR ON MY HEAD ...!?

.....!?

BAKIN (KRAK)

IT'S FALLING TO PIECES.

HMP.H.

THAT'S NOT TRUE.

YOU'RE WRONG !!!

YOU STOLE THAT ABILITY FROM SENA.

SENA DOESN'T EVEN HAVE AN ABILITY... DOMINATOR IS MY POWER AND MINE ALONE!!!

EIJI. THAT'S THE TRUTH EMBEDDED IN DAISY'S MEMORY BANKS!

I... STOLE IT...!?

SENA'S...

...WISH...

WHAT I DID!!?

OOOO (WHOOSH)

NOW, REMEM-BER!

REMEM-BER WHAT YOU DID BACK THEN!

AND WHAT SENA WISHED FOR, TEN YEARS AGO!

I WANT ME AND PAPA AND MAMA AND BIG BROTHER...

...TO BE TOGETHER FOREVER.

IT WAS JUST THE SORT OF WISH SENA WOULD MAKE. AMBIGUOUS IN ITS PURITY.



THAT DAY, SHE WAS GIVEN AN ABILITY STRONG ENOUGH TO CONTROL EVERYTHING.



TRAGICALLY, YOUNG SENA WAS INCAPABLE OF REINING IN HER NEW POWER.

THE GREAT DESTRUCTION WAS THE RESULT.

OOOO (WHOOSH)

IT'S OKAY, SENA. NOBODY SAW YOU DO THAT.

ZU

ZU (LOOM)

IT'S ALL THIS GUY'S FAULT MAMA'S GONE...!

NOW MAMA'S GONE...!

SENA...

IF I KNEW THIS WOULD HAPPEN...

...I NEVER WOULDA MADE THAT DUMB WISH...!

AHHHH!

NO, BUT...!

あぁっ

ALL DAD WANTED WAS TO DO SOMETHING ABOUT SENA'S ILLNESS...

...BUT HE FAILED.

AND SENA WAS JUST TRYING TO MAKE HER WISH COME TRUE...

...BUT THAT FAILED TOO.

RIGHT. IT JUST GOT MESSED UP. SENA'S NOT THE BAD GUY HERE.

I DON'T WANT HER TO BE SAD ANY-MORE, SO I GOTTA...

YOUR TURN, EIJI. WHAT'S YOUR WISH?

OOOOOO

キキキ

OOO (WHOOSH)

EIJI, THAT'S HOW YOU CAME TO STEAL SENA'S MEMORIES AND HER NEW ABILITY!

.....

I.....

IN ORDER TO HIDE THE TRUTH FROM HER, YOU EVEN MADE HER FORGET WHAT I LOOKED LIKE!

ILLEGAL DIGGER!!!

"ILLEGAL DIGGER"
EIJI'S ORIGINAL ABILITY (EFFECTS LIMITED TO SENA AND EIJI ONLY). IT ALLOWED HIM TO STEAL SENA'S MEMORIES AND ABILITY.

GASSHAN (CLAMP)

"TO TAKE THE BLAME FOR WHAT SENA DID"!

...
RE-
MEM
...

BISHI
(CRACK)

DON'T
...

I
REMEMBER NOW.....
!!!

...
BER
...

BAKIN
(SNAP)

BISHI

GWAHH
...

BISHI

THE GATE IS STRONGER THAN DAISY, EVEN, AND WHEN IT OPENS TO THE WORLD ON THE OTHER SIDE...

...MY WISH CAN FINALLY COME TRUE.

BIG BROTHER. BY USING THIS DEVICE THAT PAPA HAS PREPARED, I HAVE A FEELING THAT EVERYTHING WILL GO RIGHT THIS TIME.

BARA

BARA (CRUMBLE)

THAT'S NOT SOMETHING SENA WOULD SAY!

NO ...!

DON'T WORRY. I WON'T FAIL THIS TIME.

MY WISH IS...

..."TO HAVE SENA'S WISH COME TRUE"!

SENA oooh!?

SO ME AND PAPA AND MAMA AND YOU, BIG BROTHER, CAN BE TOGETHER FOREVER ...!

GO (RUMBLE) ゴゴ
GO
GO
ゴゴゴゴ
GO
GO

NO WAY WAS SENA-CHAN REALLY BEHIND THE GREAT DESTRUCTION.

NO WAY...

DOTA (THUMP) ドサッ

UGH .....

...MY GRUDGE AGAINST EIJI THIS WHOLE TIME WAS TOTALLY OFF BASE!?

THAT WOULD MEAN...

...BUT THEY WON'T MAKE IT IN TIME.

I SENT NEHARA WITH THE MOBILE TASK FORCE IN CASE WE NEEDED TO DESTROY THE ENTIRE FACILITY...

CHA (CHAK) カチャ

OH NO, THE GATE'S ABOUT TO OPEN.

HIIRAGI !?

I'LL HAVE TO CUT THIS OFF AT THE SOURCE.

ZA (STEP)

WHAT'S THE PLAN HERE ...!?

EVEN SO...

.....

GO GO

YOU KNOW IT TO BE TRUE, EIJI, SO STAND DOWN. YOU'RE THE ONE WHO'S HAD THINGS ALL WRONG.

EVERY WISH WILL BE GRANTED THIS TIME!

GO

BEHOLD.

THE GATE OPENS!

THE ONE I'VE GOTTA PRO-TECT...

...IS THE SENA HOSHIMIYA WHO'S HERE IN REALITY, RIGHT IN FRONT OF ME!

I DON'T GIVE A SHIT ABOUT YOUR LITTLE DREAM WORLD!

O (WHOOSH)

YOU PIECE-OF-SHIT FATHER !!!

YOU'RE WRONG, DAM-MIT!!!

CLEARLY, YOU'RE NOT. ANY IDIOT CAN SEE THAT!

STOP THIS, EIJI. I'M ALSO TRYING TO PROTECT SENA!

OOOO (WHOOSH)

GU (STRAIN) GU

URGHH...!?

HE'S PUSHING BACK...!?

A TEMPORARY SACRIFICE. ONCE WE SUCCEED, ALL OUR WISHES WILL—

YOU'RE KILLING YOUR OWN KID...!

WHAT KIND OF PARENT CARES MORE ABOUT AN EXPERIMENT THAN THE LIFE OF THEIR OWN CHILD !?!?!?!

LIS-TEN...

...TO ME!!

KUWA (ROAR)

...THAT'LL MAKE SENA HAPPY?

YOU REALLY THINK...

ADMIT IT...!!!

I KNOW THAT.

DAD, YOU'RE NOT REALLY TRYING TO MAKE SENA'S WISH COME TRUE.

YOU JUST WANT TO FIX WHAT HAPPENED TEN YEARS AGO!

YOU FAILED. DAD!!!

DON (POW)

YOU DON'T NEED TO TELL ME. I KNOW THAT BETTER THAN ANYONE ELSE.

BA (BAM)

I HAVE TO SHOOT SENA HOSHI-MIYA!!!

...MY LIN-GERING RE-GRETS.

THIS IS ALL ABOUT ...

...THERE'S NO GOING BACK NOW.

BUT...

DAMN... I COULDN'T STOP IT!

GENNAI !?

FORGIVE ME, EIJI.

KA (FLASH)

DO (BOOM)

GOOON (RUMBLE)

I KNOW FULL WELL HOW FOOLISH I WAS.

BUT STILL, I WANTED TO SEE...

YOU CAN'T.

YOU WON'T MAKE IT IN TIME!

BA (LUNGE)

I NEVER THOUGHT YOU WERE A FOOL!

EIJI!

GO

...A WORLD OF HAPPINESS.

DAD!!!!

(WHOOSH)

ON THAT DAY, THE WORLD WAS SHAKEN ONCE AGAIN.

Next Stop: Nagoya

Subject 32 : END

Carnage, gore, death upon death...

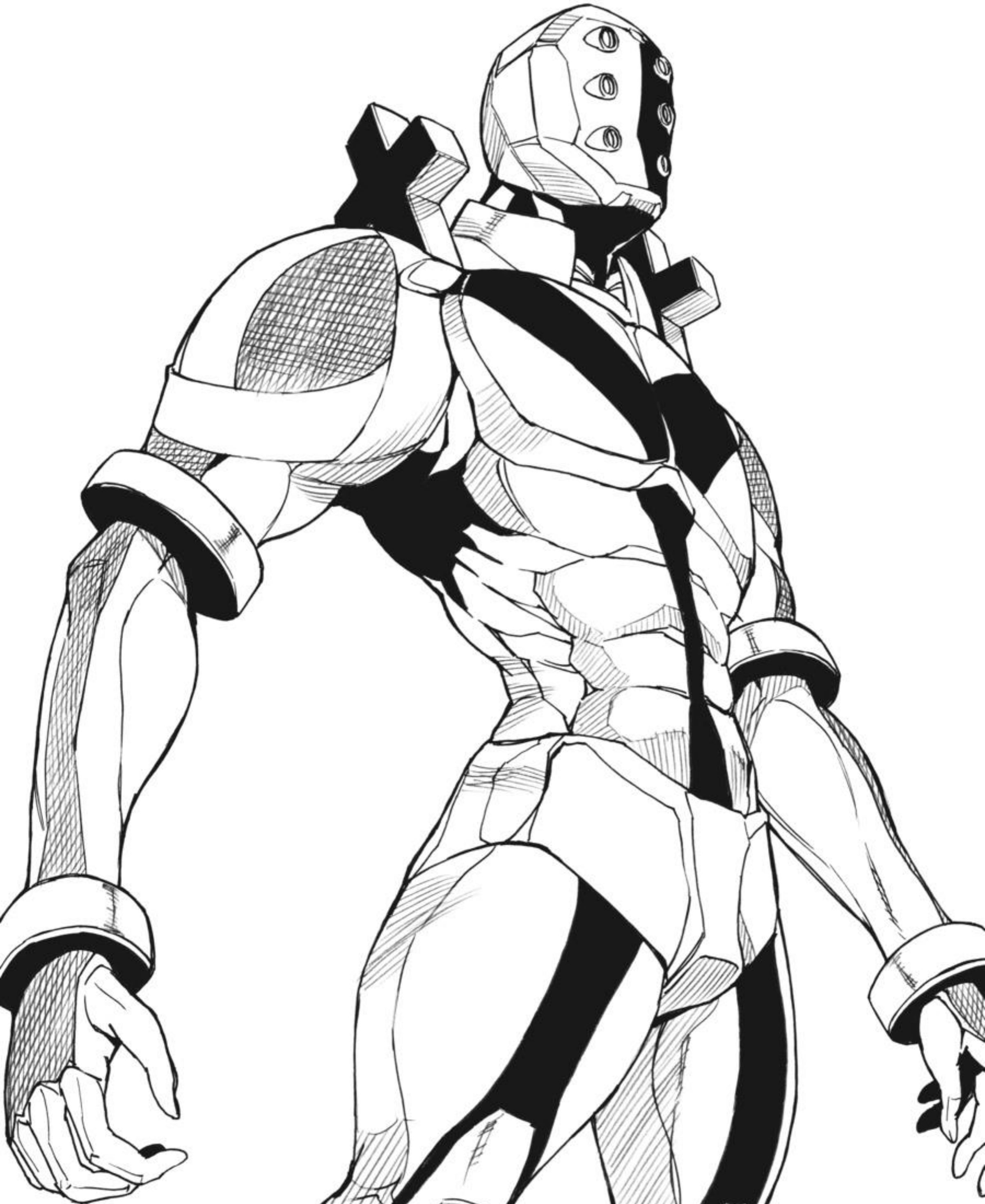
A second Great Destruction.

Eiji continues to take the blame for his sister, and Rin's feelings begin stirring now that she's no longer after Eiji for revenge...

The enemy is Sena Hoshimiya!!!

What's the next baffling atrocity she hopes to commit!?

Catch the chaotic Chubu Region arc in Volume 4!!





Translation: Caleb Cook • Lettering: Phil Christie

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, or persons, living or dead, is coincidental.

BIG ORDER Volume 6
© Sakae ESUNO 2014

First published in Japan in 2014 by KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged with KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo
through Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., Tokyo.

English translation © 2017 by Yen Press, LLC

Yen Press, LLC supports the right to free expression and the value of copyright. The purpose of copyright is to encourage writers and artists to produce the creative works that enrich our culture.

The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book without permission is a theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like permission to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), please contact the publisher. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Yen Press
1290 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10104

Visit us at yenpress.com
facebook.com/yenpress
twitter.com/yenpress
yenpress.tumblr.com
instagram.com/yenpress

First Yen Press eBook Edition: September 2017

Yen Press is an imprint of Yen Press, LLC.
The Yen Press name and logo are trademarks of Yen Press, LLC.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

ISBN: 978-0-316-43598-7 (ebook)

Sakae Esuno

07

BLEACH

PARENTAL ADVISORY
WARNING
EXPLICIT CONTENT

Subject 33

A CERTAIN DAY OF A CERTAIN MONTH, ABOUT THIRTY KILOMETERS FROM OSAKA, IN JAPAN'S NARA HEIJOUKYOU...

GO (RUMBLE)

ゴゴゴ

GO GO GO GO

ON THAT DAY, THE ENTIRE KANSAI REGION...

...WAS OBLITERATED.

Subject 33: “Reassuring Support, Wavering Heart”
Place: Nagoya

BIG ORDER 07

Sakae Esuno



BIG ORDER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

001 Subject 33: “Reassuring Support, Wavering Heart”
Place: Nagoya

043 Subject 34: “Apology”
Place: Nagoya

081 Subject 35: “Chaotic Emotions”
Place: Nagoya

105 Subject 35.5: “Iyo-sensei Is Very Worried”
Place: Nagoya

117 Subject 36: “Missing”
Place: Nagoya

155 Subject 37: “What Love Is”
Place: Shizuoka

YOUR METHODS WILL NEVER ALLOW YOU TO TRULY SAVE SENA.



Rin Kurenai (Second Lieutenant):
Lost both parents in the Great Destruction caused by Eiji ten years ago and has been plotting to kill him ever since. She's really cute but also a bit dumb.



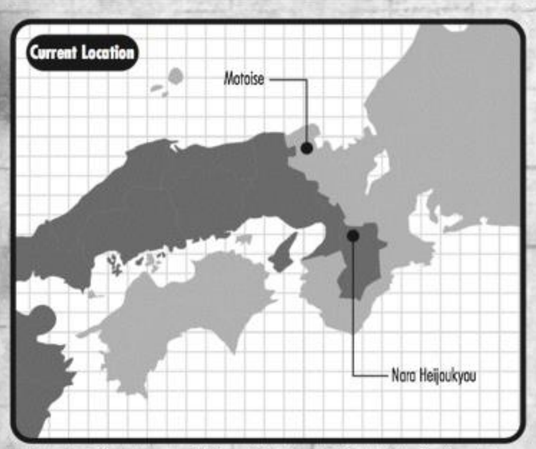
Rebirth Fire:
Rin's ability. She's essentially immortal thanks to her strong regenerative properties. She can also restore objects and other people to an undamaged state.



Gennai Hoshimiya:
Daisy's creator and Eiji and Sena's father. He attempted to cause a second Great Destruction, but...

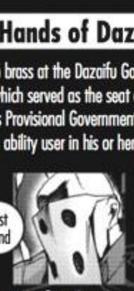


Hanzo Hatori:
A member of the United Nations Provisional Government Security Council and one of Gennai's cunning underlings.



At Matoise ▶ Benkei Narukami **At Nara Heijoukyou ▶** Eiji Hoshimiya, Rin Kurenai, Iyo, Yoshitsune Hiiragi, Mari Kunou, Sena Hoshimiya, Gennai Hoshimiya, Hanzo Hatori

Ten Hands of Dazaifu:
The top brass at the Dazaifu Government Offices, which served as the seat of power for Kyushu's Provisional Government. Each is a powerful ability user in his or her own right.



Raidou Fuwa
(Lieutenant Colonel)



Yoshitsune Hiiragi (Colonel):
As Colonel, he's the highest ranking member of the Ten Hands. Shrewd and competent.



Taikei Nehara
(Lieutenant Commander)



Mari Kunou (Lieutenant Colonel):
A tactician who works directly under Hiiragi. She has a way with words and a strong personality.



Kokudo Soumoku
(Captain)



Nene Minamoto
(Lieutenant Commander)



Benkei Narukami
(Lieutenant Colonel):
Has the ability to destroy anything down to the atomic level. Good-natured.



Lauryn Wright
(Captain)



Ayahito Sundan
(Lieutenant Commander):
Has the ability to teleport. He loves and respects Eiji.



Iyo (First Lieutenant):
Has the ability to make 100% accurate predictions. She's particularly fond of Eiji.

Characters & Story

This story begins when the world was destroyed.

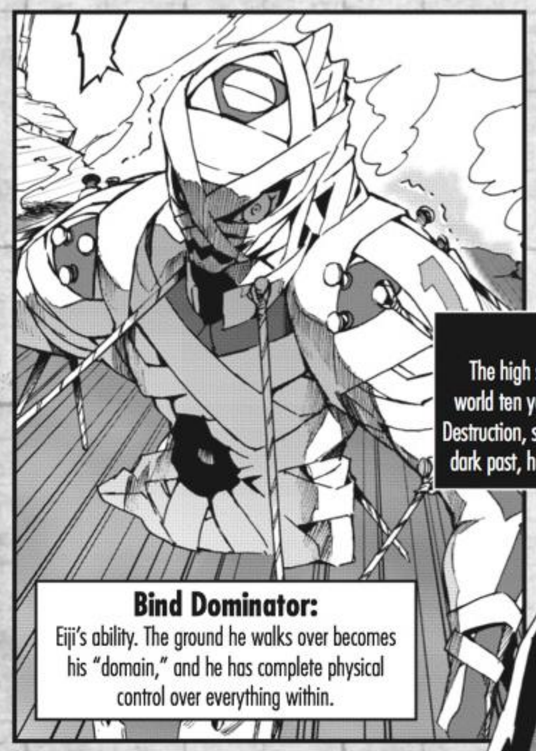
The world was brought to the verge of ruin when young Eiji Hoshimiya's wish was somehow granted. Ten years later, Eiji—now in high school—is attacked by an assassin named Rin Kurenai who knows about his past, and their battle reawakens his power. He's then set up as the enemy of the entire world as part of a scheme by the Dazaifu Government. Despite being Dazaifu's puppet, Eiji continues to risk it all to save his sister before her illness claims her life. At one point, Hiiragi declares that Eiji's father, Gennai—a man presumed dead—is seeking to cause another Great Destruction. Later, while fighting Gennai, Eiji learns that Sena actually caused the Great Destruction, while young Eiji had simply used his own newfound ability to cover for her by altering her memories, as well as his own. Nevertheless, Eiji wishes for Sena's happiness, but he's unable to stop Gennai from opening the gate in an effort to grant the wishes of all humanity...!



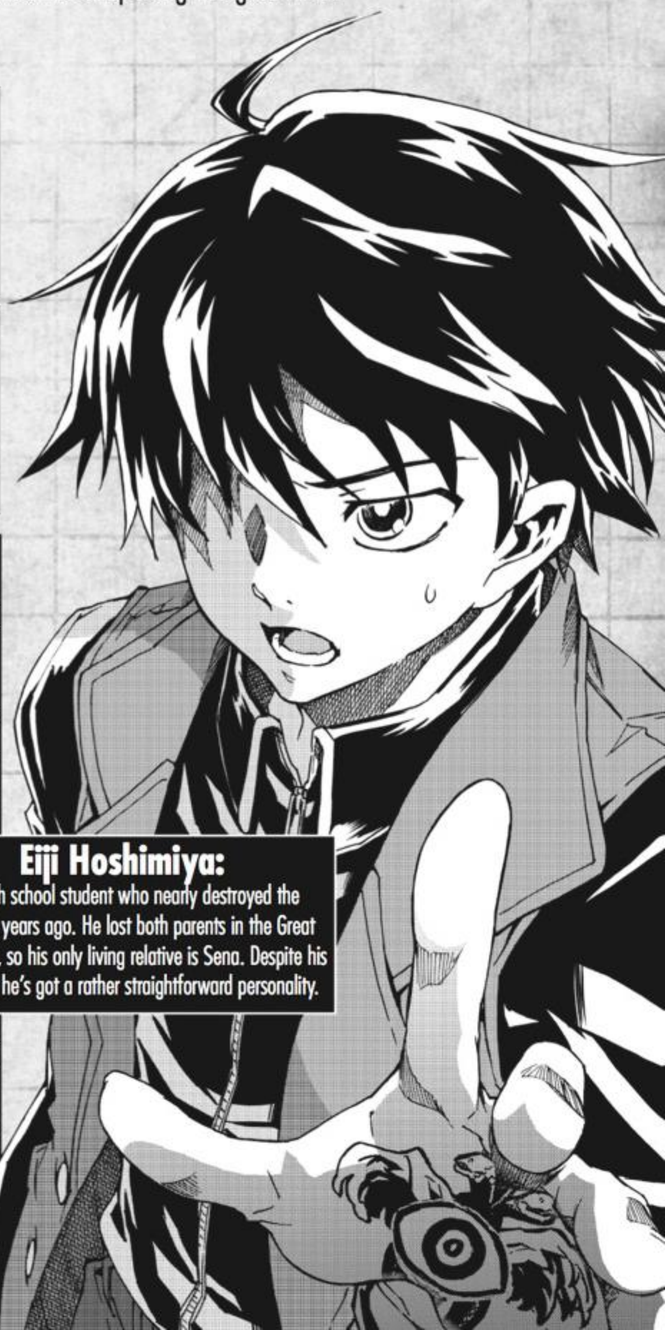
Sena Hoshimiya:
Eiji's stepsister and an Order herself. She doesn't have long to live, but she's very strong-willed.



Daisy:
A mysterious being who turns people's wishes into abilities.



Bind Dominator:
Eiji's ability. The ground he walks over becomes his "domain," and he has complete physical control over everything within.



Eiji Hoshimiya:
The high school student who nearly destroyed the world ten years ago. He lost both parents in the Great Destruction, so his only living relative is Sena. Despite his dark past, he's got a rather straightforward personality.

BIG
ORDER

THREE MONTHS LATER—NAGOYA

HEY, DID YOU HEAR?

THE "BODY SNATCHER" STRUCK AGAIN.

BODY SNATCHER ?

YOU SERIOUSLY HAVEN'T HEARD?

A CERTAIN HIGH SCHOOL

HE STEALS PEOPLE'S ARMS, LEGS, AND OTHER BODY PARTS.

HAA.

HAA.

HAA.

I HEARD THAT LAST WEEK, SOME SECOND-YEAR BOY GOT HIS WHOLE TORSO STOLEN AND DIED!

HAA.

HAA.

AH, RIN! ♪

I KNOW I TOLD HIM ABOUT THIS LUNCHTIME STRATEGY MEETING ...!

DAMN HIM ...!

DA (DASH)

THANKS ...

...MIYUKI-CHI!

STILL PLAYING DETECTIVE?

THE CLASS PRESIDENT'S UP ON THE ROOF.

SO THAT'S THE INFAMOUS VICE PRESIDENT, KURENAI...

LOTTA ENERGY, THAT GIRL...

SHE'S REALLY INTO ALL THIS BODY SNATCHER BUSINESS.

MAYBE A LITTLE TOO MUCH ENERGY FOR HER OWN GOOD...

BAN (SLAM)

→Inhale←

WAKE UP !!! !!!

EIJI !!!

FUWAA GYAWN

ふぁ〜ぁ

PIKU GTWITCH

ピクッ

YOU PROMISED WE'D MEET UP TO DISCUSS YOU-KNOW-WHAT.

DON'T "HUH" ME.

HUH...?

RIN?

FUWAA ふぃわぁ

WHAT'S UP?

RIGHT...

GUI グィグィ (RUB)

YOU'VE GOT CRUMBS ALL AROUND YOUR MOUTH.

HEY.

GARI (SCRATCH) ガリ GARI

YEAH, SURE...

THIS IS JUST HOW EIJI'S BEEN LATELY.

UGH...

KUSU クス KUSU (SNICKER) クス

SHAA (HISS)

...LIKE HE'S TOTALLY UNMOTI-VATED...

...ABSENT-MINDED...

COME ON...

STAND UP AND START WALKING.

ZURU (DRAG)

ズルズル ZURU

ISN'T THIS EMBAR-RASSING FOR YOU?

GA (POW)

GYAHH!?

POFU (FWUMP)

!

AS IF...

I'LL ASK YOU TO STOP INVOLVING EIJI WITH ALL THIS NONSENSE...

...RIN KURENAI!



FU FU.

IYO.....

...SENSEI.

...HE'S FORGOTTEN WHY...

1-A

...WE INFIL-TRATED THIS SCHOOL TO BEGIN WITH.

GUI (TUG)

HEY!?

いっ?

YOU'RE LOOKING AWFULLY FATIGUED, EIJI-KUN.

YOU REALLY OUGHT TO COME REST *WITH ME* IN THE NURSE'S OFFICE...!

GUI

I SAY EIJI JUST NEEDS A GOOD BREATH OF FRESH AIR OUTSIDE!

I HEARD YOU SNEAK THAT "WITH ME" IN THERE...!!

GRRR.

ZAWA

SERI-OUSLY? AGAIN?

MMMM.

ZAWA (CHATTER)

DOYO (GAB)

どよっ

OH.

WHAT'S GOING ON?

NNN...

TAKE YOUR HANDS OFF OF EIJI-KUN...

YOU FIRST...!

...RIN KURE-NAI.....!

GU

GU

GU (STRAIN)

EIJI...!?

WHICH OF US'RE YOU GONNA CHOOSE?

!

YEAH!

WA HA HA

AW YEAH, GET HER!

ANOTHER CATFIGHT OVER OUR SHITTY CLASS PRESI-DENT!

HA HA. HA!

BASICALLY, IT SEEMS THE ATTEMPT AT A SECOND GREAT DESTRUCTION FAILED.

MARI IS CURRENTLY INVESTIGATING WHY IT WAS CONTAINED TO THE EXTENT IT WAS.

KACHI (CLICK)

KACHI

KACHI

KACHI

BUT BACK THEN, I—

NAGOYA'S ALREADY UNDER MY CONTROL.

THERE'S A HUGE HOLE IN THE EARTH JUST A FEW KILOMETERS AWAY, BUT THE PEOPLE OF NAGOYA DON'T PAY IT ANY MIND...

...BECAUSE I ORDERED THEM NOT TO.

IT'S BEEN THREE WHOLE MONTHS.

I'M LIVING THIS SHAM OF A NORMAL LIFE.

OO. (WHOOSH)

GO (RUMBLE)
GO
GO
GO

RIN...

...
WHERE'S SENA?

THE CHANCES THAT SENA-CHAN WAS STILL OKAY, HAVING BEEN STRAPPED INTO THAT MACHINE...

CHIRA (GLANCE)
チラッ

EIJI AND I ONLY SURVIVED THANKS TO MY REBIRTH FIRE.

GO GO GO GO GO

STEEL WAS MELTING FROM THE HEAT IN THAT CRATER...

HIIRAGI AND AYAHITO WERE GONE... BUT...

HARD TO IMAGINE THEY'D PROTECT SENA-CHAN WHILE AIMING GUNS AT HER...THEY WERE OUT TO KILL HER INSTEAD.

THE BURNED HUSKS OF GENNAI AND JUUBEE...

IS SENA REALLY...?

WH-WHAT?

NO WAY SHE'S STILL ALIVE...!

SHE...

SHE MUST'VE RUN AWAY OR SOMETHING...

To: Rin Kurenai,
Iyo

Let's meet in the student council room to discuss our strategy at 7 P.M.

送信

PHONE: SEND

PI (BEEP)

GO (RUMBLE)

GO

OF COURSE. THIS IS SENA-CHAN WE'RE TALKING ABOUT.

I'LL HELP YOU SEARCH.

LEMME JUST STATE THE OBVIOUS AND GET IT OUTTA THE WAY.

THIS BODY SNATCHER HAS A MYSTERIOUS ABILITY. THEY'RE AN ORDER.

I'VE BEEN INVESTIGATING WHO THE CULPRIT COULD BE, AND I'VE GOT SOME ANSWERS.

SNEAKING INTO THIS SCHOOL REALLY PAID OFF.

LET'S GET THIS THING STARTED.

HOW'RE WE GONNA CAPTURE THE BODY SNATCHER!!?

YEAH.

THEY SAY SOMETHING ATTACKED HER OUT OF THE DARKNESS...

HUH? YOU MEAN ENOKO?

THE VICTIMS HAVE ALL BEEN STUDENTS AT THIS SCHOOL.

FIVE IN TOTAL...

...A SLENDER-LOOKING... PERSON, WEARING A HOOD.

PA (FLIP)

PA

SHE DIDN'T FEEL ANY PAIN, BUT...

...BEFORE SHE KNEW IT, HER WHOLE LEFT ARM WAS JUST GONE.

FINALLY, TWO DAYS AGO, A FIRST-YEAR BOY TURNED UP WITH NO HEAD OR TORSO...

THE INITIAL VICTIM WAS A FIRST-YEAR GIRL. HER LEFT ARM WAS STOLEN.

THEN TWO SECOND-YEAR GIRLS. ONE LOST HER RIGHT ARM, THE OTHER HER LEFT LEG.

AND A THIRD-YEAR GIRL HAD HER RIGHT LEG TAKEN.

AS FAR AS CASUALTIES GO...IT'S SAFE TO ASSUME THE BOY'S DEAD, GIVEN WHAT HE'S MISSING NOW, RIGHT?

WHICH MAKES HIS CASE THE EXCEPTION.

THE REAL PROBLEM IS THAT THIS IS NO TYPICAL ORDER.

I DIDN'T GIVE THEM THIS ABILITY.

SO SOMEONE ELSE IS OUT THERE CREATING ORDERS?

HIRA (FLAP)

WHOEVER THEY ARE, THEY'RE ONE OF THE "IRREGULARS" CREATED BY SOMEONE OR SOMETHING AFTER THE DESTRUCTION IN NARA THREE MONTHS AGO!

MORE THAN LIKELY, THE REMAINING SECURITY COUNCIL MEMBERS ARE TO BLAME.

OR IT COULD EVEN BE SENA-CHAN HERSELF.

"THE CULPRIT RESIDES ABOVE A WHITE TRIANGLE"... BESIDE "TWO STRIPES"... WHERE "RIPPLING WATER" CAN BE HEARD.

YEAH.

I NEVER THOUGHT YOU WERE THE TYPE TO TELL COMFORT-ING LIES.

...ARE YOU OKAY WITH THIS, RIN?

SU (STEP)

I'M ONLY GOING ALONG WITH IT BECAUSE I BELIEVE IT'S COMFORTING FOR EIJI-SAMA TO KEEP SEARCHING, WHETHER SHE'S OUT THERE OR NOT...

...BUT IT WILL HAVE TO COME TO AN END EVENTU-ALLY.

EVEN WHEN I ATTEMPT TO DOWSE HER LOCATION DIRECTLY, THERE'S NO RESPONSE.

SENA-SAMA IS MORE THAN LIKELY GONE FOREVER .....

HOW-EVER...

:

GOOD WORK, AND THANK YOU, SECOND LIEUTENANT RIN.

NOW IT'S MY TURN...

PITA (HALT)

ピタ

...I...

...WILL NEVER ACKNOWLEDGE YOU AS HIS LOVER OR MISTRESS.

ZAZA (FSSHH)

ﾊﾞﾊﾞ...

...WE'RE TRYING TO FIND THE CULPRIT'S HOUSE.

THE HINTS ARE "WHITE TRIANGLE" AND "TWO STRIPES"...

PRETTY AMBIGUOUS, HUH. I'VE GOT NOTHING.

OKAY... SO...

DON'T EVEN THINK ABOUT IT.

EXCUSE ME, EIJI-SAMA...

WH-WHAT WAS THAT, RIN!?

KUWA (GRRR)

MAYBE WE SHOULD LOOK FOR A BUILDING WITH A WHITE, TRIANGULAR ROOF?

STOP MESSING AROUND AND GET TO SEARCHING.

WE'RE LOSING DAYLIGHT.

KI (ZING)

WAY MORE HOUSES IN THIS DIRECTION.

DUMMY.

I'LL SEARCH THE EAST.

VERY WELL. I'LL TAKE THE WEST SIDE.

HOLD ON... WAIT!?

ZA (STEP)

HUH?

WHITE ROOFS ARE A DIME A DOZEN AROUND HERE...

I WONDER IF WE'RE REALLY INTER-PRETING THE HINT RIGHT.

SO WHY'M I STILL ...?

I KNOW I CAN'T GET REVENGE BY GOING AFTER EIJI ANYMORE.

TEKU (TMP) TEKU

EVEN IF IYO HADN'T SAID ANYTHING ...

...I WAS ALREADY THINKING ABOUT IT. WHAT THE HELL AM I DOING HERE?

!

TA (TMP)

HEY.

WHY'RE YOU HERE, EIJI...!?

DID HE REALLY CHOOSE ME...!?

HUH!?

HAA.

HAA.

AH.

WHY...? 'COS YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WITH A MAP.

HAA.

...I'VE GOT SOMETHING TO TELL YOU.

.....

PLUS...

...

HA-HA...

LET'S ALSO LET IYO KNOW WHERE TO MEET UP.

WELL, DUH. WHAT WAS I THINK-ING?

I'M FEELING A LITTLE BETTER.

THANK YOU...

...RIN.

.....JUST STOP.

THAT'S NOT HOW IT IS.

...HMM? EIJI-SAMA'S NOT HERE?

MAYBE HE GOT LOST?

ZA (FWISH)

ZA
(FWISH)

!!?

SHUTA
(TMP)

CLUELESS
AS EVER.

...SO YOU INFILTRATED SAID SCHOOL TO INVESTIGATE. I'M WITH YOU THERE...

THE BODY SNATCHER'S GOING AFTER PEOPLE AT THE SCHOOL...

...DIDN'T YOU CONSIDER THE POSSIBILITY THAT YOU MIGHT BECOME THEIR NEXT TARGET?

...BUT WHY...

GU (TUG)

IYO'S THE LUCKY WINNER THIS TIME.

BETTER HURRY TO HER!

KUWA (ROAR)

DUMB-ASS!

A ROBED MAN...?

IS THIS THE CULPRIT !?

MY SURVEILLANCE NETWORK'S FOUND YOUR CULPRIT.

BASA (FLAP)

ばさっ

AH...?

ROCK GOD...!?

Subject 33:END

► Order Ability Profiles

012

»» "Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.





YAGYU SHINKAGE STYLE DIMENSION SWORD

User: **Juubee Yagyu**

Wish: **To Cleave the World**

Ability: **Cutting through dimensions**

Unlike ability users with more humanoid avatars, Juubee's is his sword itself. He was already the strongest swordsman alive, even before acquiring his ability. What separates him from other swordsmen is that all of his being is dedicated to the concept of "cutting." A sword is an object meant to cut people. For some, that could mean killing people; for others, it means slicing away one's own imperfections via training. For Juubee, though, it means cutting anything and everything—rocks, trees, people, water, beasts...One time, he transformed an entire Shinto shrine into a pile of lumber. As he was already at the pinnacle of his field, he began anew by taking a fresh look at the sword itself and the idea of "cutting something." It was then that Juubee began his quest to cleave the world itself.

BIG
ORDER

Subject 34

ROCK GOD ...!?

EIJI HOSHIMIYA.

I NEVER WANTED TO SEE YOUR MUG AGAIN, BUT THAT'S THE HAND I'VE BEEN DEALT. GOTTA DO MY JOB.

HMPH.

WHY'RE YOU HERE ...!?

IT'S THE ORDER I FOUGHT IN YAMAGUCHI— KAGEKIYO SOMETHING OR OTHER.

ズズズ...

ZUZUZU (LOOM)

I REALLY AIN'T CUT OUT FOR THE BABY-SITTER LIFE.

IF THE GUYS UPSTAIRS CAN'T TAKE YOU DOWN, I'D RATHER JUST KILL YOU MYSELF, PERSONALLY.

BUN (SWING)

FIVE MINUTES AGO...

...OUR SATELLITES CAUGHT A GLIMPSE OF FIRST LIEUTENANT IYO WITH A ROBED MAN!

LIKE I JUST SAID, WORK. THE U.N. WANTS ME MONITORING YOU.

GUH (TUG)

IS IYO OKAY!?

.....

SO LISTEN UP.

THIS CONCERNS FIRST LIEUTENANT IYO.

PA (THRUST)

SOUNDS LIKE THIS "BODY SNATCHER" ORDER YOU'RE AFTER!

MOVE YOUR ASS!

TA (TMP)

.....

I'M GOING OUTTA MY WAY TO HELP AN ENEMY HERE...

...SO STOP DAW-DLING!

DID THE BODY SNATCHER GET YO .....?

IF ANYTHING HAPPENED TO HER, I'LL...!

AH.

EIJI, WAIT UP...!!

!

NO, YOU WAIT UP, BIG SIS!

IYOOOOOOOO!

NOOO!

(WHOOSH)

!!!
!!!
!!!

Subject 34: “Apology”
Place: Nagoya

BO (FLIK)
ボ
BO
ボ
NO GOOD.
NOBODY SUSPICIOUS AROUND HERE. MUST'VE GOTTEN AWAY.
BOOOOO (FWOOM)
ボキキ
キキ
...SHIT.
SHIT!
ALL BECAUSE I WASN'T WITH HER...!
POOR EIJI. THIS IS REALLY GETTING TO HIM ...!
TH-THIS REALLY ISN'T YOUR FAULT, Y'KNOW.
BOOO
ボキキ

BO

BO

BO

J-JUST CALM DOWN FOR A MINUTE, EIJI.

THESE FLAMES OF MINE SHOULD BE ABLE TO KEEP IYO ALIVE FOR NOW.

THERE'S A CHANCE WE CAN REVIVE HER ONCE WE FIND HER HEAD...

I MEAN, I GET IT, GIVEN THE SIT-UATION, BUT...

...THIS IS BAD.

GABA (GRAB)

OUR GUY COULDN'T HAVE GOTTEN FAR...!

HOLD ON

A-ARE YOU EVEN LISTEN-ING!?

WHAT KAGEKIYO JUST TOLD ME...

ANOTHER NUKE'S GONNA DROP HERE.

PROBABLY IN THE NEXT TWELVE HOURS.

...THE U.N. RAISED HIM TO AN S-RANK THREAT. THEY'RE ON THE WARPATH.

AFTER EIJI'S DESTRUCTION IN THE KINAI REGION...

TA (TMP)

RIGHT.

KAGEKIYO-STILL THINKS EIJI'S BEHIND EVERY-THING.

HOLD ON...

BUT NOT TO WORRY, BIG SIS.

MOMI (GROPE) もみ

MOMI もみっ

SAWA (TOUCH) さわっ

GUI (SQUEEZE) ぐぃぃ

KINDA PISSING ME OFF, HONESTLY.

IT'S CRAZY.

I'VE BEEN WATCHING YOU TWO, BIG SIS, AND I SWEAR IT LOOKS LIKE YOU'RE LOVERS.

I'M ON YOUR SIDE.

I'LL HOLD THEM OFF LONG ENOUGH FOR YOU TO KILL EIJI YOURSELF.

THERE'S NO TIME, BIG SIS.

LET'S KILL EIJI TOGETHER!

DON'T TELL ME YOU FELL FOR HIM?

HMM?

EIJI, UMM...

...HE'LL NEVER LISTEN.

..... IF I TELL HIM TO LEAVE TOWN...

BO (FLIK)

BO BO

BUT I'M STILL THE ONLY ONE AROUND HERE WHO KNOWS EIJI IS INNOCENT.

GATA (THUMP)

I THOUGHT UP A WAY TO SEARCH FOR THIS CULPRIT.

JUST GONNA LEAVE IYO HERE FOR NOW.

EXCEL-LENT. SHE'S ALL GOOD AND RILED.

I'M ROOTING FOR YOU, BIG SIS. KILL EIJI FOR THE BOTH OF US.

SUCKS FOR IYO, BUT...

...I'VE GOTTA DO WHAT-EVER IT TAKES TO GET EIJI OUTTA HERE!

NOW...

...HOW DO I KEEP ALL THIS A SECRET FROM IGAWA?

.....

ZAZA (SPLASH)

"H" "H"...

ZAWA (WHOOSH)

H"

7...

H" H" H"

ZAZAZA (SPLASH)

THE VICTIM BEFORE IYO— THE BOY— USED TO LIVE HERE, NOT FAR FROM WHERE WE FOUND HER.

DON'CHA THINK IT'S A LITTLE WEIRD?

NO TRIANGLES I CAN SEE.

THIS RECTAN-GULAR HOUSE?

IF THE CULPRIT'S AN ORDER, THAT MEANS HE HAD SOME KINDA "WISH."

IT MIGHT SEEM LIKE A ROUNDABOUT WAY OF GOING ABOUT IT, BUT FIGURING OUT WHO THIS BOY WAS SEEMS LIKE OUR TICKET TO FINDING THE ORDER.

RIGHT... THAT.

WHY WERE ALL THE VICTIMS GIRLS EXCEPT THIS ONE?

I HATE TO SAY IT, BUT WE DON'T HAVE TIME.

EIJI.

NOW OR NEVER ...

ZUKA (STEP)

ズカズカ

ZUKA

HEY...

HEY!

DON'T YOU GET IT?

WITH THE U.N. ON YOUR TRAIL, WE CAN'T STICK AROUND HERE FOR LONG...

BUUU (BZZZ)

WHO ARE YOU?

GACHA (CLICK)

.....

I WAS HOPING YOU'D LET ME CHECK HIS ROOM?

FRIENDS OF YUUYA .....?

?

.....

YEAH. I LENT YUUYA-KUN SOME THINGS BEFORE HE PASSED...

BAN (SLAM)

...SO I'M SORRY, BUT NO.

YUUYA NEVER WANTED ANYONE GOING IN HIS ROOM.....

POKAN (STUNNED)

ポカン

EIJI'S GOT NO MORE LEADS TO FOLLOW.

THIS IS GOOD.

WE'LL JUST HAVE TO CHECK THE OTHER VICTIMS' HOUSES ...

EIJI!

GASHI (GRAB)

BA (BAM)

SHE CAN'T JUST SHUT US OUT.

...NO.

!?

WH-WHAT WAS THAT...!?

WE DON'T HAVE TIME TO FIND THIS GUY.

YOU GET THAT, RIGHT, EIJI?

I'M TELLING YOU WE'RE IN DANGER!

GU (TUG)

OH YEAH?

SO WHAT ABOUT IYO!?

A NUKE MIGHT BE COMING, JUST LIKE IN YAMAGUCHI!

I'VE STILL GOTTA LOOK FOR CLUES THAT MIGHT LEAD ME TO SENA.

ZA (STEP)

"H"

I-I'LL TAKE IYO'S BODY WITH US...

...I ONLY SAID THAT BECAUSE HE WAS SO DEPRESSED ...

...BUT...

!

I WAS THE ONE WHO TOLD EIJI THAT SENA-CHAN MAY STILL BE ALIVE...

A PUNCH ...?

BA (TURN)

(WHOOSH)

YOU...

...NUMB-SKULL!

!?

.....

HUH?

GYO (STARE)

I'M SORRY.

I...

...THINK SENA-CHAN IS DEAD.

BA (BAM)

SO I'VE HATED YOU FOR SO LONG AND DONE SUCH TERRIBLE THINGS...

I... ...WAS CONVINCED YOU WERE RESPONSIBLE FOR THE DEATHS OF MY PARENTS, EIJI.

...I WAS WRONG.

BUT...

.....

ENOUGH.

HEY, KNOCK IT OFF... BOWING LIKE THAT'S NOT YOU, RIN.

JIRI (INCH) じり...

LISTEN.

I'VE JUST FELT SO GUILTY.

THAT'S WHY I'VE BEEN HELPING YOU, EIJI...

AND THERE'S NO POINT IN PLAYING DETECTIVE. IT'S DANGEROUS, EVEN!

SO PLEASE, EIJI. COME WITH ME AND RETREAT!

SENA-CHAN IS DEAD AND GONE!

BA (TURN)

EIJI ...!

AH...

I SAID, ENOUGH !!!!!!

SENA'S STILL ALIVE!

I'M THE WORST.

YORO (WOBBLE)

ヲロ000

EIJI!!!!!

...JUST BECAUSE I WAS FEELING GUILTY!?

IN THE MOMENT, DID I TRY TO FOOL EIJI LIKE THAT...

DON'T TELL ME YOU FELL FOR HIM?

OR IS IT ...?

NO! IT'S NOT...

UM...

OZU (TIMID) おず...

WON'T YOU COME UP TO HIS ROOM WITH ME...?

HUH...?

I GAVE IT SOME THOUGHT AND REALIZED I WOULD LIKE TO TALK TO YOU ABOUT MY BOY...

...IF I CAN'T HOLD ON TO HOPE?

WHAT'S LEFT...

EVEN I KNOW THERE'S ONLY A SLIM CHANCE SENA'S ALIVE...

...BUT I STILL BELIEVE ...!

SIGN: SLOW

A ROAD SIGN.....

A TRIANGLE?

徐行

!

HE LIKED TO WEAR GIRLS' CLOTHING.

AND...

YUUYA, HE...

IT'S ALSO WHY I DROVE YOU AWAY EARLIER.

...THAT'S WHY I NEVER LIKED PEOPLE SEEING HIS ROOM.

I'VE BROUGHT HER, YUUYA-CHAN.

BROUGHT ME...?

WHA—?

KON (KNOCK)

KON

GIRLS' CLOTHES ...?

GII (CREAK)

SOFU
FU
FINALLY, THE LAST PART I NEED.
MY BODY WILL BE COMPLETE.
FU
FU
...MAMA.
BAAAAN (BAM)
THANKS ...
!?
IYO ...!!?

JAKIN (KERSHINK)

ORDER!

GO (FOOM)

SO HE'S ...!!?

BIG SNIPPER!!!

REBIRTH FIRE!!!

ORDER!!!

!!?

IT WAS A TRAP ...!!!

GASSHIN (CLAMP)

I SAW YOU SCURRYING AROUND FROM THE WINDOW UP HERE. THOUGHT YOU MIGHT BE AFTER ME.

GOOD THING I WAS ON GUARD LIKE "SHE" RECOMMENDED.

FU-FU.

GUGU (STRAIN)

GUH.

ACK...!

KNEW IT.

HIS LIMBS... ARE STITCHED ON!?

BAN (BAM)

THE WHOLE "WEARING GIRLS' CLOTHES" THING .....

COULD IT BE...?

Y-YOU'RE NOT DEAD ...!?

!?

HEH HEH.

THAT'S RIGHT. I STOLE PARTS FROM ONLY THE BEST GIRLS AT SCHOOL...

...AND THEN I FOUND THE IDEAL FACE.

AND NOW, MY TORSO HAS FINALLY COME.

SO YOU'RE OUR CULPRIT ...!!!

MEGI (SQUEEZE)

GI

I GET IT... THOSE LIMBS WE FOUND WERE HIS, AFTER ALL. HE DROPPED THEM BECAUSE HE DIDN'T NEED THEM ANYMORE...

...AND HE WAS ALIVE THIS WHOLE TIME...!?

GI

NOW...

...I WILL BECOME EVEN MORE BEAUTIFUL. ♡

NO ONE IS COMING TO SAVE YOU.

PAAAA (BEAM)

E—

JAGI (KASHINK)

EIJIIII!!!

EIJI.....!!!

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

ZAN (STAND)

ORDER!

"FREEZE"!!!

WHA—?

ドッ

DO (PIERCE)

IT WAS THE WHITE TRIANGLE AND TWO HORIZONTAL STRIPES THAT LED ME HERE!

LOOK OUTSIDE. THEY'RE RIGHT THERE.

WHOA THERE.

I SAID, "FREEZE." YOU'RE ALREADY UNDER MY CONTROL.

HOW'D YOU FIND ME ...!?

EIJI...

TA (TMP)

GET OUTTA HERE, RIN.

TOOK ME A WHILE TO FIGURE OUT WHAT IYO'S PREDICTION WAS TALKING ABOUT, THOUGH.

IT'S THAT TRIANGULAR ROAD SIGN.

JUST LIKE YOU SAID... THE SEARCH FOR SENA IS TRULY OVER IF WE DIE HERE.

APPARENTLY, IT SIGNIFIES A PAIR OF CABLES RUNNING ALONG THE SEAFLOOR BELOW. ONE OF THE NEIGHBORS TOLD ME.

BAN (BAM)

SORRY, RIN.

NO...

...IT WASN'T JUST OUT OF GUILT...

I WAS THE ONE RUNNING FROM THE TRUTH.

HOW I COULDN'T GIVE UP ON SENA...

YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE I CAN COUNT ON.

I ALSO WANTED TO SEE EIJI SMILE...

A-ALL RIGHT, AS LONG AS YOU UNDER-STAND.

PLEASE, RIN.

I NEED YOU TO TAKE IYO'S HEAD AND THESE OTHER LIMBS AND GET THEM BACK TO THEIR ORIGINAL OWNERS.

!

.....

.....

BUT...

SOUNDS LIKE YOU REALLY NEED ME, HUH?

.....

G-G...

G—

GUESS I'VE GOT NO CHOICE.

YEAH. LET'S HURRY UP AND ESCAPE THIS PLACE.

...AND HE'S STILL WILLING TO COVER FOR HER...?

HIS OWN SISTER STABBED HIM...

HAA. HAA.

.....UGH.

HAA. HAA.

SE—

SE...NA?

HAA.

HAA.

YOU PEOPLE...

DID SENA-SAMA GIVE YOU POWERS TOO?

(ZUN GTHOOM)

!!?

AN EARTH-QUAKE ...!?

NO, THIS IS...!

DID...

DID YOU SAY SENA!?

(GO FWOOM)

Subject 34:END

HAA.
HAA.
HAA.

AND THOSE POWERS!?

WH—
...
WHAT'S UP WITH YOU PEOPLE...?

...FROM SENA-SAMA TOO...!?

D-DID YOU GET THOSE POWERS...

HAA.
HAA.

...
URK.

GUI (GRAB)

DID YOU JUST .....

SENA...
.....
!!!

EEP.

DID YOU JUST SAY "SENA" .....!? !?

SENA'S STILL ALIVE...!

I KNEW IT...

I...

HAA.

I DID, YEAH ...

HAA.

EIJI.

!

SOME-THING'S COMING FROM ABOVE!!

(WHOOSH)

ZUN GTHOOMD

!?

AN EARTH-QUAKE !?

NO, THIS IS.....!?

DON (BAM)

I MIS-JUDGED YOU...

...BIG SIIIIIIS !!!

!!?

Subject 35: “Chaotic Emotions”
Place: Nagoya

GO
WHY!?
GO
GO
KA-
GEKIYO
...!?
GO
(RUMBLE)
GO
THIS...
GO
...ISN'T
A NUKE
...!!?
(WHOOSH)
WHY
AREN'CHA
TRYING
TO KILL
EIJI LIKE
BEFORE?
BIG
SIS!
RIGHT.
I FORGOT
THIS
CHICK'S
BEEN
MONITORING
US.
WHY NOW,
OF ALL
TIMES...?

NO WAY...

...I SEE YOU'RE ACTUALLY HELPING EIJI.

I THOUGHT THE PROMISE OF ANOTHER NUKE'D LIGHT A FIRE UNDER YOU, BIG SIS, BUT INSTEAD ...

KYOTON (BLANK)

キョトン

.....

HUH?

WH-WH-WH-WHA—?

BA (LUNGE)

SAY IT AIN'T SO.

DID YOU REALLY FALL FOR ... ... YOUR OWN PARENTS' KILLER!?

OF COURSE NOT!!

KAA (BLUSH)

カアooo

PACHIN (SNAP)

HMPH.

.....

!

PAPA.

MAMA ...

GUWA (ZOOM)

!!?

THE BIG SIS I KNOW AND LOVE LIVED FOR REVENGE. SHE WAS DAZZLING .....! BUT THIS IS PATHETIC.

YOUR PARENTS MUST BE ROLLING OVER IN THEIR GRAVES.

OOOO (WHOOSH)

WHAT ARE YOU DOING, ROCK GOD ...!!?

WH—

GIVE HIM BACK.

THERE'S SOMETHING I'VE GOTTA ASK HIM!

BA (LEAP)

THE ORDER CAME FROM THE TOP. NOT SURE WHAT THEY WANT HIM FOR, BUT I'M S'POSED TO CAPTURE THIS BODY SNATCHER.

ALSO, "DON'T HAND HIM OVER TO EIJI HOSHIMIYA," THEY SAID...

DAN (SLAM)

HMPH.

ALL THE MORE REASON ...

SHIT. MY FIRST LEAD ON SENA...

STOLEN AWAY, JUST LIKE THAT!

DA (DASH)

THIS WAY, EIJI!

GACHA (CLICK)

LET'S BORROW THIS CAR.

O-OH.

YOU CAN DRIVE, RIN?

DON (BAM)

...TO TAKE HIM AWAY!!!

G-GET BACK HERE...!!

I'M STILL A SOLDIER, Y'KNOW!?

GYA (VROOM)

GYA

GYA.

'COURSE I CAN!

SHE WON'T GET AWAY!

..... I SEE HER!

YOU DON'T STAND A CHANCE!

I'VE GOT THE EDGE IN MOBILITY.

OOO (WHOOSH)

EIJI HOSHIMIYA'S IN PURSUIT, JUST AS PLANNED...

... IGAWA.

Very good!

Please lead him to the warehouse at the harbor.

I TOLD YOU, I GOTTA ASK HIM A FEW THINGS!

SO GET BACK HERE!

GASSHIII (GRAB)

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

ORDER!!!

"CRANES, CAPTURE ROCK GOD"!!!

TCH.

BUN (ZOOM)

BUT EVEN SO!

NAGOYA IS ALREADY PART OF EIJI'S DOMAIN ...!

WHICH MEANS THIS WHOLE WAREHOUSE DISTRICT IS UNDER HIS CONTROL.

HE USED THE HARBOR CRANES ...!!?

BUN (SWING)

GYARURURU (WRAP)

!!?

WHA—?

DOGAA (KERSMASH)

YOU'RE ALREADY IN OUR TRAP!!!

!!?

WHAAAT!?

GABA (FWOOSH)

WHA—

OOO (WHOOSH)

1

ZAAAAA (FSSHH)

ZAAAAAA

GORO (ROLL)

GAH ...

ZAAAAA

ZAAAA (FSSHH)

TA (TMP)

!

TA

TA

.....

POTA (DRIP)

POTA

TA

THERE YOU ARE, EIJI!

YOU OKAY DOWN THERE ...!?

UGH...

OUCH ...

WHERE ARE WE...?

WHO KNOWS...? UNDER-GROUND HARBOR STORAGE?

...OR MAYBE...

THIS PLACE WAS ABANDONED TEN YEARS AGO, AFTER THE GREAT DESTRUCTION.

!

THIS WAY.

THEY MUST'VE GONE AND BUILT ANOTHER WAREHOUSE ON TOP OF THE RUINS OF THIS OLD, SUNKEN ONE...

RIGHT. WHERE'S ROCK GOD!?

KAGEKIYO WAS ASSUMING THE FALL WOULD KILL US.

ガラ..
GARA (CRUMBLE)

GUI (STRAIN)

WHOA.

TCH.

WATCH WHERE YOU'RE ...

GOTTA CATCH UP WITH HER QUICK...!

I CAN FEEL SOME AIR FLOWING IN FROM THIS WAY.

WE'VE GOTTA FIND A WAY OUT.

BO (FLIK)

NOT AROUND HERE ANYWAY.

BO

BO

KYAH!

DO (BUMP)






OH.
YEAH...
CAN YOU... GET OFFA ME?

YURA (SWAY)



WHAT'M I THINKING ...?

I'VE GOTTA FIND THAT BODY SNATCHER, SO WHY'M I...?

YEAH. ALL BUSTED UP...

THIS IS PROBA-BLY IT.

WHERE THE FRESH AIR'S COMING FROM.

ZA (STEP)

BO BO ボボ

I GET WHY YOU'RE PANICK-ING, BELIEVE ME.

BUT I THINK WE'LL GET ANOTHER CHANCE TO TAKE BACK THAT BODY SNATCHER.

BO (FLIK) BO ボ ボ

...ISN'T THIS ALL A BIT POINTLESS?

EIJI...

...I REALIZED THIS WHEN I WAS TALKING TO KAGEKIYO EARLIER, BUT...

!

THOSE U.N. GUYS'RE PROBABLY SCHEMING TO USE HIM AS A BARGAINING CHIP WITH YOU, EIJI...

KAGEKIYO STILL THINKS YOU'RE THE ONE SHE'S AFTER...

...AND SO DOES THE U.N.

BUT IT WAS REALLY SENA-CHAN WHO CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUCTION, SO...

...WHY NOT JUST TELL THEM ALL THE TRUTH?

BO (FLIK) BO

.....

!

I...

...JUST CAN'T.

BO BO ボボ

THERE'S NO REASON FOR THEM TO COME AFTER YOU, IS THERE?

YOU ALREADY KNOW.

IF I DO THAT, THEY'LL JUST TARGET SENA...

WHY THE HELL NOT!!?

U

U

U

SO I CAN'T.

BO

BO

BO

BO

HEY, EIJI...

...HAVE YOU SERIOUSLY NOT NOTICED?

OR ARE YOU JUST PLAYING DUMB?

THERE'S SOMETHING WEIRD ABOUT SENA-CHAN NOW.

TH-THERE'S GOTTA BE AN EXPLA-NATION FOR ALL THAT...

SO YOU STILL WANNA PROTECT HER?

...SHE TRIED TO DESTROY THE KINAI REGION...

...AND NOW SHE'S TURNING PEOPLE INTO ORDERS.

EVEN IF SHE IS ALIVE...

YOU DO REALIZE SENA HOSHIMIYA STABBED YOU, RIGHT!?

SHE'S THE ONE WHO NEEDS TO PAY FOR CAUSING THE GREAT DESTRUCTION— NOT YOU.

ALL I REALLY WANT IS FOR SENA TO BE HAPPY ...

HOLD ON!

LEMME SAY THIS NOW, EIJI.

I'M NOT AFTER YOU FOR REVENGE ANYMORE.

I'M AFTER SENA HOSHIMIYA!

SHE'S THE ONE WHO KILLED MY MAMA AND PAPA!

I'M HELPING YOU SEARCH FOR HER NOW BECAUSE I WANNA SUPPORT YOU, BUT... I WILL HAVE MY REVENGE.

BO (FLIK)

BO

PACHI (CLAP)

PACHI

!!?

I MUST SAY, I ADMIRE THAT DETER-MINATION.

GET YOUR REVENGE, HUH...

SU (TIP)

HELLO THERE.

...EIJI HOSHIMIYA...

...AND SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI.

PLEASED TO MEET YOU...

Subject 35 : END

Subject 35.5

NAGOYA CITY: IN THE NURSE'S OFFICE OF A CERTAIN SCHOOL

KATA (PLOP)

MY, MY.

ANOTHER SCRAPED KNEE!

THANKS, IYO-SENSEI!

HEH-HEH. MIGHT BE WORTH IT IF I GET TO SEE YOU AGAIN, SENSEI.

CHON (PAT)

CHON

THAT COULD GET INFECTED WITH TETANUS, YOU KNOW?

.....WHY AM I...

...PLAYING SCHOOL NURSE ANYWAY?

SIGH.

保健室

PATA (FLIP)

...WHY DID I HAVE TO BE THE SCHOOL NURSE? I'M ONLY NINETEEN!!

木憩中

PERHAPS I'LL SLIP OUT AND LOOK FOR EIJI-SAMA.

I UNDERSTAND THAT RIN GOT TO PICK OUR ROLES, GIVEN THIS INFILTRATION MISSION WAS HER IDEA TO BEGIN WITH, BUT...

SIGNS: NURSE'S OFFICE [TOP], OUT ON BREAK [BOTTOM]

I CAN'T SAY I'M ALL TOO FOND OF SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI.

休

RIN'S SEVENTEEN HERSELF! SHE'S NOT THAT MUCH YOUNGER!

I FEEL A BIT SHUNNED, IN FACT.

...IS HER ATTITUDE TOWARD EIJI-SAMA.

AND THE REASON FOR IT...

FU-FU-FU-FU.

YOU'LL TOTALLY GET TO FLIRT WITH EIJI IN THE NURSE'S OFFICE!

I WAS DUPED.

EIJI-SAMA HASN'T COME TO VISIT ME EVEN ONCE...

生徒会室

SIGN: STUDENT COUNCIL ROOM

I'M HEEERE.

カララ KARARA (SLIDE)

EIJI-SAMA. ♪

Subject 35.5: “Iyo-sensei Is Very Worried”
Place: Nagoya

!!?

DON'T LOOK FOR ME.

-EIJI

AH-HA-HA

HA-HA-HA.

AH HA HA.

NO FREAKING WAY!

WHAT?

YOU THINK EIJI WENT AND OFFED HIMSELF...?

GUSU (SNIFFLE)

グズッ

EIJI-SAMA'S BEEN BROODING ABOUT SENA-SAMA SO MUCH LATELY...

H-H-HOW ELSE DO WE INTERPRET THE NOTE HE LEFT...?

HE'S NOT THE TYPE TO GO AND DO SOMETHING LIKE THAT.

YOU WORRY TOO MUCH.

MU (POUT)

むっ

HEE-HEE-HEE.

PFFT. ♡

HEH HEH HEH.

IYO, I KNOW YOU SAY YOU LIKE EIJI, BUT COME ON...

...YOU DON'T KNOW THE FIRST THING ABOUT HIM.

KA

KA

KA (STEP)

I BET HE'S JUST SLEEPING ON THE ROOF 'COS HE DOESN'T WANT ANYONE TO BOTHER HIM. YOU'LL SEE.

GACHA (OPEN)

HMM?

?

AWAWA (PANIC)

ROPE .....?

.....

HE'S ABOUT TO HANG HIMSELF BEHIND THE SCHOOL!

I KNEW IT. EIJI-SAMA IS GOING TO COMMIT SUICIDE!

HOLD ON, IYO. I'M SURE HE JUST DROPPED THIS PIECE OF ROPE!

DA (DASH)

AH...

SFX: TA (TMP) TA TA

HMM? IS THAT ...?

IT'S...!

DOOON (BAM)

EIJI'S JACKET? AND SOME MORE OF THAT ROPE...

A GRILL ...!?

IYO'S FOND MEMORIES (DO NOT REFLECT REALITY)

KYAH! KYAH!

U-FU-FU.

*IMAGINED SUICIDE BY SMOKE INHALATION

MOKU (BILLOW) モク モク

AH.....

AWAWAWA (PANIC) あわわわ

NO, NO, NO.

WAHH...

NO WAY!

GASSHI (GRAB)

ちっしい！

UWAAAH! HE'S REALLY GOING TO KILL HIMSELF !!!

R-RIGHT, IT'S GOTTA BE A "SHIMENAWA"! HE'S ROASTING SOME MOCHI WHILE MAKING PREPARATIONS FOR NEW YEAR'S!!

HAVE SOME FAITH IN EIJI...

...IYO!

NO! THAT'S JUST THE MOUNTAIN-EERING CLUB DOING THEIR TRAINING.

WAIT...

HE'S PROB-ABLY DOWN IN THAT TENT ...!

RIN.

DO YOU BELIEVE IN EIJI-SAMA BECAUSE YOU LIKE HIM?

...IS BECAUSE SHE HIDES HER TRUE EMOTIONS.

THE REASON I DISLIKE RIN KURENAI...

ALL THE MORE REASON TO KEEP HER FROM STEALING EIJI-SAMA AWAY.

I-IT'S NOT LIKE I...

TOBO

TOBO (GLOOM)

トボ

トボ

WHERE COULD YOU HAVE GONE, EIJI-SAMA?

SO...

WE COULDN'T FIND HIM.

!

GARA (SLIDE)

IS THIS WHERE YOU'VE BEEN .....?

EIJI-SAMA !?

I WON'T LET HER!

I WAS JUST ROASTING SOME MOCHI WHEN THE PRINCIPAL ASKED ME TO BRAID THIS SHIMENAWA.

I WROTE THAT NOTE BECAUSE I DIDN'T WANT YOU TO WORRY...

HMM?

IYO? RIN? WHAT'S UP?

DON'T YOU DARE MAKE ME WORRY LIKE THAT...

...EVER AGAIN!!!

!?

GUH.

I WON'T LET HER HAVE MY EIJI-SAMA!

DOGAA (KAPOW)

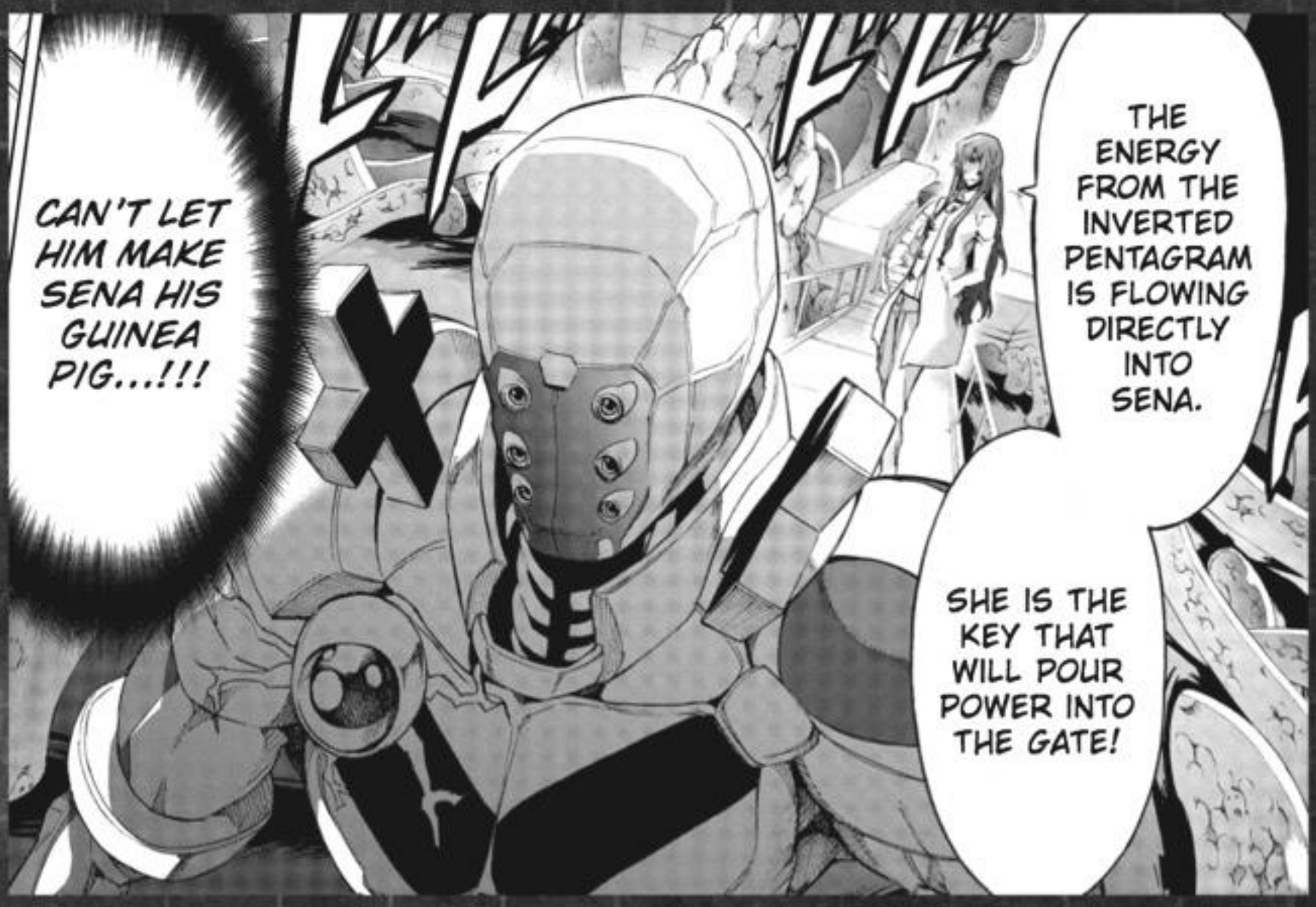
YOU JACK-ASS!!!

Subject 35.5:END

013

»» "Abilities" received from Daisy

These ability users, who had their wishes made into superpowers by the mysterious entity known as Daisy, are called Orders. There are thought to be approximately two thousand Orders worldwide, though that number is steadily increasing.





User: **Gennai Hoshimiya**

Wish: **To Control People and Complete His Experiments**

Ability: **Psychological control**

Gennai wished to complete his experiments, as he believed wholeheartedly that doing so would allow him to heal Sena's illness. The number "2" on his avatar's shoulders marks it as the second in the series of "Bind Dominator," "Mind Set," and "Illegal Digger" — the first three avatars to appear in the world. First came Sena's "Bind Dominator." Moments later (just before the Great Destruction) came Gennai's "Mind Set," which was born so that he might manage the new world. Finally, Eiji's "Illegal Digger" was created by Daisy in order to smooth everything over.

From Gennai's perspective, Eiji's stealing of Sena's ability made it impossible to recover from her initial failure (as she no longer had her ability). While Eiji spent the next ten years covering up Sena's crime, Gennai used the time preparing to reenact the experiment.

DISPEL MIND

BIG
ORDER

Subject 36

ZA

ZA (STEP)

I AM KIYOSHIROU IGAWA, JAPANESE AMBASSADOR TO THE U.N.!

WHAT AN HONOR TO FINALLY MEET.

HMPH.

AMBAS-SADOR TO THE U.N.!?

AM—

GREETINGS, EIJI HOSHIMIYA...

...AND SECOND LIEUTENANT RIN KURENAI.

AND NOW...!

.....

!?

GAPA (OPEN)

JAPANESE AMBASSADOR, HUH...WHY'S A BIG SHOT LIKE HIM IN A PLACE LIKE THIS!?

WHAT THE ...!?

THAT LIGHT...!

WHA...!!?

BACHI

KA (FLASH)

BACHI

BACHI (CRAK)

THIS IS GOOD-BYE !!! !!!

...BUT I'VE GOT A FEELING IT'S BAD NEWS!

KAAAA

NOT SURE WHAT THAT THING IS...

AAA

ZU (ZU (ZU (

AND MY REBIRTH FIRE...

IT'S ALSO VANISH-ING...!?

FU (FADE)

HUH...?

MY DOM-INATOR'S DISAP-PEARING !?

WE AT THE U.N. DIDN'T COME JUST TO GET BEATEN DOWN BY YOU!

HEH HEH HEH HEH HEH. HOW INSIGHT-FUL.

SHUU (FSSHH)

TH-THIS FIELD OF LIGHT IS—!?

IS IT SEALING OFF OUR ABILITIES ...!?

KAAAA (FLASH)

AAA

"ANTI-ORDER FIELD."

THE "REVERSE COIL" SYSTEM CAN DISPEL ANY AND ALL ABILITIES PRODUCED BY WISHES!

AND WHAT A SUC-CESS!

DO (BLAM)

DO

DO

DO

GAH?!

GASHA (KACHAK)

THERE WAS NO TIME FOR PROPER TESTING, SO.....

...WE'VE BROUGHT IT STRAIGHT INTO THE FIELD!

...GATLING GUN.....!?!?

DO

DO

DO

A.....

HE WAS AN UPSTART MERCENARY WHO ROSE THROUGH THE RANKS IN THE CHAOS AFTER THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION!

WH-WHO CARES!? EITHER WAY, HE'S TROUBLE .....!

EIJI... I JUST REMEM-BERED!

THIS GUY'S NICK-NAME IS "GATLING IGAWA."

DO

DO (BLAM)

DO

DO

DO

DOGAA (KERBLAM)

AND NOW, OUR ABILITIES WON'T EVEN WORK...!

ZA (STEP)

ZA

Besides, I don't think he's in the mood to listen to reason.

Not a chance!

It's like I said, Eiji...!

This battle is pointless.

Just tell them it was Sena-chan...

THIS IS BAD.

HOW DO WE SNEAK AWAY ...!?

ZA

I CAN'T REALLY FIGHT THE AMBAS-SADOR .....AND I CAN'T EVEN USE MY POWER ANYWAY!

YOU IDIOT! I'VE HAD IT UP TO HERE WITH YOU!

YEAH. I'M AN IDIOT, SURE.

ZA

ZA

...I'M QUITE GLAD TO FINALLY MEET YOU.

TO BE HONEST, EIJI HOSHI-MIYA...

THAT SAID... PEOPLE ARE STRONG!

WE HUMANS OVERCAME ALL THAT MISFOR-TUNE!

DO (BLAM) DO DO DO

AND I'M ABOUT TO PROVE IT BY KILLING YOU!!!

TCH. NOWHERE LEFT TO RUN...!

CRAP .....

I COULDN'T IMAGINE A GREATER HORROR!!!

THE GREAT DESTRUCTION YOU CAUSED WAS THE WORST DISASTER THIS WORLD'S EVER SEEN...!

THE RUINED CITIES... THE STENCH OF DEATH!

THE CHAOS, LOOTING, AND FIGHTING IN THE STREETS... EVERY MISFORTUNE YOU CAN THINK OF...!

ZAN
(ZOOM)

! FROM OUT OF NOWHERE ...

RIN ...!?

NAH.

THIS ISN'T ME PROTECTING EIJI OR ANYTHING.

KU-AAH!

EIJI HOSHIMIYA SHOULD NO LONGER HAVE CONTROL OVER YOU IN THIS FIELD, YET.....

HOW UNEXPECTED, SECOND LIEUTENANT KURENAI.

SHE SLICED THROUGH THE GATLING GUN!?

SO STRONG!!!

I DIDN'T EXPECT THIS...!

ZUBAN (SLASH)

YOU JUST...

...TALK TOO MUCH!!!

PARDON ME FOR THE EARLY EXIT!

DOON (SLAM)

THIS HAS CEASED TO ENTERTAIN ME.

ZA (STEP)

I SUPPOSE YOU'LL HEAD THERE NOW?

PEH.

ACCORDING TO THE BODY SNATCHER, HE MET YOUR DEAR SISTER AT LAKE HAMANA. THAT'S WHAT YOU WANTED TO KNOW, YES?

LAKE HAMANA ...?

W—

ZU (RUMBLE)

-ZU

WAIT UP. GIMME BACK THE BODY SNATCH-ER!

AHH... ABOUT HIM.

(WHOOSH)

WE SHALL SETTLE THIS THERE!

WILL IT BE US OR YOU, EIJI-DONO? IT'S A RACE TO REACH YOUR SISTER.

HOLD ON...

ISN'T IT OBVIOUS? I'M GOING TO LAKE HAMANA!

TCH...

I'M NOT ASKING YOU TO COME, RIN!

IF NOTHING ABOUT YOUR ATTITUDE'S CHANGED, THEN YOU CAN COUNT ME OUT!!

MUKA (MAD)

WHAT'S THE PLAN, EIJI!?

ARE YOU THAT STUPID...!?

YOU WOULDN'T HAVE EVEN SURVIVED THIS WITHOUT ME!

WELL...

...I'LL FIND A WAY TO MANAGE, WITH OR WITHOUT YOU, RIN!

I'M GONNA HEAD OFF TO SEARCH FOR SENA ON MY OWN.

ANY-WAY... WE'VE SOLVED THE BODY SNATCHER CASE. IT'S ALL GOOD NOW.

SOMEWHERE IN NAGOYA CITY— ONE OF DAZAIFU'S SAFE HOUSES

LOOKS LIKE IYO'S CONDITION'S IMPROVING.

BO (FLIK) BO BO BO

WELL, WE MOVED QUICKLY, SO HER HEAD WASN'T DETACHED FOR LONG.

...I'M SICK OF HAVING TO PROTECT YOU.

...DO WHAT YOU WANT.

EIJI-SAMA.

WHAT'S UP WITH RIN?

I THOUGHT SHE WAS JUST BEING MEAN, BUT NOW SHE'S GOING TOO ...?

WE KNOW SENA'S ALIVE NOW, BUT STILL, SHE'S GOTTA RAIN ON MY PARADE.

THE TEN HANDS...

KA (STEP) KA

MORE LIKE THE SEVEN HANDS NOW.

RIGHT.

LIEUTENANT COLONEL KUNOU WISHES YOU TO KNOW THAT THE TEN HANDS ARE ABOUT TO ASSEMBLE...

SO I CAN'T RELY ON RIN ANYMORE. BIG DEAL.

MARI AND IYO ESCAPED BY HELI-COPTER BEFORE THE EXPLOSION ...

...AND RIN USED HER ABILITY TO PROTECT THE TWO OF US.

EVER SINCE THE KINAI DESTRUCTION, HIIRAGI, AYAHITO, AND NEHARA HAVE BEEN MISSING.

THE OPERATION TOOK A HEAVY TOLL ON THE DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT.

KA

KA

I'VE GOT LAURYN FOR MOBILITY ...

...AND BENKEI TO DESTROY THE DEVICE. WAIT, NO. MARI'S POWER IS BETTER SUITED TO A LONG-RANGE ATTACK.

EITHER WAY, ONCE THAT GADGET'S OUTTA THE WAY, I CAN FIGURE SOMETHING OUT...

HMPH..... THAT "REVERSE COIL," THOUGH. WHO COULD HAVE THOUGHT SUCH A THING POSSIBLE?

IF IT RENDERS US POWERLESS, THAT'S <VERY BAD>.

A MERCENARY TURNED AMBASSADOR?

CHOI (FIDDLE)

チョイ

CHOI

チョイ

SOUNDS LIKE A FIGHTER BECOMING PRESIDENT IN SOME FRIGID COUNTRY.

HAVEN'T SEEN ALL THESE GUYS TOGETHER IN A WHILE...

I SUPPOSE YOU'D LIKE SOME OF US TO ACCOMPANY YOU TO LAKE HAMANA, EIJI?

?

HMM?

.....

SIGH.

KIYOSHIROU IGAWA...I HAD HEARD THE MAN COULD THINK ON HIS FEET, YET...

...BATTLING EIJI DIRECTLY WITH A GATLING GUN IN HAND IS JUST INSANE.

...'COS I'VE GOT THE TEN HANDS BACKING ME...!

...GOING FORWARD, THE TEN HANDS CAN'T SUPPORT YOU. NOT EVEN IYO.

I'M SORRY, BUT...

BAN (BAM)

WE HAVE TO BE BLUNT WITH YOU, EIJI.

OUR ROLE IN ALL OF THIS IS OVER.

WH-WHAT DO YOU MEAN ...?

HUH?

EVEN ...

EVEN YOU, BENKEI ...!?

IT'S OVER...?

GATA (STAND)

"ガタ"

NENE ...!?

HEY, DID YOU HEAR ABOUT HOW WE WERE SEARCHING THE WRECKAGE OF THE KINAI DESTRUCTION?

THE SEARCH YIELDED RESULTS.

VERY WELL.

I'LL EXPLAIN EVERY-THING.

SHOULD WORSE COME TO WORST, HE WAS PREPARED TO USE NEHARA TO STOP ANOTHER GREAT DESTRUC-TION.

...HOWEVER, WE EXPECTED THAT. IT WAS PART OF THE COLONEL'S ORIGINAL STRATEGY.

KA (FLASH)

RIGHT WHEN THE GATE ACTIVATED ...

...NEHARA USED HIS ABILITY IN THAT UNDER-GROUND CHAMBER.

THAT IS HOW THE DESTRUCTION WAS LIMITED TO JUST THE KINAI REGION.

"APOPTOSIS BOMB"
NEHARA'S ABILITY ALLOWED HIM TO OBLITERATE ANY GIVEN TARGET ONLY ONCE— AT THE COST OF HIS OWN LIFE. HIS WISH WAS "TO SAVE EVERYTHING."

GOOOOOOOOO (WHOOSH)

ゴオオオオオオ

AT THE CRATER'S CENTER, WE DISCOVERED THE GATE'S BASE HAD BEEN COMPLETELY MELTED...

IT WAS UTTERLY DESTROYED, WITH ZERO CHANCE OF REACTIVATION.

HE'S DEAD ...!?

.....!?

NEHARA IS...

OOOOOO

オオオ

NEARBY, WE ALSO FOUND NEHARA'S CORPSE.

オオ

WITH OUR ORIGINAL GOAL OF DEFEATING GENNAI HAVING BEEN ACCOMPLISHED...

...THE DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT WILL HEREBY ENTER THE DISSOLUTION PROCESS.

WE DIDN'T FIND THE CORPSES OF EITHER THE COLONEL OR AYAHITO, BUT...

...AFTER THREE MONTHS OF INVESTIGATING, WE'RE CLOSING THE CASE!

...THE "GATE" IS NO MORE.

EVEN IF SHE IS STILL ALIVE, SHE CAN'T DO ANYTHING.

.....

BAN (BAM)

WHOA ...

HOLD UP!

YOU'RE JUST GONNA ABANDON SENA!?

WHAT ABOUT SENA!?

YOU'RE OKAY WITH JUST CALLING IT HERE ...!?

GATA (STAND)

IT'S OVER, EIJI.

GATA

GATATA

THEY'RE LEAVING ME HIGH AND DRY!

...BUT THIS IS STILL SHOCK-ING.

I GUESS THE TEN HANDS WERE NEVER REALLY MY FRIENDS...

...
FROM THE START, IT WAS JUST THAT OUR INTERESTS HAPPENED TO LINE UP.

IYO...

FROM NOW ON, PLEASE DON'T ASSOCIATE WITH IYO.

THE DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT HAS TO PUT SOME DISTANCE BETWEEN ITSELF AND YOU, EIJI.

IT'S A BAD ENOUGH MATCHUP TO START WITH, AND THERE MIGHT BE MORE THAN ONE OF THOSE THINGS OUT THERE.

MY CONTROLLING ABILITY DEPENDS ON MY DOMAIN, AND THAT MACHINE EFFECTIVELY CANCELS IT OUT...

IT'LL BE TOTALLY IMPOSSIBLE FOR ME TO COUNTERACT IGAWA'S ABILITY-CANCELING DEVICE ALL ON MY OWN.

WHAT AM I SUPPOSED TO DO NOW!?

THIS IS WHAT I GET FOR THINKING I COULD RELY ON THE TEN HANDS!

.....SHIT. I WAS GETTING WAY TOO AHEAD OF MYSELF.

NIKO (SMILE)

SAY, A CERTAIN SOMEONE WHO JOINED YOU IN THE SEARCH FOR THE BODY SNATCHER...

...PER-HAPS?

NENE...

ISN'T THERE SOMEONE WAY BETTER SUITED TO HELPING YOU THAN US?

RIN!

SIGN: RIN KURENAI

DA (DASH) A...

...WITHOUT ANYONE ELSE BACKING ME UP, I'M AN ABSOLUTE JOKE...!

EVEN WITH MY CONTROLLING ABILITY...

...JUST LIKE RIN SAID!

I CAN'T DO ANYTHING ALONE...

BAN (BAM)

SHIT.

SHE'S ALREADY LEFT HER ROOM...!

SHE'S ALWAYS ...

I'M THINKING SHE MUST FEEL A LITTLE GUILTY FOR SEEKING REVENGE ON YOU.

IS THAT REALLY ALL IT IS, THOUGH?

I'VE ALWAYS WATCHED HER DURING MY FREE TIME BECAUSE WE WERE ALLIES...

...BUT THE PAST THREE MONTHS, THAT GIRL'S BEEN RUNNING AROUND WITH YOU.

(WHOOSH)

RIIII...

...BEEN RIGHT BY MY SIDE.....!!!

...IIIIN !!! !!!

I GET WHY HE'S COVERING FOR SENA.

SHE'S HIS SISTER, AFTER ALL.

BUT TO GO AND SACRIFICE HIMSELF LIKE THIS...

SO HIS DOMAIN EXTENDS THIS FAR...

EIJI, YOU DUMMY!

WHAT ABOUT YOUR OWN HAPPI-NESS, EIJI?

AND I DON'T GIVE A CRAP ABOUT HIM EITHER...!

WHAT-EVER!

GUESS EIJI JUST DOESN'T NEED ME ANYMORE.

IT'S RIN KURE-NAI...

I DON'T

.....
.....

ZAWA (CHATTER)

ZAWA

ZAWA

RIN KURE-NAI!

FOUND HER.

HUH?

.....

ZAWA

RIN KURE-NAI!

"PEOPLE OF THIS CITY, FIND RIN KURENAI"!!!

RIN!!!

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

O (WHOOSH)

FOUND YOU!

!

FOUND HER!

SOMEONE TELL EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

ZORO

ZORO

FOUND HER!

FOUND HER!

ZORO (CROWD)

FOUND HER!

FOUND HER!

WH—

WHAT!?

ZORO

WHAT I NEED NOW IS...

E—

EIJI!?

DON (SLAM)

HAA.

HAA ...

WHY...?

WHY'D YOU COME AFTER ME...?

モウ MOU

MOU モウ

MOU モウ

!

G—

GOOD...

I CAUGHT UP TO YOU, RIN.

MOU (BILLOW) モウ

NIYA (GRIN)

HA-HA!

YOU REALIZED YOU NEED MY STRENGTH AFTER ALL?

NIYA

TOO BAD.

I'M NOT HANGING OUT WITH A LOSER LIKE YOU.

SURE.

FINE.

I WON'T GO OVER-BOARD, AND I'LL LISTEN TO WHAT YOU HAVE TO SAY!

SO PLEASE, COME WITH ME!

TAJI (TWITCH)

たじ..

!?..... WHOA.

THAT ALMOST SOUNDED LIKE AN APOLOGY...

YOU SERIOUS !?

WHAT I NEED IS...

.....

TCH.

PLEASE, RIN.

..... GUESS I'VE GOT NO CHOICE.

...A FRIEND!





Subject 36:END

»» *Big Order* World:

A world where those who've had their wishes transformed into superpowers call the shots.
The average citizen knows nothing of Gennai's plans nor the Orders he created.



Gate:

The "gate" serves as a portal between our physical world and the spirit world beyond. Ability users (Orders) wield powers that convert their wishes into physical energy from the spirit world, and Daisy is essentially the conduit to that world. She herself acts as a miniature gate of sorts that can access the spirit world, as she did in Volume 1 when talking with Gennai's spirit. That said, Daisy alone is not enough to release that power to the entire world, which is why a larger-scale gate is necessary. Ten years ago, Gennai expected that unleashing Sena's ability would help link the two worlds, but that attempt failed, so he spent the following decade constructing a massive, physical gate in Nara Heijoukyou. He chose the center of the Kinai pentagram because the converging spiritual pulse lines would aid in the process of unlocking the spirit world.

BIG
ORDER

Subject 37

GATAN (THUNK)

GA (BUMP)

WELL, HEY, IT'S ALMOST LUNCHTIME. WANNA GRAB SOME EEL?

AH. AND I'M THIRSTY, EIJI. GIMME A SIP OF THAT, WOULD YA?

THE ENTIRETY OF LAKE HAMANA'S KIND OF A BIG PLACE TO SEARCH.

OOO (WHOOSH)

HEY. KEEP YOUR EYES ON THE ROAD, RIN.

GATAN (BUMP)

HMM?

.....I STILL FEEL BAD, HONESTLY.

EVER SINCE NAGOYA, EIJI'S BEEN REAL NICE TO ME.

GATATAN

YEAH, TOTALLY.

DON'T WORRY ABOUT ALL THAT!

WHOA!

GATA

GATA (BUMP)

WAS IT REALLY OKAY? LEAVING WITHOUT A WORD TO IYO...

AND I FINALLY HAD HIM IN A GOOD MOOD... DAMMIT!

PLUS, DIDN'T MARI LAY DOWN THE LAW AND TELL YOU TO KEEP AWAY FROM IYO?

I MEAN, SHE WAS HURT.

GATA

GATA

...THAT GIRL IS TOTALLY USELESS.

WHAT GOOD WOULD IT DO TO BRING HER ALONG ANYWAY?

GA (ZIP)

...H...

SERIOUSLY, WOULD YOU MIND DRIVING A LITTLE BETTER?

PLUS, I'VE BEEN THINKING LATELY...

THAT LUGGAGE BACK THERE IS GONNA BREAK!

BA (BURST)

HEY. YOU TWO !!!

IYO !!?

Subject 37: "What Love Is"
Place: Shizuoka

B-B—

BE-CAUSE ...

WHY WERE YOU EVEN IN THE CAR, IYO!?

...WHEN I LEFT MY ROOM, I SAW YOU TWO ABOUT TO LEAVE...

SO I HID MYSELF...

I WANTED TO GO WITH YOU!

THAT WAS AWFUL, LEAVING ME OUT LIKE THAT.

ZA (SPLASH) ZA

.....WHAT?

HEY! THE BOAT'S ABOUT TO LEAVE.

N-NO WAY, IYO!

DODA (TMP)

DA DA DA DA DA

DA

YOU PLANNED TO LEAVE ME BEHIND AND HAVE EIJI ALL TO YOURSELF...

...BUT I WON'T LET YOU!

GASHI! (GRAB)

I SAID NO, IYO! DAMMIT... ARE YOU EVEN LISTEN-ING...!?

HMPH. I SEE I WAS RIGHT ABOUT YOUR MOTIVES, RIN.

BOOO (WOMMMP)

ZA (SPLASH) ZA ZA
H" H" H"

LAKE HAMANA ...

Unrestored Danger Zone

Kansai

Kanto

THE LAKE USED TO BE JAPAN'S TENTH LARGEST.

HOWEVER, AFTER THE SEISMIC SHIFTS AND REMODELING IN THE WAKE OF THE GREAT DESTRUCTION, THE LAKE SPREAD FROM KANSAI TO KANTO AND BECAME A KEY SHIPPING LANE.

UNABLE TO FIND SENA ON THE KANSAI SIDE, EIJI, RIN, AND IYO BOARDED A SHIP HEADED FOR THE OPPOSITE SHORE.

YEAH.

ANOTHER OCEAN LINER RAN AGROUND, HUH?

ZAWA

ざわ

ZAWA

ざわ

ZAWA (CHATTER)

ざわ

HEY, YOU HEAR ABOUT WHAT HAPPENED YESTERDAY?

AN ICE-BERG?

IN THIS LAKE ...?

HOPE OUR SHIP'S GONNA BE ALL RIGHT...

THEY SAY IT SMASHED INTO A GIANT ICEBERG.

MAN...

...THAT IYO IS NO JOKE!

WHY NOT?

WE NEED ALL THE HELP WE CAN GET.

PI (BEEP)

SO YOU REALLY WANNA BRING IYO ALONG...

...EIJI?

SFX: HOKA (STEAM) HOKA

A PRETTY, LITTLE FLOWER IN EACH HAND, EIJI...

AND NOW, YOU'VE GOT IYO.

RIGHT. SURE. YOU'VE GOT ME.

IRA (IRK)

イラッ

HMPH.

WHAT HELP IS SHE GONNA BE AGAINST A GUY LIKE IGAWA!?

DID YOU ALREADY FORGET, EIJI?

JUU (SIZZLE)

...RIGHT? ♡

CUT IT OUT, RIN!

HOT!

HOT!!

UH...

YOU'VE GOTTA LISTEN TO WHATEVER I SAY...

ZA (SPLASH)

ZA

ME AND EIJI CAME TO A NUMBER OF AGREEMENTS.

ONE OF THEM IS THAT WE'RE GONNA EXPLAIN EVERYTHING ABOUT SENA TO IGAWA NEXT TIME WE MEET HIM.

...OR I WON'T HELP. YOU KNOW THE DEAL!

AFTER ALL, THERE'S NO WAY IGAWA AND THE REST OF THE WORLD ARE GONNA BELIEVE A WORD EIJI SAYS UNTIL HE ACTUALLY SURRENDERS.

NO WAY IN HELL.

OF COURSE, EIJI STILL WANTS TO KEEP SENA'S SECRET, BUT...

...THERE'S REALLY NO NEED TO WORRY.

AND THAT'S EXACTLY WHY...

...IF THERE'S EVEN A TINY CHANCE THEY'LL BELIEVE US, I DON'T WANNA BE CARRYING ANY EXTRA BAGGAGE.

SO IT'S MORE FOR MY OWN SATISFACTION THAT I WANT HIM TO COME CLEAN.

THERE'S STILL GONNA BE A FIGHT IN THE END.

KO

KO (STEP)

NOTHING SECRET ABOUT IT. THIS WAS DECIDED FROM THE START.

WE AIN'T TAKING YOU WITH US, IYO.

HAVE YOU FINISHED YOUR SECRET CHAT? WHAT WILL YOU DO WITH ME?

EIJI-SAMA?

KO

ㄱ...!..

YOU HAVEN'T CONVINCED ME OF ANYTHING, SO AS SOON AS WE HIT THE SHORE...

...YOU'RE GONNA STAY RIGHT ON THIS BOAT AND MAKE A U-TURN!

EIJI AGREES WITH ME.

.....RIN. I BELIEVE I WAS SPEAKING TO EIJI-SAMA.

HEH-HEH.

HMPH.

I TAKE IT THAT MEANS I JUST HAVE TO CONVINCE YOU OF MY WORTH, RIN?

YUP.

PROVE YOU'RE NOT JUST DEAD-WEIGHT.

NOT THAT YOU CAN.

I CAN CRUSH A SIMPLETON LIKE RIN!

I HAVE NO INTENTION OF BEING DEAD-WEIGHT.

FINE...

H-HEY.

ZA (SPLASH) ZA ZA

WHAT THE ...!!?

DOON (SLAM)

!!?

ICE—

ICE-BERG!

PAKI

PAKI (CRAK)

THOSE'RE NO ORDINARY ICEBERGS !!

FIRAN!!?

.....
.....
.....!?

DAMMIT.. I'M FALLING AGAIN!

BAK!! (SNAP)

EIJI-SAMA ...!

EIJI!

PAKI

PAKI (CRAK)

PAKI

DOZAA (RUMBLE)

!!?

WHA—

WHAT'S THAT!!?

DO
ドド
DO
ドド
DO
ドド
DO
(POUND)
ド

DO
ドドド

THE COLD WATER REMINDS ME OF THAT RAGING WATERFALL FROM MY YOUTH.

...THAT BIRTHING ME HAD WEAKENED MOTHER.

I SOME-HOW LEARNED...

FATHER WAS A KIND MAN BUT STRICT WHEN IT CAME TO TRAINING.

MOTHER WAS OFTEN ILL, AND THE TWO OF THEM HARDLY EVER SPOKE.

ゴホ!!
GOHO (COUGH)

IT WAS ALL MY FAULT.

AT TIMES, I WANTED TO KNOW HOW MOTHER FELT ABOUT FATHER, SO I ASKED HER...

MOMMY, DO YOU LOVE DADDY?

HEY.

SHE WOULD ALWAYS JUST GET THIS BASHFUL LOOK ON HER FACE.

SO I BECAME CONVINCED ...

...THAT SHE HATED BOTH ME AND FATHER.

UNTIL THE MOMENT OF HER DEATH.

IYO...

I'M SO VERY GLAD I HAD YOU.

THANK YOU.

WHAT IS LOVE?

URGH ...

GAH!

!?

YOTTO (WOBBLE) ヲット

YOU JUST WOULDN'T WAKE UP. THOUGHT YOU MIGHT BE DEAD.

WH-WHY ARE YOU CARRYING ME...?

PICHA ピチャ

PICHA ピチャ

HUH? YOU'RE AWAKE!?

...RIN?

WAY TO TAKE YOUR DAMN TIME!

PICHA (DRIP) ピチャ

WE'RE INSIDE THE ICE...!?

!

...
YOU'RE GONNA BE GLUED TO THE FLOOR.

YOU SURE? THOSE CLOTHES OF YOURS ARE DRENCHED. THE SECOND I PLOP YOU DOWN...

PICHA ピタッ

PICHA (DRIP) ピタッ

DOESN'T SEEM TO BE ANYONE INVOLVED WITH THE U.N.

MUST BE AN ENEMY'S ABILITY. NOT SURE WHO IT IS, THOUGH.

PUT ME DOWN, RIN.

AH.

USE YOUR DOWSING TO FIGURE OUT WHERE THAT IDIOT WENT!

PIKO ピク

PIKO (TWITCH) ピク

!

WHERE'S EIJI-SAMA ...!?

ISN'T THAT YOUR AREA OF EXPERTISE ?

WHO KNOWS?

PIKO ピコ

PIKO ピコ

IF I MANAGE TO FIND EIJI-SAMA...

...WILL YOU RECOGNIZE MY WORTH?

MUUU (POUT)

NOTHING TO DO WITH THAT.

WHAT'S THAT MEAN!? ARE YOU MESSING WITH ME JUST BECAUSE I LIKE EIJI-SAMA!?

!

GYO (GULP) ぎょっ

KYAH!

"ALL RIGHT, HERE YOU GO."

KYAH!

"EIJI, I'M THIRSTY!" ♡

A-ANYWAY, IT'S GOT NOTHING TO DO WITH THAT!

EVERY-THING!

"OHH, EIJI, MY SHOULDERS ARE STIFF!" ♡

WH-WHOA.

I'LL DROP YOU RIGHT NOW!!

HOW MUCH DID YOU HEAR!?

RIN...!

WHAT GOOD ARE A BUNCH OF LOUSY PREDIC-TIONS...?

AND IN THE END, WHO'S MAKING IT POSSIBLE FOR YOU DO ANYTHING WITH THAT POWER AT ALL...?

I'M THE ONE GIVING YOU A DAMN PIGGYBACK RIDE...

ZA (STEP)

I'M THE ONE WITH BOOTS ON THE GROUND...!

IF YOU'RE REALLY JUST LOOKING FOR ROMANCE ...

...YOU SHOULD'VE STAYED HOME AND PRAYED FOR HIS SAFETY FROM THERE!




THAT'S NOT WHAT I'M AFTER.
NO.


PIKO
ピッ
PIKO (TWITCH)
ピッ
ROMANCE...


PIKO
ピッ
PIKO
ピッ
!


BUT THAT'S ALL YOUR PREDICTIONS CAN DO, HUH?
.....!


OH MY...
AH HA HA HA.
IT SEEMS I'VE PRODUCED RESULTS SOONER THAN EXPECTED.


OOOO (WHOOSH)
オオオ
PIKO
ピッ

GOOOON (LOOM)

ゴゴゴ

FROM THE START...

...THIS WALL WAS SITTING BETWEEN US AND EIJI.

ポツ

TCH ……

DON (SLAM)

DID THEY GET SWEPT AWAY IN THE WATER? OR ARE THEY FROZEN IN ICE...!?

ガッチャン GACCHAN

ガッチャン GACCHAN (SMASH)

IYO AND RIN ARE GONE...!

I'LL GO NUMB IN THIS SKIMPY OUTFIT IF I DON'T KEEP MOVING.

KEEP IT DOWN OVER THERE!

ガッチャン GACCHAN

THE ENEMY'S REAL BODY HAS TO BE CLOSE BY. JUST GOTTA TAKE THEM OUT...

ブルブル BURU (SHIVER)

HA-HA-HA. WHO WOULD'VE THOUGHT I'D END UP TRAPPED WITH THE GUY I'M MONITORING?

BUT IT'LL BE HARD TO FIND ANYTHING IN THIS ICY MAZE...

SOME GUY WHO ALMOST FROZE TO DEATH ON A MOUNTAIN ONCE, OR SO I HEAR.

THE U.N. KNOWS THAT MUCH AT LEAST.

GOTTA BE ONE OF THE ORDERS CREATED BY SENA.

GAKU

GAKU (SHIVER)

ANYWAY, WHAT'S UP WITH THIS ABILITY...!?

YOU HAVE SOME IDEA, DON'T YOU?

FRAN... THAT BASTARD.

WHY'S HE DOING THIS ...!?

GAKU

BUT THIS ALL WORKS OUT FINE FOR IGAWA, EVEN IF YOU'RE KILLED BY THIS ICE USER!

PERSONALLY, I DON'T CARE EITHER WAY.

SHIT.

BECAUSE YOU'RE THE WORST OF THE WORST!!

GAKU

THE SIMPLEST POWERS ARE THE STRONGEST...

PIKI (CRAK)

PIKI

PIKI

PIKI

WHAT THE HELL AM I SUPPOSED TO DO!!?

I THINK... THIS MIGHT BE THE END.

PAKI

PAKI

THE ICE IS ALL THE WAY UP TO MY SLEEVES NOW...

MY HAND IS TRAPPED .....!

PAKI (CRAK)

.....

?
ENEMY
EIJI
WALL
IYO
RIN
MY DOWSING IS TELLING ME IT'S NOT JUST EIJI ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE WALL. THE ENEMY'S THERE TOO
.....
IF I COULD JUST SOMEHOW INDICATE TO EIJI-SAMA WHERE THE VILLAIN IS, THAT COULD BE OUR WAY OUT OF THIS.

PAKI (CRAK)
MEKI (CRIK)
パキ ミチ ミチ

RIN...
...COULD YOU MELT AWAY THE WALL WITH YOUR FLAMES?

IT'S JUST AS RIN SAID, THOUGH.
MY SOOTH-SAYING ALONE ISN'T ENOUGH TO BREAK THIS WALL.

PAKI

IMPOS-
SIBLE.

EVEN AT MY STRONGEST, I COULD PROBABLY ONLY OPEN UP A LITTLE HOLE...

THAT'S GOOD ENOUGH!

PAKI

PAKI

!

TH-THE ICE... IT'S AL-READY ...!

WHY? WHAT CAN YOU DO...?

IT'S NOT ROMANCE I WANT— IT'S LOVE.

I NEED YOU TO LEND ME YOUR STRENGTH, RIN!

PAKI

PAKI

PAKI

I WANT TO BEAR EIJI-SAMA'S CHILD!

TO BE BY EIJI-SAMA'S SIDE...

...AND PROTECT HIM... THAT IS MY GOAL!

BARI (RIP)

I WANT TO LIVE WITH HIM FOR THE REST OF OUR LIVES.

BA (PULL)

THAT'S WHY THERE'S NO POINT TO ANY OF IT IF I CAN'T BE WITH HIM!

BARI

BARI

!

IYO.

YOU...

OOO (WHOOSH)

AND I WILL GIVE YOU MINE!!!

PLEASE LEND ME YOUR POWER, RIN!

PAKI (CRAK)

UGH...

DAMN...

PAKI

PAKI

KAKIIIN (KASHINK)

カキーン

BECAUSE BOTH OF US SHARE THE SAME WISH—TO SAVE EIJI-SAMA, RIGHT!?

BAN (BAM)

DON (SLAM)

REBIRTH FIRE ADD-ON: CLAIRVOYANCE ENGINE
AN ADDITIONAL EFFECT FOR REBIRTH FIRE THAT UTILIZES IYO'S PREDICTIVE POWER TO FIND THE ENEMY, ALLOWING THE FLAMES' HEAT TO TRAVEL DIRECTLY TO THAT LOCATION. THE TARGET CAN ALSO BE HEALED IF NEED BE.

JUO (SIZZLE)

JUUUU

GOOU (FOOM)

REBIRTH FIRE ADD-ON: CLAIR-VOYANCE ENGINE !!!

JUBO (SIZZLE)

!?

BON (FLARE)

GYAHHHHHH!

BO

BO

BO

BO (FLIK)

DA (DASH)

HE WAS OVER THERE ...!

THE ENEMY ...!?

PICHA (DRIP) ピチャ

EIJI-SAMA MUST HAVE BEATEN THE ENEMY ON THE OTHER SIDE.

PICHA ピチャ

PICHA ピチャ

THE ICE IS MELTING AWAY...

I NEED TO HEAL THAT ARM OF YOURS, SO...

...YOU CAN COME WITH US.

...THERE'S NO DOUBT ABOUT IT. IT WAS IYO WHO TOOK DOWN THIS ENEMY.

HER PREDICTIONS ALONE HAVE NO STRENGTH ..... BUT...

PICHA ピチャ...

!

.....YOU GOT ME.

IT SEEMS OUR ICE MAN WAS BEATEN.

...IN ANY CASE, HOW ARE YOU FEELING?

STILL, IT BOUGHT US ENOUGH TIME. EIJI HOSHIMIYA WON'T BE CATCHING UP ANYTIME SOON.

...I SEE.

REPORT.

THE U.N.'S TOP DOGS ARE ALL MEETING HERE TO DISCUSS THEIR STRATEGIES AGAINST EIJI. THE PRIME MINISTER IS AMONG THEM, OF COURSE...

...ALONG WITH ONE HUNDRED SPECIAL POLICE AND THREE THOUSAND GUARDS.

A MOUSE COULDN'T SNEAK IN WITH THAT SECURITY, LET ALONE A TERRORIST.

MEANWHILE, OUR MEMBERS ARE FEW.

NOW THEN— WHERE SHALL WE BEGIN OUR ASSAULT...

ZA (TMP)

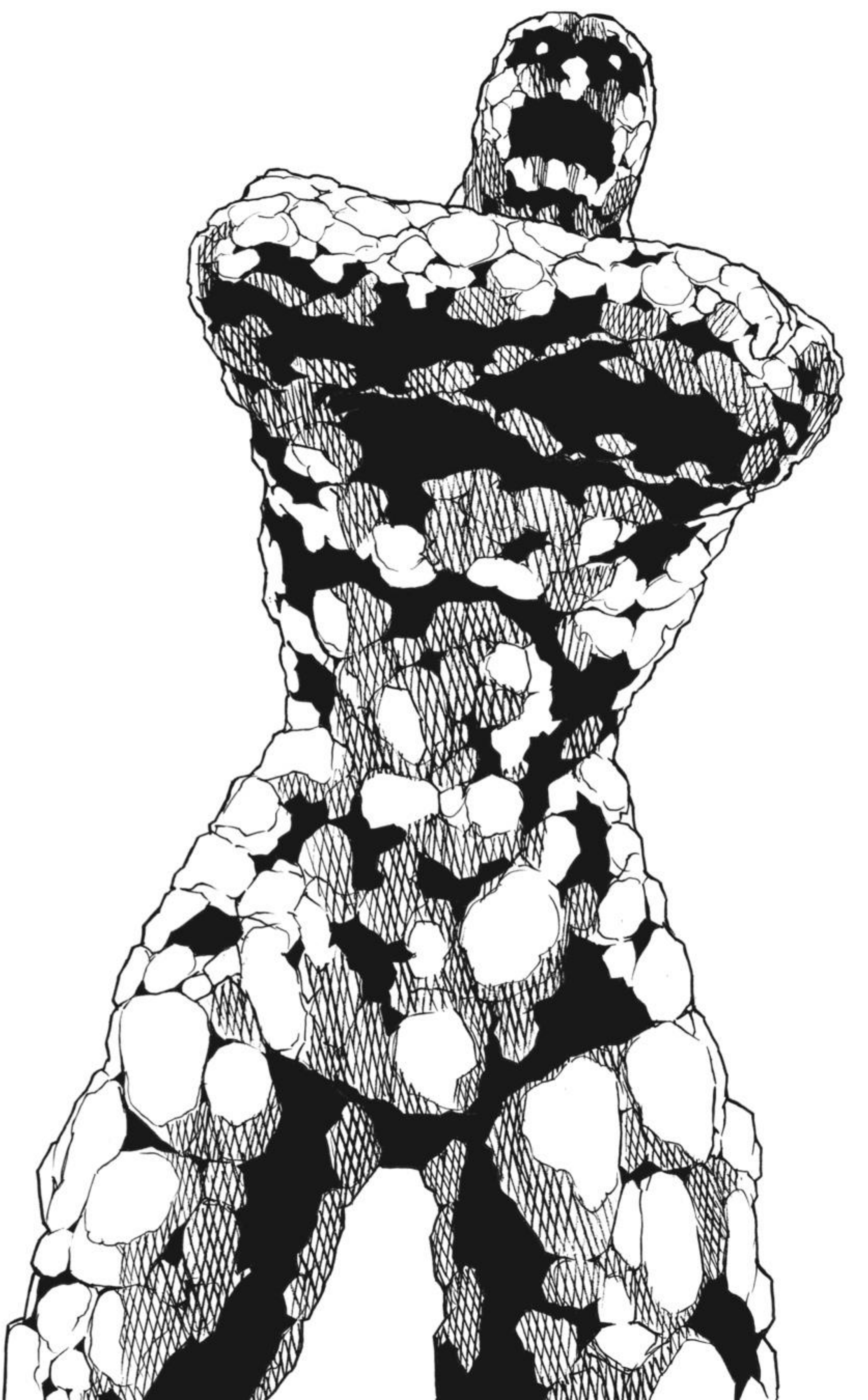
...SENA-SAMA?

ZAN (STAND)

AT THE FRONT DOOR.

Next Stop: Fuji

Subject 37 : END



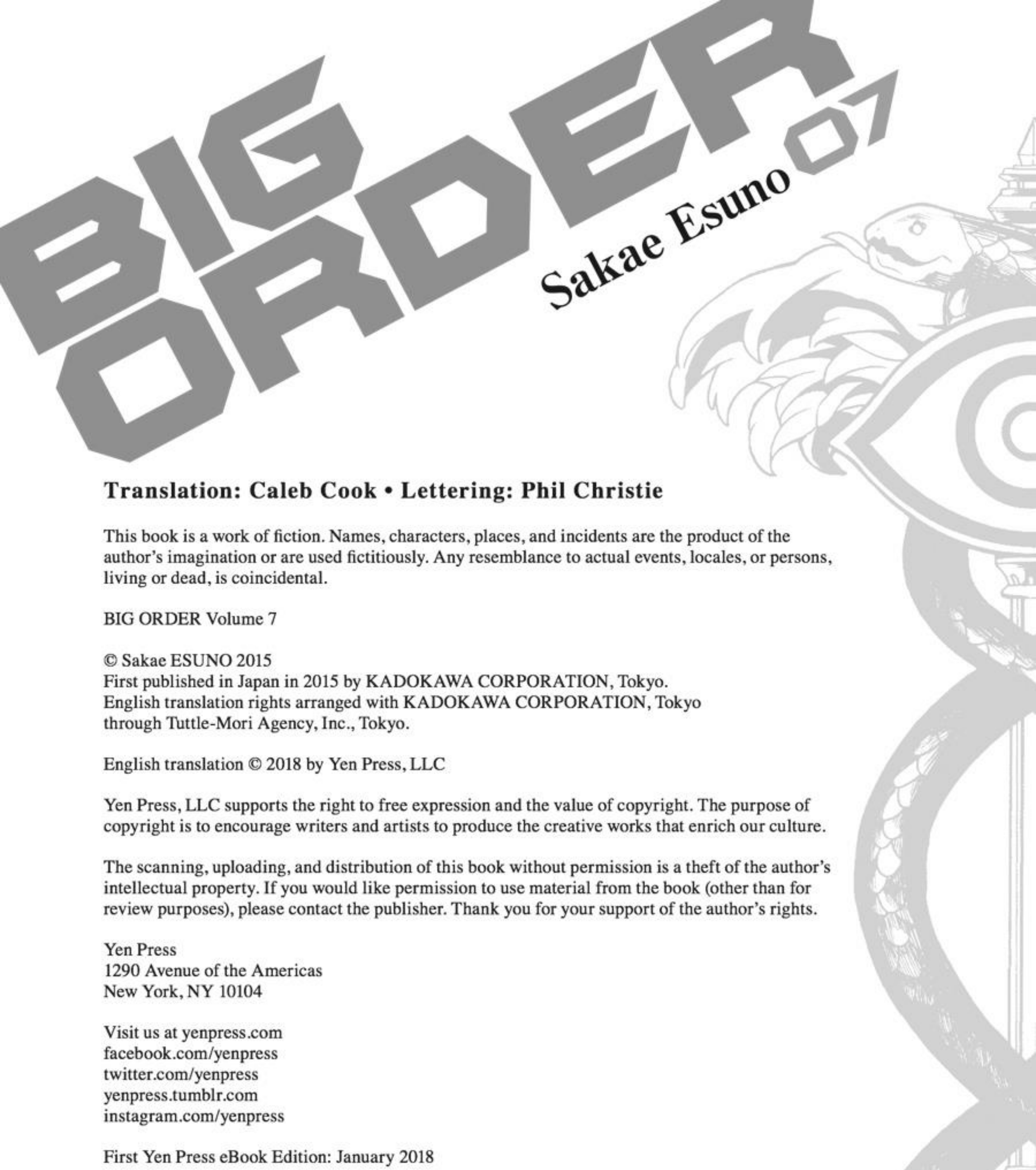
TRANSLATION NOTES

Kinai region: A name used to refer to the ancient provinces around what is now called the Kansai region, including prefectures like Osaka and Kyoto.

Page 111: Braiding *shimenawa* ropes and roasting mochi (sticky rice dumplings) are two New Year's customs in Japan. The ropes are used for warding off evil in the Shinto religion, while the mochi can either be eaten or turned into a *kagami mochi* decoration.

Page 162: If you're wondering why Rin's can of tea from the vending machine gives Eiji a nasty burn, that's because many Japanese vending machines can dispense both cold and hot drinks!

BIG
ORDER



Translation: Caleb Cook • Lettering: Phil Christie

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, or persons, living or dead, is coincidental.

BIG ORDER Volume 7

© Sakae ESUNO 2015
First published in Japan in 2015 by KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged with KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo
through Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., Tokyo.

English translation © 2018 by Yen Press, LLC

Yen Press, LLC supports the right to free expression and the value of copyright. The purpose of copyright is to encourage writers and artists to produce the creative works that enrich our culture.

The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book without permission is a theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like permission to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), please contact the publisher. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Yen Press
1290 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10104

Visit us at yenpress.com
facebook.com/yenpress
twitter.com/yenpress
yenpress.tumblr.com
instagram.com/yenpress

First Yen Press eBook Edition: January 2018

Yen Press is an imprint of Yen Press, LLC.
The Yen Press name and logo are trademarks of Yen Press, LLC.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

Library of Congress Control Number: 2016958579

ISBN: 978-0-316-43601-4 (ebook)

Sakae Esuno

08

BIG BEF

PARENTAL ADVISORY
WARNING
EXPLICIT CONTENT

Subject 38

TOKYO — IN FRONT OF THE NATIONAL DIET BUILDING

OUR OBJECTIVE: TO TAKE OVER PARLIAMENT!

SHIN

SHIN (DRIFT)

SENA-SAMA?

... DO YOU HAVE A WAY TO WIN?

THERE ARE ONLY FIVE OF US, UP AGAINST THOUSANDS OF GUARDS.

THE PERFECT SCENARIO FOR A MASOCHIST LIKE ME, BUT...

LET'S GO.

EVERYONE, FORWARD MARCH!

ZA (STEP)

Subject 38: "A Game of Chance and Corruption"
Place: Tokyo



BIG ORDER



BIG ORDER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

001 — Subject 38: “A Game of Chance and Corruption”
Place: Tokyo

043 — Subject 39: “Crossed Paths”
Place: Lake Hamana

075 — Subject 40: “Battle En Route to Fuji (Part 1)”
Place: Fuji’s Aokigahara

099 — Subject 41: “Battle En Route to Fuji (Part 2)”
Place: Fuji’s Aokigahara

129 — Subject 42: “Battle Between Kin”
Place: Fuji

161 — Subject 43: “Trail of the Dead”
Place: Fuji

WITHOUT HOPE,
I'VE GOT NOTHING!



Rin Kurenai (Second Lieutenant):
Lost both parents in the Great Destruction caused by Eiji ten years ago and has been plotting to kill him ever since. She's really cute but also a bit dumb.



Rebirth Fire:
Rin's ability. She's essentially immortal thanks to her strong regenerative properties. She can also restore objects and other people to an undamaged state.

Ten Hands of Dazaifu:
The top brass at the Dazaifu Government Offices, which served as the seat of power for Kyushu's Provisional Government. Each is a powerful ability user in his or her own right.



First Hand

Raidou Fuwa
(Lieutenant Colonel)



Third Hand

Yoshitsune Hiiragi (Colonel):
As Colonel, he's the highest ranking member of the Ten Hands. Went missing after the Great Destruction in Kansai.

Fifth Hand

Taikei Nehara
(Lieutenant Commander)



Ninth Hand

Mari Kunou (Lieutenant Colonel):
A tactician who works directly under Hiiragi. She has a way with words and a strong personality.



Seventh Hand

Kokudo Soumoku
(Captain)



Second Hand

Benkei Narukami
(Lieutenant Colonel):
Has the ability to destroy anything down to the atomic level. Good-natured.



Eighth Hand

Nene Minamoto
(Lieutenant Commander)



Sixth Hand

Lauryn Wright
(Captain)



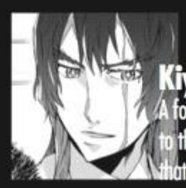
Tenth Hand

Ayahito Sundan
(Lieutenant Commander):
Has the ability to teleport. He loves and respects Eiji. His current whereabouts are unknown.



Fourth Hand

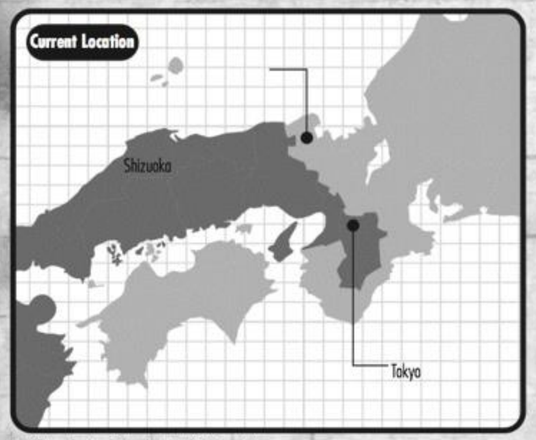
Iyo (First Lieutenant):
Has the ability to make 100% accurate predictions. She's particularly fond of Eiji.



Kiyoshirou Igawa:
A former mercenary and current ambassador to the U.N. who has a Reverse Coil device that negates the activation of Order Abilities.



Daisy:
A mysterious being who turns people's wishes into abilities.



At Shizuoka ▶ Eiji Hoshimiya, Rin Kurenai, Iyo
At Tokyo ▶ Sena Hoshimiya, Hanzo Hatori

Characters & Story

This story begins when the world was destroyed.

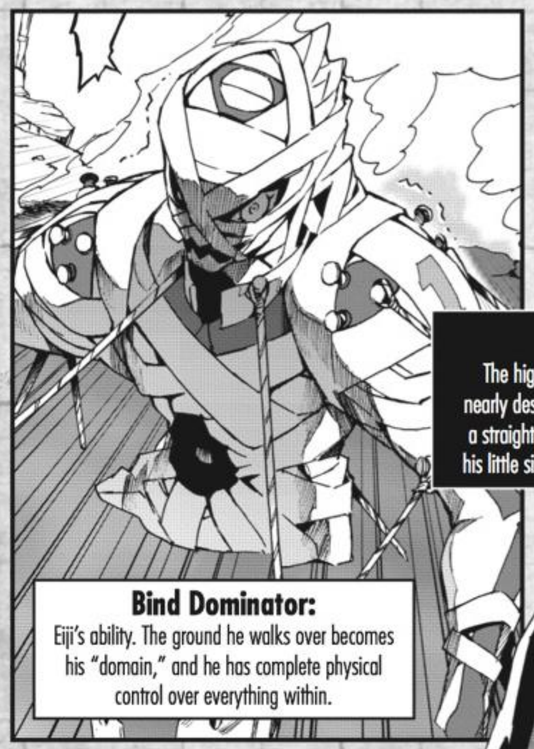
The world was brought to the verge of ruin when young Eiji Hoshimiya's wish was somehow granted. Ten years later, Eiji—now in high school—is attacked by an assassin named Rin Kurenai who knows about his past, and their battle reawakens his power. He's then set up as the enemy of the entire world as part of a scheme by the Dazaifu Government. One day, Eiji learns that his father, Gennai—a man presumed dead—is seeking to cause another Great Destruction. Eiji rushes to stop him, but in the process, he learns that Sena was the one who caused the original Great Destruction. He ends up thwarting Gennai's plot while keeping the damage to a minimum, but Sena is nowhere to be found, and it's unclear if she managed to survive. But Eiji's despair is short-lived, as he learns from one of the Irregulars that Sena is still alive. Gaining a second wind, Eiji resolves to find Sena, who, accompanied by Hatori, is about to enter the National Diet Building...!



Sena Hoshimiya:
Eiji's stepsister and an Order herself. She doesn't have long to live, but she's very strong-willed.



Hanzo Hatori:
One of Gennai's cunning underlings. Currently, he appears to be acting in tandem with Sena...



Bind Dominator:
Eiji's ability. The ground he walks over becomes his "domain," and he has complete physical control over everything within.



Eiji Hoshimiya:
The high school student who the world thinks nearly destroyed the world ten years ago. He's got a straightforward personality and cares deeply for his little sister, Sena, who is his only living relative.

BIG
ORDER

OOOO (WHOOSH)

AS JAPAN IS CURRENTLY UNDER THE U.N.'S JURISDICTION, THE NATIONAL DIET BUILDING HOUSES BOTH THE JAPANESE GOVERNMENT AND U.N. STAFF MEMBERS.

AT THE FRONT DOOR.

YES.

HM. ATTACKING HEAD-ON...

...YOU SAY?

SHIN (DRIFT)
SHIN
SHIN
SHIN
SO THERE'S NO POINT IF IT'S NOT BIG AND FLASHY.
MMM.
IT'S FINALLY TIME FOR OUR COUP D'ÉTAT!
AH, SENA-SAMA, MAY I HAVE A MOMENT?
HMM?
SO INNO-CENT. SO EXCITED...
I SEE, I SEE.
KA
KA (STEP)
WOULD YOU PERMIT ME A BATHROOM BREAK BEFORE WE BEGIN?
KURU (TURN)
RIGHT... THIS IS DO OR DIE.
SURE... BUT MAKE IT QUICK, HATORI.

I'M DONE TAKING ORDERS FROM A TEENAGER!

GARA (SLIDE)

THIS'LL NEVER WORK!

I GUESS IT ALL STARTED RIGHT BEFORE THE EXPLOSION IN KINAI.

KYUN

KYUN (WHIRR)

HOW'D I EVEN END UP FOLLOWING HER THIS FAR?

BA

BA

BA

BA

BA

BA (V.WOOM)

GET US OUT OF HERE!

I TOOK TOO LONG TO GET AWAY...

...AND WAS ABOUT TO BE ENVELOPED IN THE BLAST...

PLEASE WAIT! WE HAVE SOME STRAG-GLERS...!

BA (BAM)

WHAT!?

YOU TWO...!!?

YOU'RE TAKING US WITH YOU, HATORI.

DO (BOOM)

DO

WITH THE ENTIRE CHOPPER FROZEN IN TIME, WE SURVIVED THE BLAST. NOT EVEN THE SHOCK WAVE COULD TOUCH US.

I NEVER IMAGINED WE COULD ENDURE THE EXPLOSION THAT WAY...

LISTEN.

Y-YOU CAN'T JUST HITCH A RIDE. WHY SHOULD I LET YOU.....?

LET ME STAY, AND I CAN SAVE US.

GACHAN (KAKLANG)

THE PROBLEMS BEGAN AFTER THAT.

NNNGHH ...

HAA. HAA. HAA.

WH-WHY MUST I BE THE ONE SIFTING THROUGH RUBBLE...!?

USING THE DEEDS I COMMITTED UNDER GENNAI-SAMA AS LEVERAGE...

HAA. HAA.

SHIT...!

...SHE COERCED ME INTO WORKING FOR HER...

(THIS IS SENA HOSHIMIYA WE'RE TALKING ABOUT. I WOULD BE SUNK SHOULD THE WORLD LEARN OF OUR CONNECTION.)

I WANT TO KNOW HOW THINGS ARE ON THE OTHER SIDE .....

HANZO HATORI-SAN. YOU AIDED PAPA WITH HIS EXPERIMENTS FOR QUITE A WHILE.

YOUR KNOWLEDGE MAY PROVE USEFUL TO ME YET.

HAA.

IF I MAY BE SO BLUNT, THE "GATE" IS DESTROYED !!

THERE'S NOTHING TO BE GAINED FROM SEARCHING THIS PLACE.

HYOI (PLUCK)

THE "GATE" ISN'T ENTIRELY DEAD.

I KNOW, AS I WAS CONNECTED TO IT FOR A MOMENT.

SENA HOSHI-MIYA...

WAS SHE ALWAYS SO UNSET-TLING ...?

KO (BONK)

YES, OF COURSE... IF.....WE DO THAT.....

BUT FOR THAT, WE NEED FIREPOWER... AND MAN-POWER .....

WHAT'S THAT?

YOUR DESIRE TO INHERIT GENNAI-SAMA'S MANTLE IS ADMIRABLE, BUT...

...WITHOUT A CONCRETE MEANS, THIS IS ALL JUST DUST IN THE WIND.

OOOO (WHOOSH)

.....PAPA'S MANTLE?

FARE-WELL, MISS.

THIS IS WHERE I LEAVE YOU.

GA (STEP)

I SUPPOSE A COUP D'ÉTAT COULD BE A USEFUL STEP TOWARD OPENING THE "GATE," BUT I HAVE TO DOUBT HER SANITY.

AND NOW, WE'RE PLAYING WOULD-BE USURPERS?

ZA (LAND)

OH?
HATORI?

TARA (DRIP)
ダラ…

ZURU
ズル
ZURU
ズル

BUT...

I CAN'T VERY WELL HAVE YOU RUNNING OFF ON YOUR OWN.

WAIT ...!!

ZURU (DRAG)
ズル

FU-FU.

SE—

SENA-SAMA !!?

WHERE ARE YOU PLANNING ON GOING?

ZURU

EVEN IF WE COULD SOME-HOW SMASH THROUGH ...

AGAINST THAT MANY GUARDS... A FRONTAL ATTACK WILL NEVER SUCCEED!!

ZURU ZURU

THIS WILL HARDLY QUALIFY AS A PROPER COUP D'ÉTAT AT ALL!

NO ONE HAS ANY REASON TO OBEY...!

ZURU ZURU ZURU ZURU ZURU

...ALL YOU'D HAVE DONE IS OCCUPY THE NATIONAL DIET BUILDING.

DA (DASH)

STOP RIGHT THERE!

WHO ARE YOU PEOPLE .....?

WE'RE DONE FOR...

!

WELL, DUH.

WHO SAID I'M STOPPING WITH THE OCCUPATION OF THE BUILDING?

J-JUST LIKE THAT!!?

!?!?!?

SENA'S THREE BODYGUARD ORDERS... HOW STRONG ARE THEY .....!?

NATIONAL DIET BUILDING— CENTRAL HALL

!

JITA (FLAIL)

BATA (WRITHE)

R-RELEASE ME AT ONCE!!! DO YOU HAVE ANY IDEA WHO I AM!?

ORDER CREATED BY SENA: MOROSUKE

DON (BAM)

FRAN'S WAR COMRADE: ALFRED BELL

DON'T UNDER-ESTIMATE US, HATORI.

FORMER SECURITY COUNCIL MEMBER: HARUAKI ABENO

DOSA (THUD)

NO CAUSE FOR ALARM. YOU WILL NOT BE HARMED.

... WHAT'S THE MEANING OF THIS?

NIKO (SMILE)

PLEASED TO MEET YOU, PRIME MINISTER ISOBE.

I AM SENA HOSHIMIYA, EIJI HOSHIMIYA'S SISTER.

WE WILL NOW BE OCCUPYING THE NATIONAL DIET BUILDING.

WHY DON'T WE DO THIS PEACE-FULLY?

CARE FOR A FRIENDLY GAME OF DICE, PRIME MINISTER?

AND THE ONE THROWING FOR OUR SIDE WILL BE...

I SUPPOSE IT SHOULD BE YOU, HATORI?

DICE...!?

IF YOU WIN, ALL THE HOSTAGES WILL GO FREE!

BUT IF WE WIN, THEN YOU WILL FOLLOW MY EVERY ORDER.

...REST ON MY LUCK!?!?

!? HOLD ON...

WHY SHOULD THE FATE OF THIS WHOLE COUP D'ÉTAT...

A-ALL I WANT IS TO GET AWAY...

...BUT NOW I'M IN WAY OVER MY HEAD!

NATIONAL DIET BUILDING— ASSEMBLY

...IN FRONT OF THE ENTIRE PARLIA-MENT?

FINE... THEN HOW ABOUT I NAME YOU AS THE MASTER-MIND BEHIND THE KINAI DESTRUC-TION...

S-SENA-SAMA.

PLEASE RECONSIDER THIS...

THIS IS BAD... IF I DON'T SOMEHOW GET OUT OF IT...

GAH.

G-GIVE ME A BREAK.

...
WELL?

WHAT ARE THE RULES?

CHIRA (GLANCE)

WAIT A MINUTE.

SHOULDN'T THE PRIME MINISTER BE BEGGING HER TO CALL THIS OFF...!?

WHY DOES HE SEEM ON BOARD WITH THE IDEA!?

AND WE WILL BE USING THESE THREE DICE!

CHARI (CLAK)

GI

GI (SCREEE)

TO START WITH, KNOW THAT MOROSUKE HERE WILL BE OVERSEEING THE GAME.

HIS ABILITY— "FINAL JUDGE"— WILL FORCIBLY ENSURE THAT BOTH SIDES HONOR THE RESULTS!

"FINAL JUDGE"
MOROSUKE'S ABILITY LETS HIM SUPERNATURALLY ENFORCE THE RESULTS OF ANY GAMBLE.

IT WILL BE A SIMPLE GAME OF HIGH-LOW!

UPON CASTING THE DICE, A SUM RANGING FROM THREE TO TEN IS CONSIDERED "LOW"!

ELEVEN TO EIGH-TEEN IS "HIGH"!

WHOEVER CALLS IT CORRECTLY EARNS A POINT!

HOWEVER, TRIPLE ONES AND TRIPLE SIXES WILL EARN YOU TWO POINTS!

FIRST PLAYER TO THREE POINTS IS THE WINNER.

SIMPLE ENOUGH, NO?

HMPH.

WAKI
ワキ
WAKI
ワキ

IN THE INTEREST OF FAIRNESS, THOUGH, WE WILL TAKE TURNS THROWING!

AND YOU WILL ALLOW ME TO ROLL FIRST, IN EXCHANGE FOR AGREEING TO THIS NONSENSE...

WAKI (TWITCH)
ワキ

VERY WELL.

I CAN AGREE TO THAT!

FAIR ENOUGH.

.....

HEY, HEY, HEY!

.....

BUT WHYYYY!!?

BISHI (POINT)

TA (TMP)

THIS IS CRAZY...!

...IS SENA REALLY HOPING TO CONTROL THE PRIME MINISTER BY WINNING A BET?

SHE DID MENTION THIS WAS ABOUT MORE THAN JUST OCCUPYING A BUILDING, BUT...

A politician like him should be crying foul, but...

...instead, he's eagerly accepted your unreasonable request. Something isn't right!

IS THAT SO?

Hold on. Something's off here, Sena-sama...!

You ought to call off this game!

WHY?

TCH .....!

I HAVE A REEEALLY BAD FEELING ABOUT THIS!!

...“HIGH,” THEN.

TO START, I WILL CALL “LOW.”

GOOD, THE DICE DON’T SEEM TO BE LOAD-ED.

MY INSTINCTS ARE SCREAMING THAT THIS GAME IS BAD NEWS...!

WHAT’S WITH THAT EXPERT POSE!?

!?
!?

BA (BAM)

THE FIRST THROW!!

I’LL GIVE IT ALL I HAVE!!!!!!

CHARIIIN (CLATTER)

ISOBE IS AWARDED TWO POINTS FOR HIS TRIPLE ONES!

THE SUM IS THREE, MAKING IT "LOW" !!!

I REMEMBER NOW!

THERE ARE NO HONEST POLITICIANS— NOT NOWADAYS.

TRIPLE ONES, RIGHT OFF THE BAT...!?

I'VE HEARD HE ROSE THROUGH THE RANKS OF THE UNDERWORLD AS AN EXPERT DICE-THROWER, BUT...

NI (GRIN)

THAT GOES FOR ISOBE AS WELL.

THEN IT'S ALL OVER IF I CALL THIS ONE WRONG!

...I CAN'T BELIEVE IT WAS TRUE!

IF HE'S ALREADY GOT TWO POINTS.....

HATORI.

LOSE THIS, AND I'LL KILL YOU.

RELAX. THE ODDS ARE 50/50, RIGHT?

GU (CLENCH)

IT'S..... IT'S MY TURN TO THROW. NOT LIKE LAST TIME.

"LOW" FOR ME, THEN.....

THIS TIME, I'LL GO WITH "HIGH"!

PLEASE MAKE IT LOW...!!

...YAHH!

BA (BAM)

HI.....

FIVE !!?

CHARIIIIN (CLATTER)

THREE !!?

CHIRIRIRIRI

RI

NO..... IT'LL BE TOO HIGH!?

CHIN (CLAK)

NINE IS "LOW"!!!

HATORI IS AWARDED ONE POINT!

TIME-OUT

I'M STILL ALIVE BUT JUST BARELY.....

HAA. HAA.

CLOSE ONE...

DOKA (FWUMP)

ドヵ…

GUBI (SIP)

ゴビ…

HOW'D AN ELITE MEMBER OF THE SECURITY COUNCIL LIKE ME END UP HERE ...?

THROAT'S ALL DRIED OUT.

SHIT!

PAKI (SNAP)

IN DOING SO, HE WAS ESSENTIALLY ABLE TO CHOOSE...

...WHAT THE RESULTS OF THE THROW WOULD BE, WITH HEIGHT-ENED ACCURACY!

HE USED HIS OWN BODY'S OILS TO MAKE THE DICE SLICKER AND STICKIER THAN THEY SHOULD NORMALLY BE.

DURING ISOBE'S FIRST THROW, HE WAS PROBABLY CHEATING WITH A "GREASE GRIP."

THAT MEANS I'LL LOSE AFTER HIS NEXT THROW...!

ISOBE CAN CONTROL THE RESULTS, AND HE ALREADY HAS TWO POINTS.

HMM?

I'VE GOT TO TELL SENA-SAMA.

OUR ONLY OPTION IS TO ABANDON THIS GAME, RIGHT?

.....

IF I LOSE, THE COUP D'ÉTAT IS OVER, AND I GO FREE, RIGHT?

WAIT. WHO CARES IF I LOSE...?

.....
.....

THIS CAN WORK!

IF MY ONLY CRIME IS NOT TELLING HER ABOUT ISOBE'S CHEATING, SHE CAN'T FAULT ME FOR THAT.

I'VE OBEYED SENA'S EVERY COMMAND.....

YEAH...

PHEW.

GUBI (SIP)

ガビ

HA HA HA...

THE ANSWER ...IS SO SIMPLE.

I CAN JUST LOSE. NO MORE SUF-FERING AFTER THAT.

AH HA HA HA HA!

YEAH.....!

PWAH.

HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA.

I MAY STILL HAVE NEED OF YOUR CUNNING AND GUILE.

HATORI. I WON'T LET YOU GET AWAY.

HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA.

HAH.....

SIMPLE...

HUH.

HOW BORING.

TA (TMP)

HATORIII, HAVE YOU COME UP WITH A COUNTER-STRATEGY TO HIS "GREASE GRIP"?

LET THE GAME RE-SUME!

"LOW"!

"HIGH"!

WHAT IS THIS!? WHAT IS WITH THAT GIRL!?

...HAS SEEN THROUGH EVERY-THING...!

SENA HOSHIMIYA ...

MY BODY FEELS WEIRD. I CAN'T STOP TREM-BLING...!

PIKU

PIKU

PIKU

...AND IT FEELS SO GOOD...!!!

HEE.

HEE.

ENGAGE ME IN A BATTLE OF DICE, WILL YOU...?

THEN I WILL GIVE YOU NO QUARTER...!

NOW IT'S ALL OVER...

BUT IN THIS SITUATION, MY VERY BODY...

BUT THIS GIRL IS DIFFERENT ...!

COME TO THINK OF IT, GENNAI-SAMA HIMSELF WAS A TOTAL MASOCHIST! HE SPOKE OF BRINGING HOPE TO THE WORLD, WHILE DRIVING IT TO THE BRINK OF DESTRUCTION.

GATAN (SHAKE)

!!?

GACHA (RATTLE)

...IS EXPERI-ENCING A GREATER EUPHORIA THAN EVER BEFORE ...!

SHE'S JUST A MON-STER!

HE SUFFERED UNDER THE WEIGHT OF HIS OWN SINS...I WAS IN AWE OF SUCH AN ELEGANT MASOCHIST!

WHA—
...!?

CHARIIIN
(CLATTER)

TRIPLE SIXES MAKES EIGHTEEN TOTAL.

HATORI IS AWARDED TWO POINTS, BRINGING HIS TOTAL TO THREE AND MAKING HIM THE WINNER!

THAT'S "HIGH" !!!

KUWA
(ROAR)

THAT'S CHEATING...!!!

HMPH.

YOU...

YOU SHOOK THE TABLE ...!?

TH-THAT'S ...

BOTH YOU AND I WERE LEAVING IT UP TO FATE...

...AND I CAME OUT AHEAD.

HEH HEH.

AND WHAT'S WRONG WITH THAT, PRIME MINISTER?

WHY WOULD SHAKING THE TABLE MATTER IN THE FIRST PLACE?

IT'S NOT AS IF YOU KNEW WHAT THE OUTCOME WOULD BE.

GU

GU

GU (TENSE)

.....!!

000 SADIST!

SHE'S OPENED MY EYES... WHAT A LOVELY...

GENNAI HOSHI-MIYA MAY HAVE BEEN A MASOCH-IST, BUT SENA SURE ISN'T.

NO.

ZA (STEP)

SHALL WE PROCEED, SENA-SAMA?

THIS GOVERNMENT IS NOW YOURS TO COMMAND.

YES. NEXT IS FUJI'S TRAINING GROUNDS.

THE FIREPOWER THERE WILL BE MINE...!

Subject 38: END

Subject 39

SHH.

STILL JUST RUMORS. DON'T CAUSE A PANIC...

PIKO

PIKO (TWITCH)

ピッピッ

IS IT REALLY TRUE? DOWN IN TOKYO...

LAKE HAMANA— TOKYO SIDE

...AND GLOVES ...

YES, THAT SHOULD BE EVERY-THING.

SNACKS, CLEAN UNDER-WEAR...

PIKO

THANK YOU FOR YOUR PURCHASE.

WITH THIS DISGUISE, NO ONE WILL SUSPECT A THING.

FU-FU...

SUN-GLASSES?

SUN-GLASSES ...?

AH, THAT MAIDEN LADY HAS SUN-GLASSES.

HMPH.

WELL DONE, IYO-CHIN!

WELL, I'M STOCKING UP IN PREPA-RATION FOR OUR ATTEMPT TO FIND SENA-SAMA.

"WHY IS IYO CARRYING AROUND THESE HEAVY BAGS," YOU ASK...?

PHEW.

HUP.

DOSA (THUMP)

ドサッ

NEEDLESS TO SAY, SENA-SAMA WAS NOWHERE TO BE FOUND THERE EITHER.

WE ENCOUNTERED AN ENEMY IN LAKE HAMANA YESTERDAY... SOMEHOW, WE MANAGED TO DEFEAT HIM AND MAKE IT TO SHORE.

AND THE POLICE ARE OUT IN FORCE...

A CERTAIN RUMOR, IT SEEMS...

RUMORS ...

SOMETHING HAS THE WHOLE CITY TALKING...

DOYO

ドヨ

DOYO

ドヨ

DOYO (GAB)

ドヨ

TCH... HA-HA.

I WAS JUST HIRED BY THOSE GUYS.

BUT I DID HEAR SOMETHING CRAZY.

!?

THEY'RE PLANNING A COUP D'ÉTAT IN TOKYO!

DOZAA (BAM)

WHAT DO YOU MEAN YOU DON'T KNOW WHERE SENA IS...?

YOU PIECE OF...!!!

Subject 39: "Crossed Paths"
Place: Lake Hamana

DOYO

SO ALL THAT JUNK ABOUT A COUP D'ÉTAT WAS JUST A RUMOR?

DOYO

HEY.

I HEAR THE GOV-ERNMENT'S HOLDING A PRESS CONFERENCE AT NINE...!!

YOU IDIOT. MAYBE THAT'S EXACTLY WHAT THE PRESS CONFERENCE IS ABOUT!

HUH?

NO WAY.

DOYO (GAB)

DOYO

ANYWAY, LET'S FIND A TV, QUICK!

.....

I HAVE A BAD FEELING ABOUT THIS...

IT'S GOTTA BE A JOKE!? WITH THE WHOLE EIJI HOSHIMIYA THING GOING ON TOO.....

AH HA HA HA.

IF THE TIME COMES WHEN SENA HOSHIMIYA STANDS IN OUR WAY AS AN ENEMY...

...AND THAT'S WHY I'M WORRIED.

I UNDER-STAND THAT EIJI-SAMA CARES ABOUT SENA-SAMA...

...WILL EIJI-SAMA BE ABLE TO FIGHT BACK...?

THE PRESS CONFER-ENCE!

IT'S START-ING.

ZA

ZA

ZA (KZZT)

PA (FLASH)

!

WAIT.

DA (DASH)

I'M SORRY, EIJI-SAMA!

YOU'RE LATE, STUPID IYO!

Greetings ...

...to everyone watching this.

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA (CHATTER)

!?

I am Sena Hoshimiya, Eiji Hoshimiya's sister.

WHOA.

WHY'S HATORI THERE TOO .....!?

GATA (STAND)

ガタッ

SENA ...!!!

First, I would like to announce that from today forward, I am Japan's prime minister.

DOYO

ドヨ

DOYO (GAB)

ドヨ

I KNEW IT...

(CHUMMC)

Huh !?

.....

WELL... TO BE FRANK, THIS IS A COUP D'ÉTAT.

NOW, ON TO THE MAIN TOPIC.

EVERYONE, PLEASE REJOICE...!

ALL SO I CAN CREATE THE WONDERFUL WORLD I ENVISION.

!!?
!!?
!!?
!!?
DOYO (GAB)
U-fu...
DOYO
ドヨ
Fu fu fu...
Ah ha ha!
Yes, yes. Those are the faces I was hoping to see!
DOYO
ドヨ
The blast will originate from our own Holy Mt. Fuji!
Mt. Fuji
Mt. Houei
Five hours from now, a Great Destruction will occur...
...and the world will once again be utterly destroyed!
(WHOOSH)

The energy I need to open the "gate" at Holy Mt. Fuji!

All those looks of shock and disbelief... They send even more energy into the pulse lines...!

NO WAY ALL THAT'S TRUE...!?

IS SHE CRAZY OR SOMETHING ...?

ZAWA

ZAWA (CHATTER)

WHAT'S SHE TALKING ABOUT?

DESTRUC-TION...?

In other words, she is more than capable of bringing about such disasters!

KEHEE.

!!?

I hate to tell you, but you all seem to be misin-formed.

I mean, Sena-sama was the one who caused the Kinai Destruc-tion.

YOUR SCREAMS ...

YOUR CRIES ...

THAT ENERGY IS FLOWING THROUGH THE EARTH!

It will only hurt for a moment... but then the magic happens!

ZAWA

.....

ｷﾀｰ!!

UWAHHHH.

DA (DASH)

EEK.

AHH.

Go on. Let the despair seep in!

GOOD...

Not without killing me.

Five more hours until your demise. It cannot be stopped.

This won't go like it did back in Kinai.

.....You're listening, aren't you?

...Big Brother.

SENA:::!!!

This time, it's war...

ZA (KZZT)

The forces in Yokohama are headed north to Fuji!

And we've received word that the forces in Fuji have deployed the bombs I was talking about!

BARA

BARA

BARA (F.WOOM)

CALM YOURSELF, SECRETARY-GENERAL.

.....

KIYOSHIROU IGAWA— IN THE SKIES OVER SHIZUOKA PREFECTURE

55

DON (SLAM)

Another Great De-struction, this time at Mt. Fuji...!!?

Just what on Earth is going on here, Ambas-sador Igawa!!?

U.N. HQ'S SECRETARY-GENERAL: HANSAN HAKIM

HMPH.

Yeah, that's kind of a big deal!!!

JAPAN'S BEEN TAKEN OVER. THAT'S ALL.

...IT SEEMS EIJI HOSHIMIYA STANDS IN OPPOSITION TO SENA HOSHIMIYA.

HOWEVER... BASED ON THAT LITTLE EXCHANGE...

AND THE FASTEST WAY TO DO THAT...

WE NEED TO FIGURE OUT WHAT WE'RE UP AGAINST.

HUH !?

HEY. SET A NEW COURSE.

BARA バラ

BARA バラ

BARA (FWOOM) バラ

This situation demands urgency!

We're about to convene on strategy here at HQ.

The nuclear option may once again become viable.

DOGAA (KAPOW)

GET IT TOGETHER ...!

GUH .....

MERI (GRIND)

I'M TELLING YOU TO GIVE UP, EIJI!

WE HAVE TO KILL HER!

THE WORLD KNOWS NOW! THE U.N.'S ALREADY ON THE MOVE!

FURA (SWAY)

YOU CAN'T COVER FOR HER ANY-MORE!

NOT WHEN SHE JUST DE-CLARED WAR ON YOU!

.....

.....

ORDER!

BA (TURN)

RIN KURENAI! "DON'T KILL SENA"!!!

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

O (FWISH)

!

GASHA (CLAK)

SHA

DO (THUNK)

DO

DO

DO

DO

REBIRTH

FIRE!!!

PLEASE STOP, EIJI-SAMA!

NO...

RIN!

IF YOU'RE SERIOUS ABOUT GOING OFF TO KILL SENA, THEN I'M GONNA NEED YOU TO STAY DEAD FOR A LITTLE WHILE!

YOU'RE SUCH A LOSER!

IS THAT THE KIND OF GUY YOU REALLY ARE, HUH!?

BREAKING YOUR PROMISE JUST 'COS IT'S NOT CONVENIENT FOR YOU ANYMORE ?

OR ARE YOU THAT CONFIDENT YOU CAN CONVINCE SENA TO STOP!?

DO (POW)

PA (WHAP)

PA

SO WHAT NOW!?

YOU GONNA ORDER THE U.N. AND THE REST OF THE WORLD NOT TO KILL HER EITHER !?

PAN

...CAN'T CONTROL A PERSON'S HEART...!

EVEN YOUR ALMIGHTY BIND DOMINATOR...

...I'M SORRY, EIJI-SAMA, BUT...

...I VERY MUCH DOUBT THAT.

ZA (SKID)

ZA

IT'S ALL...

...JUST A BLUFF, PROBA-BLY!!!

ZAN

YES, THE KINAI DESTRUC-TION DIDN'T GO OFF AS PLANNED, BUT...

...IF SHE UTILIZES THE REMAINING SPIRITUAL ENERGY WITH MT. FUJI AS A CONDUIT... WHAT SHE SAYS MAY BE POSSIBLE.

TO BEGIN WITH, KINAI'S INVERTED PENTAGRAM WAS A MASSIVE NETWORK OF SPIRITUAL CHANNELS. IT INCLUDED A PORTION OF THE LEY LINE THAT CONNECTS IZUMO TO MT. FUJI.

Izumo
Motoise
Awaji
Mt. Ibuki
Kumano
Ise
Holy Mt. Fuji

NO.

.....

LIKELIHOOD ASIDE...

...SURELY YOU CAN TELL WHETHER OR NOT SENA-SAMA IS SERIOUS, EIJI-SAMA. I KNOW...

.....

I-I...

.....

I KNOW SHE'S SERIOUS.

BUT I STILL CAN'T FIGURE OUT WHAT SENA'S THINKING ...

AH.

ZA (STAND)

STOP IT! DON'T MAKE HER SECOND-GUESS HERSELF ...

...YOU MANIPU-LATOR!

DO

ENOUGH ALREADY !!!!

GA (POW)

GASHAAAN (BOOM) ガシャーン

IYO. DO YOU AGREE WITH RIN THAT WE SHOULD KILL SENA?

EIJI. I'M GOING TO GO KILL SENA...

...AND I WON'T LET YOU STOP ME!

KARA (CRUMBLE)

IF I KEEP GOING ALONG WITH THIS IDIOT'S LUKEWARM APPROACH...

...THE WHOLE WORLD'S DOOMED!

YOU THINK I'M LETTING YOU GO ALONE...?

CAN'T LET RIN KILL SENA...!

...WITHOUT A WAY TO GET TO FUJI QUICK, WE'LL NEVER MAKE IT IN TIME.

KYAH!

GESHI (KICK)

ゲシッ

THAT SAID...

I THINK I'VE GOT THE ANSWER YOU'RE LOOKING FOR, BIG SIS!

PAN (BANG)

TA-DAAA!

!

GUH...IF I MANIPULATE GRAVITY AND THE FRICTION COEFFICIENT, WE CAN GO BY LAND...!

BARA (FWOOM)

BARA

SHURU (WHISTLE)

シュル

SHURU シュル

SHURU シュル

DUMBASS! YOU HOPING TO RUN INTO THE MILITARY FORCES!?

!?

A SIGNAL FLARE...?

BARA

NEED A LIFT?

BARA

GET ON, EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

IGAWA ...!?

BA

BA

I'M CALLING A TRUCE FOR NOW.

TIME IS OF THE ESSENCE!

BA

BA

BA

BARA

BARA

BARA

BARA (CHUFF)

HEY THERE ...!

TON (TAP)

HERE'S WHERE WE ARE NOW.

LEAVING LAKE HAMANA.

BARA

BARA

BARA (CHUFF)

Holy Mt. Fuji

Military—on the move

Forest

Helicopter's position

LESS THAN AN HOUR AGO, THE U.N.'S SATELLITES OBSERVED THE MILITARY FORCES TRANSPORTING SOMETHING.

THEIR DESTINATION IS MT. FUJI.

BARA

BARA

.....

WE EXPECT SENA HOSHIMIYA IS WITH THE CONVOY, WHICH IS WHY WE'RE IN PURSUIT.

EVEN IF IT COMES TO THAT, I COULD ALWAYS STEAL THE CHOPPER. PERFECT.

OR AT LEAST, THAT'S WHAT I'M HOPING.

WHAT'S REALLY YOUR GAME HERE, IGAWA?

LIKE I SAID, I'M CALLING A TRUCE.

AS THINGS ARE, NEITHER OF US HAS ANYTHING TO GAIN FROM A FIGHT, RIGHT?

HE WAS MORE THAN READY TO FIGHT THIS GUY BEFORE... SO WHAT NOW!?

IS EIJI FINALLY COMING AROUND ...?

CHIRA (GLANCE)

I KNOW I PROMISED RIN I WOULD TELL IGAWA ABOUT SENA, BUT...

YOU TELL ME EVERYTHING YOU KNOW ABOUT SENA HOSHIMIYA, AND I GET YOU WHERE YOU WANT TO BE.

HMPH.

GIVE AND TAKE. IT'S BEST FOR EVERYONE HERE... RIGHT?

FOR NOW, I'VE GOTTA CONVINCE HIM THAT SENA'S NOT TO BLAME!

EVERY-THING'S CHANGED!

BARA

BARA

I SEE.

ACCORDING TO YOU, THE KINAI DESTRUCTION WAS CAUSED BY THE SECURITY COUNCIL AND GENNAI HOSHIMIYA.

AND NOW, SENA HOSHIMIYA HAS BEEN TRICKED AND PROPPED UP AS THE RINGLEADER BEHIND THE NEXT GREAT DESTRUCTION...

TCH.

MORE LIES? DAMMIT, EIJI...!

!? HOLD ON...!

YES, EXACTLY!

KNEW IT WAS WORTH A SHOT. JUST HAD TO FOOL IGAWA!

HATORI MUST HAVE BEEN SETTING THINGS UP FOR A WHILE NOW.

!

IT MAKES SENSE...WE'VE ALSO NOTICED THE SECURITY COUNCIL BEHAVING STRANGELY.

.....

HUH!?

AND IT'S TRUE THAT GENNAI HOSHIMIYA WAS THE LEAD SCIENTIST WHEN IT CAME TO ENERGY RESEARCH.

GREAT!

HE ACTUALLY BELIEVED ME...!?

GU (CLENCH)

SO SENA HOSHIMIYA WAS INNOCENT ALL ALONG, HUH?

NOT TO MENTION, THE IDEA OF A YOUNG GIRL LIKE SENA HOSHIMIYA...

...PULLING OFF A COUP D'ÉTAT...

IT ALL SOUNDS QUITE SUSPICIOUS ...

"GIVE AND TAKE," EIJI HOSHI-MIYA!

DID I STUTTER? "GIVE AND TAKE"!

I HAVE NO PROBLEM SHOOTING YOU DEAD RIGHT NOW!!

DON (POW)

.....
THAT'S WHAT YOU EXPECT ME TO BELIEVE?

!!?

YOU DAMN BRAT!!!

YOU CAN'T FOOL AN ADULT THAT EASILY!

SHUUU (FSSHH)

NO MORE LIES! THE TRUTH'S WRITTEN ACROSS YOUR FACE, PLAIN AS DAY!!

BIKUU (SHOCK)

.....
.....
...!?!?

.....
.....
.....

BI

BI (QUIVER)

!

WHAT IS THIS...

...LOVELY, REFRESHING FEELING...!

DON (BOOM)

BA (TURN)

EIJI-SAMA. SOMETHING BAD, INCOMING, DEAD AHEAD...!

WHA— !?

O (WHOOSH)

Subject 39 : END

SENA'S BROADCAST COULDN'T HAVE BEEN WORSE.

...JUST LIKE ME, HER BIG BROTHER!

NOW THE WORLD THINKS THAT SENA HOSHIMIYA IS PURE EVIL...

BA

BA

BA

BA (CHUFF)

RIGHT. NOTHING'S HAPPENED YET.

BUT IT'S OKAY. I CAN STILL COVER FOR HER.

AS LONG AS WE CAN STOP THE DESTRUC-TION, I'LL FIGURE SOMETHING OUT... RIGHT?

BA (BAM)

ORDER!

AIR BARRIER!!

"PROTECT THE HELI-COPTER, WALL OF AIR"!

DON (BOOM)

(WHOOSH)

IF I CAN JUST STOP SENA...!

EIJI-SAMA!

SOME-THING BAD, INCOMING, DEAD AHEAD ...!

HMPH.

ガチャ GACHA (CLICK)

A MI—

A MIS-SILE ...!?

C-CLOSE ONE!

BA
BA
BA (CHUFF)
WHA—
APPEARS AS THOUGH WE'RE ALREADY IN ENEMY AIRSPACE!
WHAT THE HELL IS THAT THING...!?
BAKI
BAKI
BAKI
BAKI
BAKI (CRAK)
BAKI
WE'RE LOSING SPEED!!
I'M LOSING CON-TROL OF THE CHOP-PER!
A-AMBAS-SADOR!!
THAT'S HOW THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE USED TO TRANSPORT FREIGHT...
NO DOUBT ABOUT IT. SENA HOSHIMIYA AND HER PEOPLE ARE DOWN THERE.
BAKI
BAKI

SENA'S DOWN THERE ...!!?

WE'RE GOING DOWN ...!!

WE'RE ...

I CAN'T REGAIN CONTROL ...!

OOO (WHOOSH)

ORDER!!!

THE HOSHI-MIYA ENERGY DEVELOP-MENT RESEARCH LABS'S SUPER-MASSIVE FREIGHT TRAIN...

THE HOUEI EXPRESS!!!

DO

DO (RUMBLE)

Subject 40: "Battle En Route to Fuji (Part 1)"
Place: Fuji's Aokigahara

DOOOON (CRASH)

BARA (CRUMBLE)

BARA

DOSHA (SMASH)

BARA

BARA

PIKU (TWITCH)

ZURU (DRAG)

ACK ...!

...GUH.

GU (STRAIN)
GU
UHH...
OW.
YOU GUYS OKAY?
YORO (WOBBLE)
HAA...
SHIT.
THOUGHT WE WERE GONERS...!
HAA.
HAA.
BARA
BARA
AH.
OOO (WHOOSH)
THIS IS...? GUESS WE GOT LUCKY. CRASHED RIGHT INTO THE TRAIN.
!
HUH?
WE'RE ALIVE FOR NOW.....

WHA ...!!?

DIDN'T SENA GIVE YOU AMPLE WARNING?

YOU JUST DON'T QUIT, EIJI!

BYUO (FWOOSH)

ZA (STEP)

!

BA (DIVE)

EIJI-SAMA ...!!!!!!

ZAKUUU (SLASH)

TCH.

YOU WON'T BE GETTING PAST ME...!

BA (LEAP)

SORRY, SENA'S ORDERS.

I'M GONNA KILL YOU ALL...!

SENA'S ORDERS ...!?

FU (FSSHH)

THAT WAS FRAN.

AN ABILITY USER WHO CAN STOP TIME!

WHAT WAS THAT JUST NOW?

TCH ...

Y—

YOU OKAY, IYO...?

UGHH .....

OOO (WHOOSH)

FROM UP IN THE CHOPPER, WE COULD SEE THIS IS A THREE-CAR TRAIN.....

GATATAN (KAKLUNK)

GATATAN

...WHICH MEANS...

...WE'RE CURRENTLY SITTING IN THE CABOOSE.

LET'S GO OVER THIS.

KON (TUNK)

KON

NAH, BIG SIS.

FALLING BACK HERE PROBABLY SAVED OUR SKINS.

TOO BAD WE COULDN'T CRASH-LAND IN THE FIRST CAR, WHERE SENA PROBABLY IS.

...WELL, THAT SUCKS.

WE GOT REPORTS THAT SENA HOSHIMIYA USED HER FORCES TO TAKE TEN-TON BOMBS OUTTA YOKOHAMA BASE.

SO SHE'S PROBABLY USING THIS BIG, OLD HUNK OF JUNK...

...TO TRANS-PORT THOSE BOMBS.

YOU'RE SAYING WE'VE GOT BOMBS SOME-WHERE ON THIS TRAIN...?

YEP. ONE WRONG MOVE EARLIER, AND WE'D ALL BE PUSHING DAISIES RIGHT ABOUT NOW.

WHAT'S SENA PLANNING TO DO WITH BOMBS!!..!?

SIGH.

.....

THAT'S NOT OUR MAIN CONCERN AT THE MOMENT.

First Car
Sena Hoshimiya and Bombs (?)
Second Car
Fran (?)
Third Car
Us
IN ORDER TO STOP THE DESTRUCTION SENA IS PLANNING...
...WE HAVE TO MAKE OUR WAY TO THE FIRST CAR...
THINK ABOUT THE LAYOUT.
MY MERCENARY INSTINCTS ARE ROARING.
HMPH.
...WHICH MEANS WE HAVE TO FIGHT OFF FRAN FIRST!
H-HOLD ON. YOU'RE GONNA FIGHT TOO!?
ANOTHER ANNOYING GUY ON OUR TEAM...
HMM?
OF COURSE. I'M THE AMBAS-SADOR, AFTER ALL!

EITHER WAY... I'VE JUST GOTTA STOP SENA.

BUT...

DID I SAY THAT?

YOU JUST CALLED YOURSELF A MERCENARY!

WHO EVER HEARD OF A FIGHTING AMBASSADOR?

CHIRA (GLANCE)

チラ…

IF IT'S A PLAN YOU NEED, I'VE GOT ONE. LET'S MOVE, EIJI!

PRETTY SURE HE'S STILL OUT TO LEARN SENA'S SECRET...!

FRAN'S ABILITY IS A PROBLEM. YOU SAW THAT, RIGHT? HIS TIME-FREEZING IS GONNA GIVE US TROUBLE.

IGAWA'S STILL MY ENEMY, SO CAN I REALLY BRING HIM ALONG...?

GAAAAA (RUMBLE)

Proceed just as planned.

AA

THEY'RE ON THE MOVE.

SENA.

UGH.

I FEEL BAD ABOUT IYO, BUT...RIN IS STILL CHOMP-ING AT THE BIT TO KILL SENA.

SO THIS WORKS OUT FOR EVERY-ONE.

TA (TMP) TA (TMP)

RIN, DIDN'T IYO SAVE YOU BACK AT LAKE HAMANA!? HEALING HER TAKES TOP PRIORITY!

WHOA...! YOU'RE SERIOUSLY GOING ON AHEAD— JUST THE TWO OF YOU?

BO (FLIK) BO BO

FLIIII (HLIMM)

WE'LL COUNTER HIS TIME-STOP ABILITY WITH THIS!

STRATEGY TIME, EIJI.

THE ANTI-ORDER FIELD...!

BAN (BAM)

BUT WITHOUT AN EXTERNAL BATTERY, IT CAN ONLY ACTIVATE FOR TWENTY SECONDS ...

...AND IT'S ONLY EFFECTIVE WITHIN A FIFTEEN-METER RADIUS.

I FORGOT ABOUT THAT...!

KA
IGA (KLANG)

FIFTEEN METERS, YOU THINK?

IF THAT'S THE RANGE OF HIS ABILITY, THEN IT'S ABOUT THE SAME AS MY DEVICE HERE.

KATSU

KATSU

ABOUT HOW FAR AWAY WAS HE EARLIER WHEN HE GOT THE JUMP ON YOU...?

KATSU (STEP)

KA

...SO THAT'S BAD.

CHA (CHAK)

KA

...WHICH IS WHY, EIJI...

...I'M LENDING YOU THIS!

Fran

15m

Igawa

Eiji

THE SECOND THAT HAPPENS, WE'RE DONE FOR.

YEAH. IF HE CATCHES ON TO MY PLAN, HE'LL JUST STOP TIME FOR THE DEVICE...

A GUN .....!!?

HIS ABILITY WILL BE CANCELED OUT, AND YOU'LL ALSO BE HELPLESS.

YOU'LL CHARGE AHEAD AS A DECOY!

JAKI (KACHAK)

THAT THING IS JUST INSUR-ANCE.

THEN I USE THE OPENING TO ACTIVATE THE DEVICE.

WAIT ...!

ONE WORD OF WARNING, THOUGH ...

ALL YOU HAVE TO DO IS AIM...

...AND GUN DOWN FRAN!

H—

HOLD ON!

CHA ダーン!!

HOW D'YOU EXPECT ME TO USE THIS THING!!?

I'VE NEVER ACTUALLY KILLED ANYONE BEFORE ...!

CHA (CHAK)

.....WHAT ARE YOU SAYING, EIJI?

TEN YEARS AGO, YOU WERE THE ONE WHO KILLED ALL THOSE PEOPLE WITH THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION.

BUT THE TRUTH IS, I NEVER KILLED ANYONE...

I DON'T WANNA KILL ANY-ONE...!

OOOOOOOOOOO
OOOOOOOOOOO

I STILL WANT IGAWA TO THINK I CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUCTION.

!

LISTEN, WE'RE NOT REACHING THE FIRST CAR WITHOUT RUNNING INTO TROUBLE.

!!!
!!!
!!!
!!!
!!!

NO WAY !!! !!!

IF WE HAVE ANY HOPE OF STOPPING THIS THING, YOU MAY EVEN HAVE TO KILL SENA.

BA (BAM)

SENA STILL HASN'T DONE ANYTHING ...!!!

SO WHY DO WE HAVE TO KILL HER ...!!?!!?

JAKI (KACHAK)

YOU TALK ABOUT NOT BEING ABLE TO KILL, BUT NOW YOU'VE GOT THAT GUN POINTED AT ME.....?

SO WHICH IS IT?

I'M AFRAID I JUST DON'T UNDERSTAND YOU ANYMORE, EIJI HOSHIMIYA ...!!

GOOOO (RUMBLE)

ゴオオオ

HMPH.

EVER HEARD OF INSURRECTION? AIDING AND ABETTING?

AND AS FAR THERE BEING NO REASON TO KILL HER...

...DO YOU CARE SO LITTLE ABOUT THE WORLD?

!!!!

SHE MEANS TO SPREAD FEAR ACROSS THE WORLD.

EVEN IF WE PUT A STOP TO HER AMBITIONS...

...SHE'LL STILL HAVE TO ANSWER FOR HER CRIMES...!

I CAN'T COVER FOR SENA.....!

...I CAN STILL...!

AS LONG AS WE STOP THE DESTRUC-TION...

NO, IT CAN'T BE... I SHOULD STILL BE ABLE TO TRICK HIM...!

YOU'RE TRYING TO COVER FOR SENA HOSHIMIYA, AREN'T YOU...?

...

OOO (WHOOSH)

EIJI HOSHI-MIYA.

YOU'VE BEEN LYING AND KEEPING SECRETS THIS WHOLE TIME, AND I THINK...

...I MIGHT JUST KNOW WHY.

COULD IT BE?

WAS THE DESTRUC-TION TEN YEARS AGO ACTUALLY CAUSED BY SENA HOSHIMIYA ...!?

Kyushu: "Order" Declares Independence

TO BEGIN WITH, YOU YOURSELF WERE THE ONE WHO ANNOUNCED ...

...THAT YOU CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUCTION!

GULP...

I SEE.

ABOUT THAT WORD OF WARNING I MENTIONED...

HYOI (DODGE)

ヒョイ

PAN (BANG)

IT'S SURPRISINGLY DIFFICULT TO HIT A MOVING TARGET WITH THAT THING.

NOW, I'LL HAVE THE TRUTH ABOUT SENA HOSHIMIYA!

GU (STRAIN)

GU

EIJI!

Subject 40:END

Subject 41

AOKIGAHARA WOODS— INSIDE THE FREIGHT TRAIN THE HOUEI EXPRESS

GOOOO (RUMBLE)

DON (SLAM)

WHY GO TO SUCH LENGTHS TO COVER FOR SENA HOSHIMI-YA!?

TELL ME, EIJI.

WHAT ARE YOU HIDING ABOUT HER?

THE TRUTH. NOW.

GIRI

GIRI (GRIND)

GUH .....

AND SHE ADMITS SHE'S ABOUT TO CAUSE ANOTHER DESTRUC-TION!

YOU CAN'T SHIELD HER ANY-MORE ...!

SHE'S THE MASTER-MIND BEHIND THIS COUP D'ÉTAT!

THERE'S JUST GOTTA BE A WAY...!

WRONG... I CAN STILL PROTECT HER...!

THAT'S ...

...NOT TRUE!

THIS GUY...

GU GU (STRAIN)

HAVE TO SHUT HIM UP ...!

...SO JUST ADMIT IT. SHE CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUCTION TEN YEARS AGO.

I WAS PLANNING ON DRAGGING THE TRUTH OUT OF YOU SOMEHOW ...

GIRI

GIRI (GRIND)

DO (BAM)

DO

DON

ORDER!!!

"NO MORE ASKING ME ANYTHING ABOUT SENA"!!!!!!

Subject 41: "Battle En Route to Fuji (Part 2)"
Place: Fuji's Aokigahara

...SUPER-MASSIVE FREIGHT TRAIN, THE HOUEI EXPRESS...!!!!

FROM MT. HOUEI'S CALDERA, THE HOSHIMIYA ENERGY DEVELOP-MENT RESEARCH LAB'S...

GOO (RUMBLE)

GOOOOO ゴォォォォ

RUSHING TOWARD THE FIRST CAR, WHERE SENA MUST BE!

GATATAN ガタン

EIJI AND COMPANY ARE ABOARD, AS THE TRAIN CARVES A PATH THROUGH THE WOODS AROUND MT. FUJI.

GATATAN (KAKLUNK) ガタン

THEY'RE RUSHING AHEAD FROM THE CABOOSE.

OOO

TCH.

WHEN THINGS DON'T GO YOUR WAY, YOU JUST SILENCE ME.

HMPH.

THERE'S NO WORKING WITH A BRAT LIKE YOU.

INSIDE THE THIRD CAR

WE KNOW THEY ABANDONED YOU.

WE HAVE INTELLIGENCE ON THE DAZAIFU GOVERNMENT, YOU KNOW?

THERE'S STILL A WAY TO PROTECT SENA...!

!!?

GATAN

SHUT UP.

LET'S KEEP GOING!

DA (DASH)

NO WONDER, GIVEN HOW YOU ACT.

...I CAN MAKE HIM ANNOUNCE THAT SENA IS INNO-CENT!

SO ALL I'VE GOTTA DO NOW IS STOP SENA...!

ORDER!!!

JAKIN (KACHAK)

IGAWA'S A U.N. AMBAS-SADOR. IF I JUST CONTROL HIM...

(WHOOSH)

I CAN MAKE THIS WORK!

GACHAN (CLICK)

THE COUPLING ...!!!

OH NO!!!

GYURU (WRAP)

GYU

GYURU

"HANDRAIL, TIE THE COUPLINGS TOGETHER" !!!

I SAID, SHUT UP !!!!!!

MEKI

MEKI (CREAK)

HMPH. THAT ABSOLUTE CONTROL CORRUPTS QUICKLY.

YOU CAN'T EVEN SEE HOW FOOLISH YOU ARE ANYMORE.

!

FRAN
.....!!!

ZAN (STAND)

"IGAWA, ACTIVATE THE DEVICE"!

ORDER!!!

...SHIT! WHAT'S HE DOING!?

BAKA (POP)

GUH.

EIJI... I HOPE YOU REMEMBER MY WARNING!!

USING THE ANTI-ORDER FIELD HERE WON'T NECESSARILY GUARANTEE OUR VICTORY.

KA (FLASH)

ANTI-ORDER FIELD, ACTIVATE!!!

ORDER!!! CHRONO-GRAPH.....

THE CREST IS VANISH-ING.....!?

!!?

FU (FADE)

SO THIS IS MY CHANCE... BUT...

CHA (CHAK)

ME AND FRAN CAN'T USE OUR ABILITIES FOR FIFTEEN SECONDS NOW!

GIRI (GRIND)

CAN I KILL HIM!?

...I'VE MADE IT THIS FAR WITHOUT REALLY HURTING ANYONE...

WHY'S HE HES-ITATING ...?

THAT FOOL.

I'VE GOTTA SHOOT HIM!

TCH .....

CAN I REALLY SHOOT HIM!?

DAMN...

SU (SWF)

DON (BANG)

HE DODGED... THIS IS BAD!

THAT'S WHY I TOLD HIM...! EIJI'S JUST AN AMATEUR, BUT HE'S UP AGAINST A COMBAT PRO!

WITHOUT HIS ABILITY, EIJI CAN'T HOPE TO BEAT THIS OPPONENT UNLESS HE STRAT-EGIZES!

TCH.

EIJI!

BA (DIVE)

ZAN (SLASH)

HE DOESN'T HAVE THE LUXURY OF HESITA-TION...!

!?

FIFTEEN SECONDS ARE UP. WE HAVE TO GET AWAY!

BA (GRAB)

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

WHA—...!?

FLED DOWN BELOW, HAVE THEY?

...TCH.

HOUEI EXPRESS—
FIRST CAR

GOOOOO (RUMBLE)

INTERIOR

SENA-SAMA.

KA (STEP)

GI (CREAK)

.....OH.

I'M SORRY TO SAY, BUT THE ATTEMPT TO CUT CAR THREE LOOSE HAS FAILED.

FRAN IS PURSUING EIJI AS WE SPEAK.

ARE YOU REALLY OKAY WITH ALL THIS?

IT'S HER OWN BROTHER, AND SHE'S BARELY REACTING ...

"HER."

U-FU-FU... NOBODY CAN ACTUALLY STOP THIS TRAIN.

LEAST OF ALL, EIJI!

YET...YES, HE IS PERSISTENT. I SUPPOSE WE SHOULD PUT AN END TO HIM.

SHE'S JUST CRAZY ENOUGH TO MAKE ME DOUBT THIS ALLIANCE.

STILL...

MEANWHILE, SOMEONE IS WAITING ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE "GATE," EAGER FOR IT TO OPEN.

...WHAT COULD BE BETTER FOR A MAS-OCHIST LIKE ME!?

RIGHT.

PA
PA
PA (APPEAR)
What was that loud noise? ...You okay, Eiji!?
Eiji-sama!?
I'M FINE.
HOW ABOUT YOU TWO?
OUCH...
GARA (RATTLE)
GATATA (CLATTER)
THE HELL?
WHAT'D YOU DO TO THIS COUPLING ...!?
IYO'S PROBABLY GONNA BE OKAY...
HEY.
AH, OVER THERE.
THEY'VE ALMOST CAUGHT UP.
IGAWA ...?

Eiji, we've gotta cooperate and keep moving!

DON (SHOVE)

HEY...

We should join up, Eiji-sama!

My predictions say that Sena-sama is acceler-ating her timetable...

I'D LIKE THEIR HELP, BUT...NO WAY I'M LETTING RIN ANYWHERE NEAR SENA!

.....BOTH IGAWA AND RIN WANT SENA DEAD.

.....
You're pathetic...

...Big Brother.

BASHI

BASHI

WHAT TO DO...!?

BASHI (WHAP)

You even listening, Eiji...!?

!

You keep fighting, but you're all alone.

And when I'm gone, you'll still be alone.

CHIII CHUMMO

ギィィ

You tricked me, declared war on the world, and isolated yourself.

Even now, you're struggling all on your own.

THAT VOICE...

SENA !!?

...
HUH?

THANK GOODNESS... I WANTED TO TALK TO YOU, SENA.

THERE'S SOMETHING I'VE GOTTA KNOW.

Wh-what the hell, Eiji!?

.....
are.

WH-WHAT WAS THAT, SENA...?

?

...you creepy stalker!

You're so gross ...

With the time I have left in this world...I'll destroy it before I die!

Eiji.

You're just an ordinary high schooler, but I'll be this world's ruler. Don't you get it?

WHAT'RE YOU...?

.....
S-SENA!?

Get out of here now!

I've been wondering why you went and stole my Dominator from me.

I guess it was all so you could use it to stalk me, right?

Then, Holy Mt. Fuji's pulse lines...

...will activate its natural "gate"!

This train is carrying ten-ton bombs, and in twenty minutes, it's going to plunge straight into Mt. Houei!

I want you off before then.

You're getting in my way, you creep!

GOOOOOOO (RUMBLE)

A NATURAL .....

...GATE ...!?

Eiji.

WAIT, SENA. WHAT'S THIS "GATE" ...!?

WA—

BU (KZZT)

Sena is totally insane.

NO...!

Eiji...try to do this half-assed, and you're gonna get yourself killed instead!!

I know you don't wanna hurt anyone, but...

...you can't even beat Fran with that attitude!

Clearly, we've gotta kill her!

SH.....

Eiji!!!

Let us help you!

!?

DON (BAM)

SHUT UP ALREADY !!!

WHAT ...!?

ORDER!!! "CUT OFF RIN AND IYO'S PATH" !!!!!!

RIGHT, RIGHT.

SENA MUST'VE BEEN TRICKED BY HATORI AND FRAN.

HA HA HA HA HA.

.....HAH.

BUT...IF THEY'RE GONNA GET IN THE WAY OF THAT...

.....THEY WON'T GET AWAY WITH THIS.

FURA (WOBBLE)

イラ...

I DIDN'T WANNA HURT ANYONE BECAUSE I WANTED TO LIVE IN A PEACEFUL WORLD.

DA
(TMP)
DA

SHE'S MY FINAL HOPE.

EIJI HOSHIMIYA... YOU WON'T STOP SENA!

THAT'S WHY YOU'LL RISK YOUR LIFE FOR ME, MY KNIGHT.

ONCE THE "GATE" IS OPEN, YOUR WISH WILL BE GRANTED.

FRAN. YOU CAN SEE YOUR WIFE AND CHILDREN AGAIN.

!

OO (WHOOSH)

AMBAS-SADOR... IGAWA !!?

BITA (FREEZE)

YES. THE ADVANTAGE IS MINE!

BAN (BAM)

HE WAS USING A WEIRD MACHINE TO NULLIFY ABILITIES.

THAT WON'T WORK AGAIN!

ORDER! CHRONO-GRAPH CALIBER !!!

YOU SURE ABOUT THAT?

WH—
OOOOOO

WHAT !!?

HAH... HA-HA...

RIN WAS RIGHT. I COULDN'T BEAT FRAN HEAD-ON.

SO INSTEAD... I JUST WON'T FIGHT.

IGAWA IS FROZEN IN TIME, SO MY BULLETS CAN'T AFFECT HIM...!

!

KIN

SO HOW'S HE FIRING HIS OWN GUNS!?

THERE ARE ANCHORS IN THEM ...!

DON

DAMN YOU...!

CHA (CHAK)

KI (PLINK)

KI

KIN

KIN

DON

DON

...MADE IGAWA THE BAIT AND A WALKING TURRET TO BOOT ...!?

HE...

ドドド

...I DON'T CARE WHAT I HAVE TO DO!!

DON (BANG)

COW...

WHO-EVER I'VE GOTTA KILL...

...ARD...

DOSHAA (THUD)

KA

AS LONG AS I REACH SENA !!!

THAT'S ENOUGH FOR ME !!!

Subject 41 : END

GOOOO GWHOOSH

RIGHT. DON'T CARE ANYMORE ...!

HEH...

HA-HA.

HA-HA...

WHICH MEANS ...!

ALL THAT MATTERS IS GETTING SENA BACK!

DA (TMP) DA DA DA

DON'T LET EIJI HOSHIMIYA GET ANY FARTHER!

THERE HE IS!

FIRE!

AND IF I STOP THIS TRAIN, THERE'LL BE NO DESTRUC-TION...!

KIN (SHING)

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

ORDER!

"BULLETS, REVERSE COURSE"!!!

DON (BANG)

DON

GEH.

GYAHHH!?

DON

DON

KIN (PLINK)

DON

...AH.

TAKE HIM DOWN IN CLOSE COMBAT!

DON

GAH...

DON

DON

S-STOP FIRING!

HE'S REPEL-LING THE...

WHICH MEANS I DON'T CARE HOW MANY OF THESE GUYS HAVE TO DIE...!!!

GIRI (TWIST)

GIRI

GIRI

GYAHHHH!

"TEAR THEM APART" !!!

MEKI! (RIP)

I DON'T CARE...

...IF THEY ALL DIE!!!

"CRUSH THEM ALL"!!! !!!!!!

DOSHAA (SLAM)

Subject 42: "Battle Between Kin"
Place: Fuji

FURA (WOBBLE)

WHAT'S GOING ON? WHAT HAPPENED TO NOT HURTING ANYONE...!?

GARA (CRUMBLE)

GARARA

KYAHHH!

E-EIJI!?

!

...THE TRANS-MISSION WAS CUT!?

BU (KZZT)

DID FRAN REALLY LOSE...!?

HOW COULD ANYONE GET PAST CHRONOGRAPH CALIBER— HIS TIME-FREEZING ABILITY ...!?

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

CAN'T GET AHOLD OF FRAN...!

.....

HATORI.

GIKU (JOLT)

WHAT SORT OF NASTY SCHEME IS IT THIS TIME AROUND...?

A SUR-PRISE ...?

NIKOO (SMILE)

I'M COUNTING ON YOU.

THAT SMILE IS SCAAARY.

UGH.

CHIN (WHIRR)

LEAVE IT TO ME. THE LOSS OF FRAN IS NOTHING TO WORRY ABOUT.

B-BUT OF COURSE!

I'D REALLY LIKE TO GIVE BIG BROTHER A SURPRISE, CONSIDERING HE'S COME ALL THIS WAY, BUT I'M NOT QUITE PREPARED.

SO YOUR JOB IS TO BUY ME SOME TIME, HATORI! UNDERSTAND?

AND IT DOESN'T LOOK LIKE ANY-THING CAN STOP HIM NOW...!

I NEVER THOUGHT ABOUT WHAT I'D DO IF FRAN FAILED ...!!

WHY'M I GOING ALONG WITH EVERY-THING SO EASILY!!?

HA HA HA HA HA !!!

DOSSHAA (SLAM)

HEH.

HE JUST REACHED THE FIRST CAR.....!

THIS IS BAD!

TALKING TO HIM'S NOT GONNA WORK!

HE'S NUTS !!

DON (BANG)

TCH.

HAH.

I'M TAKING SENA BACK, HATORI.

KIN

KIN (PLING)

CHA CCHAK

YOU IDIOT!

BRUTE FORCE CAN ONLY GET YOU SO FAR! TAKE A LOOK AROUND!

TCH. A WALL OF AIR, HUH...?

THOSE ARE...

!

SENAAAAAAAAA!!!

ANY MAJOR SHOCK WILL RESULT IN A MASSIVE EXPLOSION!

TEN-TON BOMBS.

KII (SQUEAK)

SENA!

.....

WE'LL FIGURE OUT HOW TO CURE YOU!

IT'S OKAY. JUST STOP THE TRAIN. THERE'S STILL TIME...

...I CAN FOOL THE REST OF THE WORLD!

L-LET'S GO HOME, SENA.

LET'S GO BACK TO OUR LIVES FROM BEFORE!

IF YOU WANT TO STOP IT, THEN GO AHEAD AND TRY.

.....

SU (SWF)

SIGH.

PATHETIC, BIG BROTHER.

I SUPPOSE THIS IS YOUR LAST STAND.

SO IF THAT'S REALLY WHAT YOU WANT, CONTROL ME AND MAKE ME STOP IT.

YOU CAN STOP THE TRAIN WITH THIS CONTROL PANEL...

...USING MY BIOMETRICS.

WHAT'RE YOU THINKING, SENA HOSHI-MIYA ...?

WE'VE GOT PLENTY OF SOL-DIERS, BUT .....

UGH.

S-SENA-SAMA!?

I'VE ONLY EXPLAINED IT TO HIM, BUT YOU CAN STILL HOLD HIM BACK, NO?

FAIL ME, AND I'LL KICK YOU OFF THE TRAIN TOO, HATORI!

BA (BAM)

U-FU-FU.

PI (BEEP)

JUST HAVE TO EXTEND MY DOMAIN THAT FAR, AND THEN...!

OF COURSE...! I'VE GOT MY DOMINATOR!

FOURTEEN MINUTES UNTIL THE CALDERA!

DAN (DASH)

ONCE I CONTROL SENA, EVERYTHING'LL BE FINE...!

WHAT A BEAU-TIFULLY MASOCH-ISTIC SITUA-TION!

KWA-HAH.

TCH. IF WE CAN'T KILL HIM, I'M SCREWED ...!

...SHEESH.

BAN (BAM)

MOROSUKE! MOVE THE SOLDIERS ACCORDING TO MY COMMANDS!

GYAH, GYAH.

SURE THING!

NOW LET'S SEE WHAT GOOD THEY CAN DO!

I WON CONTROL OVER THE MILITARY FROM THAT BET WITH THE PRIME MINISTER ...!

!?

PLATOON AT THREE O'CLOCK— CAPTURE EIJI!

A NEW ORDER ...!?

DO (WHAP)

DO

DO

DO

GUH ...!?

YOU BAS- TARDS !!!

WHAT...!?

KI (PLING)

KI

KIN

AND NOW...

THEIR OWN ALLIES ...!?

THESE GUYS.

HMPH.

ONLY TEN MINUTES UNTIL THE TRAIN REACHES THE CALDERA.

I THINK I CAN BUY US THAT MUCH TIME!

...MOW DOWN EVERYTHING, FROM SEVEN O'CLOCK!

!!?

DON'T HOLD BACK, MORO-SUKE.

BRING IN MORE DIS-POSABLE PAWNS!

GUH...

CAN'T MOVE FORWARD!

OUTTA MY WAY!

GU (STRAIN) GU

IF I COULD JUST GET UP THERE.....!

DO (WHAP) DO

UP THERE...!

HMPH.

JUST GIVE UP. FACE THE FACTS.

...PER-SISTENT, AREN'T YOU, EIJI?

KWA HA HA HA HA!

IT'S TRUE THE GREAT DESTRUCTION IS A MASTERPIECE IN SADISM—THE GREATEST NIGHTMARE IMAGINABLE!

IT'S ALMOST LIKE YOU STILL TRUST SENA.

YOU THINK I'M FOOLING HER SOMEHOW?

I WISH I COULD SAY I PLANNED IT! I'D "LIKE" THAT POST TEN TIMES.

NO WAY.....

BIG BROTHER.

SU (SWF)

BUT I CAN TELL NO LIE!

THE MASTER-MIND IS NONE OTHER THAN SENA!

WHY DO YOU CLING TO THIS WORLD, BIG BROTHER?

THIS WORLD IS ROTTEN— CONVINCED YOU CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUCTION.

DON'T YOU THINK WE'RE BETTER OFF DESTROYING IT?

WH-WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT, SENA...?

YOU'D... NEVER SAY SOMETHING LIKE THAT!

FU FU...

ALL WILL BE SETTLED WHEN THE "GATE" OPENS, CONNECTING US TO THE OTHER SIDE...

BEYOND IS A WORLD WHERE THE PHYSICAL AND SPIRITUAL ARE REVERSED!

HATO-RI'S...

...AND FRAN'S WISHES WILL COME TRUE!

THERE IS NO DEATH OR ANGUISH THERE!

(WHOOSH)

IT'S A DREAM WORLD WHERE EVERY WISH IS GRANTED!

SENA ...!

AND OF COURSE, YOURS TOO, BIG BROTHER ...!

NO...! SENA WOULD NEVER SAY THESE THINGS ...!!

YOU CAN HAVE YOUR WAY WITH ME, IF THAT'S YOUR WISH.

SHE LOOKS LIKE THE SENA I KNOW, BUT THOSE AREN'T HER WORDS!

SO WHY...!?

I STILL HAVEN'T CON-VINCED YOU?

..... NO, OF COURSE NOT.

WHEN I REGAINED MY LOST MEMORIES, I BEGAN TO SEE THESE PAST TEN YEARS AS A FABRICATION CREATED BY YOUR ILLEGAL DIGGER.

A PERSON'S HEART AND SOUL ARE SHAPED BY REALITY AND THE ACTUAL FLOW OF TIME.

YOU.....

A FABRI-CATION .....!

...WAS YOU, EIJI HOSHIMIYA.

THE ONE WHO USED AN ILLUSION TO CREATE THAT FALSE VERSION OF ME...

YOU CAN'T JUST GO AND REJECT THE TEN YEARS WE SPENT TOGETHER ...!!

WHAT'S MORE...

...I'LL LET YOU IN ON A LITTLE SECRET.

FROM THE START, I NEVER REALLY THOUGHT OF YOU AS MY BROTHER.

AFTER MY MOTHER GOT REMARRIED, I DECIDED TO PUT ON AN ACT TO MAKE THINGS EASIER FOR ME.

TO SEE YOUR FACE NOW...THE DUTIFUL BIG BROTHER, COVERING UP MY SINS.....

IT'S OBNOXIOUS!

.....

YOU...!

BAN (SLAM)

YOU KNEW WHAT PART YOU WANTED TO PLAY, SO YOU BECAME THE BIG BROTHER...

YOU'RE NOTHING BUT A CLOWN!!

THAT WAS YOUR OWN ARRO-GANCE! AND A DIRTY TRICK!

IF I HADN'T TAKEN THE BLAME FOR THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION...

...YOU WOULDN'T HAVE BEEN ABLE TO LIVE!!!

!!?

PA (FLIK)

PA

PA

PA

BAN (BAM)

NOW YOU'VE ADMITTED IT!!

I'VE BEEN WAITING TO HEAR YOU SAY THAT!

So the one who caused the Destruc-tion...

...was Sena Hoshi-miya ...!?

WH-WHAT'S GOING ON!?

YOUR LITTLE TIRADE JUST NOW...

...WAS BEING BROADCAST LIVE TO THE ENTIRE WORLD!

ZAWA

Does that mean...

...a Great Destruc-tion is about to happen ...!?

ZAWA

What the hell is going on here...!?

Are you kidding me...? So her brother is trying to stop her...?

ZAWA (CHATTER)

IT WAS ACTUALLY SENA WHO CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION...

You kidding me...!?

What's going on...?

So we should really blame her...

...AND NOW THE WHOLE WORLD KNOWS ooo!

Sena Hoshi-miya, she...

No way...

The world's really gonna end...!

THE PEOPLE'S CONFUSION! FEAR! DESPAIR! IT WILL ALL ACTIVATE THE PULSE LINES!

I EVEN GOT TO SET THE RECORD STRAIGHT! TWO BIRDS WITH ONE STONE!

ZAWA (CHATTER)

ZAWA

GOOD JOB BUYING TIME, HATORI. WE'RE ONLY THREE MINUTES FROM THE CALDERA!

I GET IT... I WAS BUYING TIME TO CREATE THIS CHAOS.

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA

YORO (WOBBLE)

AH...

AH...

ZAWA

ZAWA

THE SECRET'S OUT.....

OOOO (WHOOSH)

RIN ...!!

BA (BAM)

NO.

I CAN'T SHIELD SENA ANY-MORE .....!

!

THIS ENDS HERE !!!

IT'S ALL OVER.....

DO (BANG)

!!!!

GYA (RATTLE)

Subject 42:END

Subject 43

...wasn't Eiji Hoshimiya? It was actually Sena Hoshimiya ...?

Her brother was just covering for her ...!?

The culprit behind the Great Destruction...

EIJIII !!!

DOZZAAA (THUD)

I'VE GOT NO WAY LEFT TO PROTECT SENA...!

THE SECRET'S OUT.....!!

EVERYTHING I KEPT HIDDEN FROM THE WORLD FOR TEN WHOLE YEARS...!

DOGAA (RATTLE)

EIJIIII !!!

GUH...

GURA (SWAY)

SHIT. I'M HIT...

POTA (DRIP) TA

(WHOOSH)

DO (RUMBLE)

DO

YOU'RE NOT GONNA MAKE IT IN TIME...!!!

DO

DO

DO

DO

THE TRAIN'S TILTING ...!!! WE'RE GONNA FALL!

YOU HAVE TO DO SOME-THING!!!

DON
(BOOM)

Subject 43: “Trail of the Dead”
Place: Fuji

HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA.

BUT NOW...

PROTECTING SENA WAS EVERYTHING TO ME.

...SENA NEVER ACTUALLY WANTED MY HELP.

IT SEEMS LIKE...

NO REASON LEFT TO LIVE.

I COULDN'T...

...BE A BIG BROTHER TO HER.

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

OOO

ZORO
ZORO
ZORO
ZORO
ZORO
ZORO (CROWD)
!
ARE THEY...?
.....
ZORO
ZORO
ZORO
ooo

OOOOOO (WHOOSH)

I THOUGHT I WAS DEAD FOR SURE.....

WHAT IS THIS PLACE...?

A YOUNGER VERSION OF HER!? EVEN MOM AND DAD ARE HERE...!

SENA ...!?

!?

GASHI (GRAB)

YOU MUSTN'T, EIJI-SAMA!

GU (TUG)

DON'T FOLLOW THEM...!

IYO...?

YOU'RE REAL.

THANK GOODNESS... I GOT SEPARATED FROM RIN, BUT I'M GLAD TO HAVE FOUND YOU, EIJI-SAMA.

...LOOK OVER THERE...

...EIJI-SAMA.

ﾈﾈ

ﾈﾈﾈ

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

I THINK WE'RE INSIDE THE "GATE"...!

IT WAS ONLY OPEN A CRACK, BUT BY FALLING IN, WE MANAGED TO AVOID THE BLAST OUTSIDE.

DA (TMP) DA

I TOLD YOU NOT TO FOLLOW THEM!

THAT'S THE TRAIL OF THE DEAD!

PEOPLE WHO'VE DIED AND LOST THEIR MEMO-RIES!

BUT I SAW SENA UP THERE...!

ZA (STEP) ZA ZA ZA

EIJI-SAMA !?

IT'S ONLY AN ILLUSION, EIJI-SAMA!

BUT ...

...SENA AND MOM AND DAD LOOKED SO HAPPY!

...I CAN'T JUST LET THEM WALK AWAY .....!

ILLUSION OR NOT .....

ドドドドドドドドドドドド (RUMBLE)

!

IF WE STAY HERE TOO LONG, WE'LL BE SUCKED IN BY THE HORDE TOO...!

WE HAVE TO ESCAPE QUICKLY ...!

SO THEY REPRESENT..... THE LIFE I WANTED TO HAVE.

PLEASE WAIT FOR ME...!

SENA... DAD... MOM...

DO

DO

DO

DO (RUMBLE)

EIJI-SAMAAAAAA!!!

EIJI-SAMA!

DOZZAAAAA (CRASH)

UGH!?

SENAAAA!

EVERY-ONE...!

WHAT IS THAT...?

DO DO DO DO DO DO DO DO

ZABU (SLOSH)

THEY'RE GETTING SUCKED IN...!

YOU MUSTN'T, EIJI-SAMA. I SENSE NEGATIVE ENERGY AHEAD...

DO (BAM)

DO (RUMBLE)

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

A HOLE ...!?

!

IF THAT IS YOUR DESIRE, THEN WHY NOT FOLLOW THEM?

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

ZA

ZA

JUST AS YOU WILL SOON BE ONE WITH THE DEAD!

THIS PLACE WILL SOON BE ONE WITH THE OUTSIDE WORLD.

ZA

ZA (SPLASH)

ZA

IT'S ONLY NATURAL TO MAKE A WISH BEFORE THAT HAPPENS.

SENA...?

A SPIRITUAL PRESENCE I'VE NEVER ENCOUN-TERED BEFORE...!!

THAT HAND ...!?

SENA HOSHIMIYA... YOU...!

GO ゴ

"SHE" WILL SWALLOW UP EVERYTHING AND BRING SALVATION TO ALL!

GO ゴゴゴ

DO

MEMORIES ONLY HAVE VALUE BECAUSE THOSE EXPERIENCES ARE GONE FOREVER...!

THE PAST IS ONLY THE PAST BECAUSE WE CAN'T GET IT BACK.

DO (RUMBLE)

SENA HOSHIMIYA... WHAT YOU DESCRIBE IS A COMPLETE REJECTION OF LIFE ITSELF!

TO LIVE IS TO BUILD UP TONS OF EXPERIENCES WORTH REMEMBERING!

ZU (RISE)

AND I LOVE THE EIJI-SAMA WHO'S ALIVE AND HERE WITH ME!

ZU

ZU

!?

WHO'S THIS "SHE" ANY-WAY...?

ZAN (SPLASH)

FU-FU...HERE IN THE SPIRIT WORLD, THE SPIRITUAL AND PHYSICAL ARE REVERSED.

NATURALLY, "SHE" LIES AT THE VERY CENTER...!

ZA

ZA

ZA

OOO (WHOOSH)

SADLY, I DON'T HAVE THAT KIND OF TIME.

SUCH PHILOSOPHY WOULD BE MORE USEFUL TO SOMEONE WITH THAT LUXURY.

"SHE" AND I WILL DESTROY THIS WORLD AND, IN DOING SO, LEAVE BEHIND PROOF THAT I TRULY LIVED!

GOD ...!!?

ZABU (CRASH)

ガッ!!

!

EIJI-SAMAAAA !!!

NOW, TO THE OUTSIDE WORLD ...!!!

WE'LL SHATTER THE BORDER BETWEEN THE PHYSICAL AND THE SPIRITUAL!

ZAN (SPLASH)

GOD !!!!

GOGO (BLUB)

BECOME ONE.....

THERE IS NO ONE LEFT TO STOP US.

ZA (SPLASH)

ZA

ZA

ZA

ZA

ZA

ONWARD...!

ZA (STEP)

YOU SURE ABOUT THAT?

ZU (CREEP)

ZU

SO GOOD TO SEE YOU, RIN...

NOW COME WITH US...

ZU

ZAN (SLASH)

DON'T YOU DARE DISHONOR MY PARENTS' MEMORY.

I'LL KILL YOU!

WHAT DO YOU HOPE TO ACHIEVE?

VERY WELL. BUT YOU'RE ALONE NOW...

ZAA (SPLASH)

I THINK YOU'RE THE ONE UNDER-ESTIMATING THE POWER OF MEMORIES.

PAN
(SLAP)

SENA?

.....

SENA...? I JUST REALLY WANTED TO SEE YOU AGAIN...

I CAN'T FORGIVE YOU.

ALL OF THIS IS FAKE.

WHY'D YOU RUN AWAY, BIG BROTHER?

I AM THE PERFECT MEMORY OF YOUR LITTLE SISTER.

YOU UNDERSTAND THAT MUCH, I HOPE?

"IF I'M DOING BAD THINGS, YOU MUST DEFEAT ME."

"IF I AM EVIL, YOU OUGHT TO KILL ME."

THE BIG BROTHER WHO'S JUST LIKE EVIL RANGER!

THE BIG BROTHER I KNOW AND LOVE ...

...IS KIND AND DOESN'T LET BAD THINGS HAPPEN.

DOBAA (BURST)

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

ORDER !!!

"ESCAPE" !!!

DAAAMMIT !!!

ZA (SWIRL) ZA

.....SHIT.

DAMMIT ...

EVEN HERE... THERE'S NO PLACE FOR ME...

SHIT!

DON (POP)

AN ANCHOR!?

!

DAMMIT...!

ZU

ZU (LOOM)

OOO (WHOOSH)

EIJI-SAMA!

WAY TO TAKE YOUR TIME, EIJI!

GA (GRAB)

I'VE GOT...

...NOWHERE LEFT TO RUN!!!

WE CAN'T LET THAT THING GET OUT, EIJI!

EIJI-SAMA! IF A SPIRITUAL ENTITY OF THAT MAGNITUDE REACHES THE PHYSICAL WORLD, WE'LL WITNESS ANOTHER EXPLOSION OF ENERGY LIKE TEN YEARS AGO...!

ALL RIGHT ALREADY !

SHIT ...!

EIJI!!!!!

I'LL...

...TAKE SENA DOWN !!!

DON (BÂM)

Next Stop: Tokyo

Subject 43 : END

BIG
ORDER



BIG
ORDER

“God” and Sena vs. Eiji

Next volume, the final battle begins in Tokyo!!

Back to Tokyo, the place where it all began!!!

“God”—the culmination of humanity’s wishes—is out to destroy the world! Sena means to make use of “God,” and Eiji intends to stop her! What will become of the world when Eiji makes the heartrending decision to kill Sena!?

A titanic clash awaits in the “Tokyo Arc,” coming in Volume 9!!

BIG ORDER 08

Sakae Esuno

Translation: Caleb Cook • Lettering: Phil Christie

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, or persons, living or dead, is coincidental.

BIG ORDER Volume 8
© Sakae ESUNO 2015

First published in Japan in 2015 by KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged with KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo
through Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., Tokyo.

English translation © 2018 by Yen Press, LLC

Yen Press, LLC supports the right to free expression and the value of copyright. The purpose of copyright is to encourage writers and artists to produce the creative works that enrich our culture.

The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book without permission is a theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like permission to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), please contact the publisher. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Yen Press
1290 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10104

Visit us at yenpress.com
facebook.com/yenpress
twitter.com/yenpress
yenpress.tumblr.com
instagram.com/yenpress

First Yen Press Edition: January 2018

Yen Press is an imprint of Yen Press, LLC.
The Yen Press name and logo are trademarks of Yen Press, LLC.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

Library of Congress Control Number: 2016958579

ISBN: 978-0-316-43603-8

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

BVG

Printed in the United States of America

BIG ORDER

Sakae Esuno

09

PARENTAL ADVISORY
WARNING
EXPLICIT CONTENT

Subject 44

SHIZUOKA PREFECTURE
PEAK OF MT. FUJI

GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
(RUMBLE)

"GOD"
...!!!

DAAAMMIT!!!

SHIT!!!

NOT ON MY WATCH!!!

WHAT'RE WE GONNA DO, EIJI? THERE'S NO STOPPING IT!

EIJI-SAMA, THIS IS BAD!

WE MUSTN'T LET THAT THING OUT...!

09

Sakae Esuno

Subject 44: Slumbering Holy Ground
Place: Tokyo



BIG ORDER



BIG ORDER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

001 **Subject 44: “Slumbering Holy Ground”**
Place: Tokyo

043 **Subject 45: “World and Self”**
Place: Tokyo

077 **Subject 46: “Pursuit at Hoshimiya Institute Laboratory #1”**
Place: Tokyo

117 **Subject 47: “Counterattack at Hoshimiya Institute Laboratory #1”**
Place: Tokyo

153 **Subject 48: “Day of Destruction”**
Place: Tokyo

I CAN'T SHIELD SENA ANYMORE.....!

Characters & Story

The world was brought to the verge of ruin when young Eiji Hoshimiya's wish was somehow granted. Ten years later, Eiji—now in high school—is attacked by an assassin named Rin Kurenai who knows about his past, and their battle reawakens his power. He's then set up as the enemy of the entire world as part of a scheme by the Dazaifu Government. One day, Eiji learns that his father, Gennai—a man presumed dead—is seeking to cause another Great Destruction in Kansai. He attempts to stop his father, but along the way, he learns that it was not him, but Sena who caused the Great Destruction ten years earlier. Although the scope of the Kansai destruction is minimized, it's unclear whether or not Sena survived. That is, until a despairing Eiji learns from an "irregular" Order that his sister yet lives. Sena's now intent on destroying the world, though, and she's summoned "God" to help her do it...!

This story begins when the world was destroyed.



Rin Kurenai (Second Lieutenant):
Lost both parents in the Great Destruction caused by Eiji ten years ago and had been plotting to kill him ever since. She's really cute but also a bit dumb.



Rebirth Fire:
Rin's ability. She's essentially immortal thanks to her strong regenerative properties. She can also restore objects and other people to an undamaged state.

Ten Hands of Dazaifu:
The top brass at the Dazaifu Government Offices, which served as the seat of power for Kyushu's Provisional Government. Each is a powerful ability user in his or her own right.



First Hand

Raidou Fuwa
(Lieutenant Colonel)



Third Hand

Yoshitsune Hiiragi (Colonel):
As Colonel, he's the highest ranking member of the Ten Hands. Shrewd and competent.



Fifth Hand

Taikei Nehara
(Lieutenant Commander)



Ninth Hand

Mari Kunou (Lieutenant Colonel):
A tactician who works directly under Hiiragi. She has a way with words and a strong personality.



Seventh Hand

Kokudo Soumoku
(Captain)



Second Hand

Benkei Narukami
(Lieutenant Colonel):
Has the ability to destroy anything down to the atomic level. Good-natured.



Eighth Hand

Nene Minamoto
(First Lieutenant)



Sixth Hand

Lauryn Wright
(Captain)



Tenth Hand

Ayahito Sundan (First Lieutenant):
Has the ability to teleport. He loves and respects Eiji.



Fourth Hand

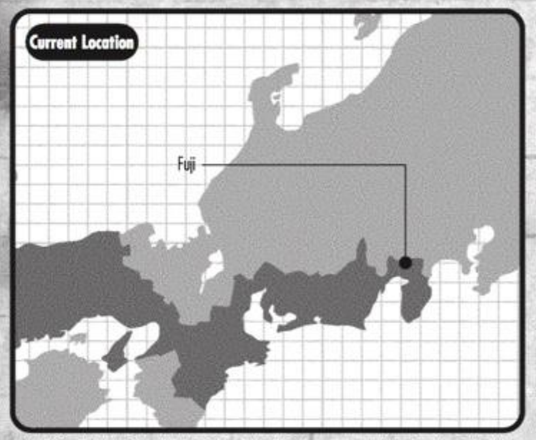
Iyo (First Lieutenant):
Has the ability to make 100% accurate predictions. She's particularly fond of Eiji.



Kiyoshirou Igawa:
A former mercenary turned Japanese ambassador to the United Nations. Possesses an "Anti-Order Field" device.



Daisy:
A mysterious being who turns people's wishes into abilities.



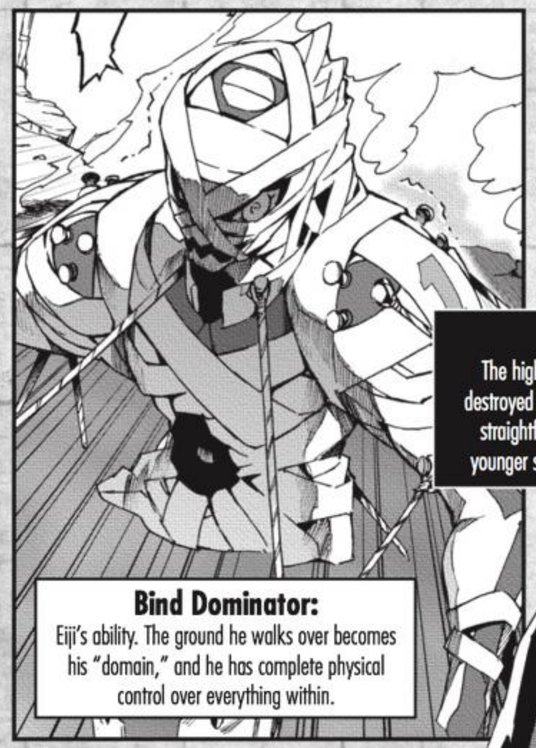
At Fuji ▶ Eiji Hoshimiya, Rin Kurenai, Iyo, Kiyoshirou Igawa, Sena Hoshimiya, Hanzo Hatori, Abraham Louis Fran



Sena Hoshimiya:
Eiji's stepsister and an Order herself. She's plotting the world's destruction and doesn't have long to live.



Hanzo Hatori:
Formerly one of Gennai's cunning underlings. He seems to be working with Sena now...



Bind Dominator:
Eiji's ability. The ground he walks over becomes his "domain," and he has complete physical control over everything within.



Eiji Hoshimiya:
The high school student believed to have nearly destroyed the world ten years ago. He's got a rather straightforward personality, and he treasures his younger sister Sena, who is his only living relative.

BIG
ORDER

ゴゴ GO GO

GO ゴゴゴゴゴゴ GO GO GO GO GO (RUMBLE)

SOMEWHERE IN FUJI CITY

OUR READINGS OF THE PULSE LINES WERE ACCURATE.

OH?

THAT'S —!

BA (TURN)

IT'S THE TAR-GET!

GET THIS THING MOVING!

THAT MONSTER'S TRYING TO BUST OUT AND SWALLOW THE WHOLE WORLD...

YOU SURE ABOUT THIS? THINGS COULD GET BAD FOR US TOO IF WE WASTE TIME BACK HERE...

SO, EIJI HOSHI-MIYA...

...YOU WENT CHASING SENA AFTER ALL.

UIIIIN (VROOM)

ウィイイン

BAN (BAM)

ORDER !!!

"STOP GOD" !!!

BIND DOMINA-TOR!!!

O (WHOOSH)

DO

DO

THAT WON'T WORK ...

...EIJI-SAMA!!!

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO (PIERCE)

EIJI, WE GOTTA RETREAT!

WHETHER IT WORKS OR NOT...

"GOD" IS THE ULTIMATE MANIFES-TATION OF SPIRIT ENERGY ...

AN AVATAR BORN OF SOME-THING GREATER!

SO ATTACKS FROM YOUR OWN AVATAR WON'T WORK ON "GOD"!

BA (LEAP)

I DON'T GIVE A SHIT!!!

DAMMIT!!!

AH...!

DO (PIERCE)
DO
DO
DO
DO
DO DO DO
GASHIN (CLAMP)
ORDER!!!
DON (BAM)
OH!
IF WE CAN'T STOP "GOD" DIRECTLY, JUST CLOSE THE GATE ON HER!
"CLOSE THAT GATE"!!!

DOZA (SKID)

NOT OUTTA THE WOODS YET.

ONLY MANAGED TO CLOSE PART OF IT 'COS MY TER-RITORY WAS TOO SMALL !!!

ZA

ZA

!? THIS IS WEIRD.

WHY'S EIJI SO EAGER TO KILL SENA ALL OF A SUDDEN ...?

GA (GRAB)

ALL THAT'LL DO IS BUY US SOME TIME! GOTTA CUT OFF THE SOURCE... GOTTA KILL SENA...!

GET OFFA ME...

!?

BUN (FWOOSH)

NO WAY! YOU SERI-OUS !!?

EVEN GOING ALL-OUT, THERE'S NO WAY YOU CAN WIN.

!

DON (WHAP)

GYA ギャ" GYA ギャ" GYA (SKID)

YOU TWO SHOULD HOP IN TOO. IT'S NOT SAFE HERE!

AYAHITO !?

WHA...!?

DOSHAA (THUD)

LONG TIME NO SEE, EIJI-SAMA.

TARGET RETRIEVED ...

...COLONEL.

GACHA (CLAK)

BUOOOOO (VROOM)

COLO-NEL...!?

LUCKILY, EIJI-SAMA BOUGHT US A LITTLE TIME, SO WE CAN RETREAT TO TOKYO.

WHERE HAVE YOU BEEN THIS WHOLE TIME, AYAHITO ...?

WE'LL TALK LATER. WE'RE STILL IN DANGER HERE.

.....WHY TOKYO ...?

DON'T WORRY.

WHERE WE'RE GOING, WE'VE GOT THE SECRET TO DEFEATING "GOD."

KASHIN (CLANG)

HIIRAGI!

IT WILL STILL GET OUT—MAKE NO MISTAKE—BUT WE'VE EARNED OURSELVES A DAY OF LEEWAY.

DON (SLAM)

HEY !?

DON

DON

DON

WHERE D'YOU THINK YOU'RE TAKING US?

BUT...

ANSWER ME!

HOW'RE YOU STILL ALIVE!?

UGH...

HE WAS READY TO THROW HIS OWN LIFE AWAY.

...THIS IS FOR THE BEST. EIJI-SAMA WAS ABOUT TO PLUNGE INTO THE FRAY.

EIJI-SAMA...

IT MUST HAVE AFFECT-ED HIM SOME-HOW.

OOOO (VROOM)

YOU WERE WITH HIM, RIGHT, IYO? WHAT HAPPENED TO HIM IN THERE...?

FOR A MOMENT, HE WAS SWALLOWED UP BY THE PULSE LINES WITHIN THE GATE.

THE GUY SURE DOESN'T MAKE IT EASY FOR US.

SIGH.

OOO

B14

徐行

(VROOM)

WALL: GO SLOW

YEAH.

WE STOPPED ...?

IT FEELS LIKE WE TRAVELED DEEP UNDER-GROUND ...

GACHA (CLICK)

OOOOOO (WHOOSH)

TELLING US THIS WAS IMPORTANT BUT THEN ABANDONING US...

GUESS THEY WANT US TO SEARCH ON FOOT?

WHERE'RE AYAHITO AND THE COLONEL ...?

IT SEEMS... THEY'RE GONE. WHAT COULD THEY BE THINKING?

YUP.

STILL, I'D LIKE TO KNOW WHERE THE HELL WE ARE.

WHEN HE WAKES UP, I'VE NO DOUBT HE'LL JUMP BACK INTO ACTION WITHOUT A PLAN AGAIN.

THE REAL PROBLEM HERE IS EIJI-SAMA.

LET'S SPLIT UP, IYO.

I'LL LOOK FOR HIIRAGI AND MAKE HIM SPILL THE BEANS ON THIS SECRET STRATEGY TO BEAT "GOD"!

RIGHT ...

IN THE MEANTIME, I'LL KEEP EIJI-SAMA FROM RUNNING OFF ONCE HE WAKES UP!

OKAY. AT THE VERY LEAST...

...UNTIL THAT IDIOT COOLS OFF A LITTLE...

...DON'T LET HIM GO ANYWHERE!

BA (JUMP)

BA (-JOLT)

WHAT HAPPENED TO THAT THING ...!!?

"GOD" ...!!!

... AYAHITO AND THE COLONEL SAVED US.

JUST THE REACTION WE EXPECTED!

GATATA (RATTLE)

WHERE ON EARTH ARE WE...!?

GOTTA FIND SENA— QUICK!

HIIRAGI ...!?

HE'S REALLY ALIVE ...!?

EIJI-SAMA!

ALL THAT SEARCH-ING WAS SWEATY WORK.

ZAAAA (FSSHH)

ZAAAA

COMING THIS WAY WAS THE RIGHT CHOICE 'COS I FOUND A BATH. ♪

BUT...

BY ENTRUSTING ME WITH EIJI-SAMA ...

...DO I TAKE IT THAT YOU'RE ACKNOWL-EDGING HIM AS MINE?

LOOKS LIKE IYO STOPPED EIJI, JUST AS PLANNED...

SARA (SLIP)

HERE'S HOPING HE MANAGES TO KEEP CALM FOR NOW...

THAT GIRL, I SWEAR.

ALWAYS GETTING THE LAST WORD IN.

YOU WANT ME TO JUST WAIT AROUND?

WE SHOULD SPLIT UP AND LOOK FOR AN EXIT!

KA (STEP)

KA

EIJI-SAMA, RIN WENT ON AHEAD TO INVESTIGATE THIS PLACE.

.....

EIJI-SAMA... YOU SURE ARE ACTING STRANGELY.

KA

KA

Smoke

YOU SURE WE'RE SUPPOSED TO BE HERE...!?

IT'S A DEAD END, IYO.

LIKE YOU'RE IN A HURRY...

...AND NOT WATCHING YOUR SURROUND-INGS.

IT'S AS IF...

TCH.

PROBABLY...? I THOUGHT YOUR PREDICTIONS WERE ALWAYS RIGHT ON THE MONEY...!

YES, PROBABLY.

EIJI-SAMA!

AS IF...

SHIT! I'M GONNA USE MY POWER TO CHECK THIS PLACE OUT!

RIN!

PA (FLASH)

AH!?

DAN (TMP)

DA (DASH)

PLEASE STOP HIM!

AS IF HE HAS A DEATH WISH...!

Huh !!?

RIN! EIJI-SAMA IS HEADED YOUR WAY!

I THINK EIJI-SAMA IS DETER-MINED TO DIE!

STOP HIM!

W-wait a sec...

.....

NOT THIS WAY.

TA (TMP)

GA (GRAB)

MAYBE IN HERE ...!?

I'm not exactly in a position to do that...!

.....

HUH!?

KAAAA (BLUSH)

YOU...!

GACHA (CLICK)

GYAHHH!!!

!!?
!!?
!!?

WHAT'S THE BIG IDEA?

YOU JERK !!!

DOGGAA (SLAM)

ZURU (SLINK)

OUCH...

YOU JUST KNOW HOW TO SCREW EVERYTHING UP, HUH...

!

MUKU (RISE)

I'LL LEAVE.

SORRY, RIN.

.....

DOESN'T MATTER.

WAIT A MINUTE. IYO'S WORRIED ABOUT YOU.

WHAT HAPPENED TO YOU IN THAT PULSE LINE?

SHE SAYS YOU'VE GOT A DEATH WISH...

DON'T EVEN...

!!?

DAN (STEP)

DON (STOMP)

...THEN WE WOULDN'T BE SO WORRIED!

IF IT DIDN'T MATTER...

I WAS SO AWFUL TO YOU ...!

GESHI (WHAP)

IT'S ALL YOUR STUPID FAULT ANYWAY ...

...THAT I WRONGLY BLAMED YOU FOR PAPA'S AND MAMA'S DEATHS ...!

IYO FEELS THE SAME WAY!

SO NOW I'M TRYING TO MAKE IT UP TO YOU...

HOW'RE YOU GONNA EXPLAIN YOUR-SELF TO HER!?

...BUT YOU GOTTA GO AND BE A PAIN IN THE ASS ABOUT IT...!

!

GUI (TUG)

I GET THAT YOU'RE ONLY THINKING ABOUT SENA AND ALL, BUT...

BA (FWIP)

...WE'RE ALL...

...REALLY WORRIED ABOUT YOU, EIJI!!!

BAKII (POW)

...GET THAT, YOU DUMMY !!!!!?

GU (CLENCH)

DON'T YOU...

HFF ...

HFF.

HFF.

HFF.

HFF ...

WHY...DOES IT ALWAYS GOTTA BE LIKE THIS WITH ME AND EIJI?

HFF.

.....

IN THE PULSE LINE...

...I SAW A YOUNGER VERSION OF SENA.

!

SOUNDS LIKE SOME-THING SHE'D SAY.

VERY LIKE HER.

HA HA ...

SHE TOLD ME TO KILL HER...

...AND THAT ANYONE ELSE WOULD DO THE SAME WHEN UP AGAINST AN EVIL PERSON.

BUT...IF THAT'S THE CASE...

HAA.

...WHAT DO I DO...!?

HAA.

I DON'T WANNA KILL HER...

...BUT IT LOOKS LIKE I HAVE TO.

I THINK THE EASIEST WAY AT THIS POINT...

...WOULD BE TO DIE WITH HER.

WHAT'S SO WRONG WITH BEING PREPARED TO DIE!?

EVEN IN THE PULSE LINE, EIJI JUST DIDN'T BELONG.

.....
THAT'S WHAT'S ON HIS MIND, THEN.

AH.

WH-WH-WHY'D I JUST KISS HIM LIKE THAT!?

TRYING TO CHEER EIJI UP WHEN HE'S DOWN, I GUESS ...?

I GOT CAUGHT UP IN THE MOMENT, IS ALL ...!

BUN (SHAKE)

BUN

NAH, NO WAY. IT'S NOT LIKE I ACTUALLY LIKE EIJI!

GIKUU (SHOCK)

YOU CAN COUNT ON ME TOO, EIJI-SAMA.

YOU TWO...

SUKKU (FWIP)

P-PICK YOURSELF UP. I'LL HELP YOU KILL HER!

IF IT'S GUILT YOU'RE WORRIED ABOUT, I'LL SHARE THAT BURDEN.

.....

THANK...

...YOU.

LET'S GO FIND OUT ABOUT HIIRAGI'S MASTER PLAN.

COME ON, EIJI.

KUWA (MAD)

Behind the...? What school!?

I'll see you later, behind the school!

!

ZUN

ZUN

FU FU FU FU FU FU FU FU

I suppose that move you just pulled was a declaration of war against me...?

Rin?

Wh-wh-what move?

ZUN

ZUN (STOMP)

KA (STEP)

WHAT THE...

...HECK IS THAT!?

SO BIG!

LOOKS KINDA LIKE IGAWA'S ANTI-ORDER FIELD, EXCEPT...

HMM?

KOPOPO (BLUB)

OOO (WHOOSH)

OOOO

KOPO (BLUB)

DAISY.....?

THIS IS OUR ACE IN THE HOLE...

...EIJI!

KO (STEP)

KO

YES.

DAISY'S ORIGINAL FORM.

!

HIIRAGI ...!?

Subject 44:END

► Description of the Big Order World

»» Big Order World

A world where those who've had their "wishes" transformed into "abilities" call the shots.
The average citizen knows nothing of Gennai's plans or the Orders he created.



Daisy (Desire Accessible Information System) + Supermassive Coil

Daisy was created by Eiji's father, Gennai, to serve as the human interface for accessing the spirit world. Her original body was hidden away deep underground in Hoshimiya Institute Laboratory #1. The Daisy that Eiji and the others have interacted with up until this point is a mere projection—a literal UI for inputting people's wishes. Daisy receives wishes and sends them directly to the coil while also opening a small gate connected to it. As Daisy inputs wishes and the coils transforms them into abilities, they serve as two halves of the whole. Sena and "God" currently share a similar relationship, although "God"'s transformative power is superior by far.

BIG
ORDER

HIIRAGI
.....

KA
(STEP)

KA
(STEP)

.....

YEAH, THANKS... I GUESS, HIIRAGI.

GOOD TO SEE YOU, EIJI. HAS THIS CHILLY BASEMENT...

...MANAGED TO COOL YOUR HEAD ANY?

I'M THE ONE WHO SAID WE OUGHTA TALK TO HIIRAGI, BUT...

I'VE COOLED DOWN, BUT I'M STILL NOT AS COLD-BLOODED AS YOU.

TOO BAD.

YOU'RE AS INCON-SIDERATE AS EVER, IT SEEMS.

ZA (STAND)

ARE WE GONNA BE OKAY ...!?

SO WHAT'S THE DEAL WITH THIS PLACE?

I-I'D FORGOTTEN... HOW BADLY THESE TWO GET ALONG!

THEY SURE TAKE ANY OPPOR-TUNITY THEY CAN TO FIGHT...

OOOOOOO (WHOOSH)

AFTER THE DESTRUCTION IN KANSAI...

...AYAHITO AND I GOT TO WORK REPAIRING THE EQUIPMENT HERE.

HMPH... THIS IS THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE'S SECRET RESEARCH FACILITY.

...BUT THE SEEDS OF CALAMITY HE LEFT BEHIND WERE SURE TO SPROUT... I SUSPECTED THAT MUCH.

OOOOO

GENNAI MAY BE GONE...

GIRO (GLARE)

...WAS UNEX-PECTED.

BUT YOU AND SENA HOSHIMIYA ACTUALLY ACCELER-ATING THE PROCESS...

LOOK.

PA (FLASH)

ANYHOW, WE GET THE GIST OF WHAT'S GOING ON.

MEKI
MEKI (CRACK)
WHAT'S THIS...!?
A SATELLITE VIEW OF THE CURRENT SITUATION.
MEKI
MEKI
MEKI
THAT THING'S STILL NOT OUT YET...
...BUT WHO KNOWS WHEN IT'LL BREAK FREE?
MEKI
MEKI
MEKI

Subject 45: "World and Self"
Place: Tokyo

TO SAY NOTHING OF CONVENTIONAL, PHYSICAL WEAPONRY, WHICH WOULD BE JUST AS INEFFECTIVE.

THE PROBLEM'S THAT OUR AVATARS AND ABILITIES CAN'T AFFECT THAT THING...

NOPE. IT'S JUST A BIG OLD HUNK OF SPIRIT ENERGY, Y'SEE.

WAIT.

WHA...!? WE CAN'T EVEN USE MISSILES!?

SO WE'RE JUST WAITING AROUND TO DIE!?

H-HOLD ON A SEC!

THAT'S WHY IT DIDN'T WORK.....

AT THIS RATE, THE BEAST WILL SWALLOW UP THE ENTIRE WORLD!

RELAX. WE STILL HAVE THESE.

THEY TRANSFORM SPIRIT ENERGY INTO PHYSICAL ENERGY.

GO (RUMBLE)

THE SUPER-MASSIVE COIL...

...AND ITS CONTROL UNIT, "DAISY"!

DAISY ...!?

GO GO GO ゴゴゴ...

YES.

THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE'S FACILITIES ARE VAST AND MANY, AND WE WENT TO GREAT PAINS LOCATING THIS PLACE...

GOPO (BLUB) ゴポ...

...BUT THIS IS HER REAL BODY.

WITH THESE, WE CAN TURN THAT THING PHYSICAL, MAKING IT VULNERABLE TO ATTACK.

GO ゴゴゴゴゴゴ

GOBO ゴポポ

WHAT WE'VE SEEN PREVIOUSLY IS JUST A PRO-JECTION... THE USER INTERFACE, IF YOU WILL.

THIS IS WHERE THE TRUE BODY RESTS.

BO ポ...

GOBO (BLUB) ゴポポ

GOBOBO ゴポポポポ

SO WE CAN MAKE "GOD" INTO A PHYSICAL BEING...

THE HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE'S ORIGINAL GOAL WAS THE TRANSFORMATION OF SPIRIT ENERGY INTO PHYSICAL ENERGY.

HAVE YOU FORGOTTEN?

...WE CAN TURN IT INTO AN ORDINARY GIANT VULNERABLE TO PHYSICAL ATTACK ***FOR THREE MINUTES.***

IF WE CAN LURE IT TO THE SPACE ABOVE THIS FACILITY...

CALM DOWN.

THERE'S A WAY TO TAKE IT DOWN IN THREE MINUTES WITH PHYSICAL ATTACKS!

BA (FWIP)

WHA—? THREE MINUTES!

EVEN IF OUR ATTACKS WORK, HOW'RE WE GONNA BEAT IT IN THREE MINUTES ...!?

WHAT COULD BE STRONG ENOUGH TO—?

C-COLONEL! NEITHER EIJI-SAMA NOR MYSELF HAVE OFFENSIVE-TYPE ABILITIES ...!!

AH ...!

DON (BAM)

THE U.N.'S NUKES ...!!?

Ayahito will get you into the U.N.

Secretary General Hakim should have those codes!

Eiji. Your mission is to take control of U.N. headquarters...

...and steal the nuclear missile launch codes!

CAN'T BELIEVE WE'VE GOT NO CHOICE BUT TO STEAL FROM THE U.N....!

TA (TMP)

FEELS WEIRD, BUT HIIRAGI'S BEING ESPECIALLY COOPERATIVE...

RIGHT!

IYO!

AND I'M PRETTY SURE EIJI STILL HASN'T GOTTEN OVER THE WHOLE SENA THING...

JAA (ZZZIP)

YOU SHOULD BE GOOD FROM HERE. TIME TO OPEN UP!

WE'VE GOTTA BACK EIJI UP!

Can you do this, Eiji?

DAN (SLAM)

TIME TO TAKE OVER THE U.N. HQ!!!

Our plan to strike "God" with a nuke... means we'll be hitting Sena at the same time!

AM I PREPARED FOR THAT...?

YEAH, I AM!

WHA.....!?

ガタ (STAND)

BAA (DIVE)

BIND DOMI-NATOR !!!

DON (BAM)

ORDER !!!

"EVERY-ONE, STAY WHERE YOU ARE" !!! !!!

BIRI BIRI (TWITCH)

ON THE MOVE, MAYBE ...!?

HE'S NOT HERE.....

HUH ...!?

IYO! WHERE'S HAKIM!?

...SHEESH. WHAT'D HIIRAGI MEAN JUST BEFORE WE TOOK THE PLUNGE?

WHAT-EVER HE MEANT, YOU REALLY DON'T ...

WE'VE GOTTA HURRY AFTER HIM, EIJI!

DA (DASH)

...I HAD NOTHING TO FEAR?

.....

...HAVE TO WORRY .....

THE ENEMY!

CHA (CHAK)

DAMN!

...BUT IT LOOKS LIKE EIJI'S MADE UP HIS MIND!

IT'S HIS OWN SISTER WE'RE TALKING ABOUT, SO NORMALLY, HIIRAGI'D BE RIGHT ABOUT HIM WORRYING...

BIND DOMINATOR ADD-ON: REBIRTH!!!

GO (FWOOM)

GYAUHHH!

ORDER!!!

OUR ORDER FUSION WORKED, JUST LIKE THAT? DON'T YOU NEED TO BE IN SYNC FOR THAT TO HAPPEN ...!?

GOOOO

"BIND DOMINATOR ADD-ON: REBIRTH"

CAN BURN ENEMIES AND HEAL ALLIES WITHIN THE TERRITORY.

THE EFFECT EXTENDS ACROSS A GIVEN AREA.

Yep. He's putting a lot of faith in you, Iyo, and he even managed to fuse with me.

Maybe we were stressing over nothing.

Well, this was unexpected, but I think Eiji-sama will be just fine, Rin.

YEAH!

EIJI, THE SEC-RETARY GENERAL IS UP AHEAD ...!

WE'D BETTER TAKE CARE OF THIS MISSION NICE AND QUICK, WHILE EIJI'S STILL IN A GOOD MOOD!

(WHOOSH)

!?

ナオ

ZU (FSSHH)
ズ ズ
MY POWER'S FADING!?
FADE
GET BACK, EIJI!
KI (SKID)
キ キ キ キ キ
FU. FU HA HA HA.
YOUR INTEL WAS CORRECT. JUST AS YOU SAID, HE CAME AFTER ME!
"YOU"...?
!?
WHA .....?
!!?
BARIRI! (CRACKLE)
ANTI-ORDER FIELD, ACTI-VATE!!!

BAN (BAM)

YES.

YOU SAVED US!

Happy to be of help.

HIIRAGI ...!?!?

HI—

SORRY FOR DOUBTING YOU. I WAS CONVINCED YOU WERE STILL ALLIED WITH EIJI HOSHIMIYA.

!?

DA (TMP) DA DA

BUT WHY...?

WHY WAS HIIRAGI IN COMMU-NICATION WITH THIS GUY...!?

AND WE WERE CORRECT TO GO ALONG WITH YOUR PLAN TO HIT BACK AT FUJI'S MONSTER WITH THE COIL!

I'LL BRING UP THE MOTION IMMEDI-ATELY!

THAT BAS-TARD!

.....I GET IT.

TRICKING EIJI INTO INVADING THE U.N. TO EARN THEIR TRUST WAS ALL PART OF THE PLAN...!

HIIRAGI'S HAPPY AS LONG AS HE GETS TO USE THE NUKES, WHATEVER IT TAKES...!

What Gennai left behind... His blood-line will be ended.

DON (BAM)

Eiji. I very much doubt you have the resolve to oppose Sena.

YOU'RE AN ASS, HIIRAGI. USING EIJI AS A PAWN, SAME AS EVER...!

EIJI, WE GOTTA GET AWAY FROM THE ANTI-ORDER FIELD'S AREA OF EFFECT!

This is truly the end of the line for you!

NO. I CAN'T JUST RUN. AWAY NOW!

THOSE GUYS'RE EQUIPPED FOR A FIGHT. WE CAN'T WIN WITHOUT OUR ABILITIES!

KI (SKID)

KI KI KI

KURU (SPIN)

HUH!?

BACK TO HAKIM!!!

WHERE'RE YOU GOING, EIJI!?!?

...Wait a minute.

It can't be... Eiji's coming back?

U

ZA (KZZT)

ZA

HE RAN, OF COURSE ...

DON'T LET DOWN YOUR GUARD. CHASE HIM DOWN!

COMING BACK?

HOLD ON!

DA (DASH)

WHY'RE YOU RACING BACK TO HAKIM!?

IT'S A TRAP, Y'KNOW!

NO WAY!

.....

WE GOTTA GET AWAY FROM THE ANTI-ORDER FIELD, OR ELSE ...

SO SELF-DESTRUCTIVE... MAYBE HE DOESN'T EVEN REALIZE WHAT HE'S DOING!

LOOKS LIKE HE HASN'T CHANGED AT ALL!

DAMMIT, EIJI...NOT AGAIN!

ZAZA

!?

You haven't changed a bit.

ZA (KZZT)

You think only of yourself and end up destroying those who get involved.

!!!

You only know how to be yourself, Eiji.

DAMN YOU, HIIRAGI ...!

Just like Gennai!

SLI (DODGE)

WHOA.

!

YOU CAN'T DO THIS, EIJI!!

O (WHOOSH)

GAH.

PERHAPS EIJI-SAMA HAS A PLAN OF HIS OWN?

STOP IT, RIN! THIS IS NO TIME TO FIGHT.

TA (TMP)

SORRY, YOU TWO!

I NEED YOU TO STICK WITH ME A LITTLE LONGER!

UM... RIGHT. NO TIME FOR A FIGHT. HENCE ME TRYING TO STOP HIM!!

SHOULD'VE EXPECTED IT...

I'VE BEEN PLAYING THE BIG, BAD VILLAIN ALL ALONG, AFTER ALL.

BUT NOW HIIRAGI'S BETRAYED ME AGAIN IN THE ELEVENTH HOUR.

BECAUSE WHAT I'VE GOTTA DO NOW IS TAKE DOWN SENA!

ZA (STEP)
ZA
ZA
ZA
ZA
!
WH-WH-WHAT SHOULD WE DO, EIJI-SAMA ...!?
W-WE'RE SUR-ROUNDED ...!
.....
HMPH.
ARE YOU FINALLY READY TO RECEIVE JUDG-MENT?
SO YOU'VE RETURNED, EIJI HOSHIMIYA ...!
ZA (STAND)
BUT ...
...I CAN'T GO AND DIE JUST YET ...!!!

BAN (BAM)

SECRETARY GENERAL HAKIM, AS YOU CAN SEE, WE'RE UNARMED.

SO PLEASE. LET ME HELP YOU WITH HIIRAGI'S STRATEGY.

WHY'RE YOU ASKING SO NICELY AT THIS POINT?

WHY ...

WHA... "PLEASE" ...!?

!?

WHAT ARE YOU PLAYING AT, BOY?

GUI (TUG)

YOU AND YOUR PEOPLE ARE THE ONES WHO ATTACKED US IN THE FIRST PLACE.

Eiji Hoshimiya and his sister, Sena, are enemies of the entire world.

Secretary General.

You needn't listen to anything he says.

NATURALLY, HE'S MY BIGGEST PROBLEM HERE...!

HIIRAGI ...!

So why should I include such an unstable element in my plan!?

.....

Eiji...

You can't kill Sena.

You don't have the nerve for it!

YOU'RE WRONG ...

IT WAS SENA WHO CAUSED THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION TEN YEARS AGO!

AND I WAS THE ONE WHO HID THAT FACT!

I WILL BE THE ONE TO BRING DOWN SENA .....!!!

(WHOOSH)

THAT'S WHY I GOTTA TAKE RESPON-SIBILITY NOW!

!

PLEASE, HIIRAGI, LET ME HELP! I CAN BE WAY MORE USEFUL THAN YOU THINK!

WE'RE AFTER THE SAME THING!

Such nonsense.

.....

DID EIJI ACTUALLY ...

...JUST TELL THE TRUTH ALL ON HIS OWN...!?

.....

EIJI-SAMA.

DID EIJI...

SAY WHAT YOU WANT, BUT WE'LL NEVER COOPERATE WITH THE LIKES OF YOU!

WE'RE DONE HERE!

BACHI (CRACKLE)

BACHI

BESIDES, THE FIELD DEVICE IS ABOUT TO RUN OUTTA JUICE.

P-PLEASE JUST WAIT!

BA (LUNGE)

I KNOW I CAN BE USEFUL TO YOU IN A FIGHT AGAINST OTHER ORDERS!

BUT EIJI'S REALLY TRYING TO CHANGE, IN HIS OWN WAY...!

HE'S JUST AS RASH AND IMPULSIVE AS EVER, BUT...

ZA (STAND)

WHAT-EVER YOU'RE TRYING TO SAY, I'M NOT UNDER-STANDING!

AND I KINDA DOUBT THIS IS THE RIGHT WAY TO DO IT, BUT...!

Subject 45 : END

TCH.

HIIRAGI...!

Admit it, Eiji.

The world has no more use for the Hoshi-miyas.

THAT'S FAR ENOUGH.

CHA (CHAK)

ZA (STEP)

ZA

E-EIJI.

AS I THOUGHT, THIS AIN'T LOOKING GOOD...!

EIJI-SAMA!

ZA

TCH ...

Subject 46: "Pursuit at Hoshimiya Institute Laboratory #1"
Place: Tokyo

ZA (KZZT)
ZA
!?
WHAT IS IT...!?
SOUNDED LIKE AN EXPLOSION ON THE COLONEL'S SIDE!?
BA (TURN)
COLO-NEL!
THE FACILITY IS UNDER ATTACK!
.....!?
SOME-ONE'S ATTACK-ING!?
!
ZU (RUMBLE)
ZU
ZU
ZU
DOOOOON (BOOM)

HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE LABORATORY #1
FIRST FLOOR

GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
(RUMBLE)

IT'S THE ENEMY!!!

WE'RE THE ADVANCE GUARD, HERE UNDER SENA'S ORDERS. LET'S MOVE.

WHO COULD HAVE IMAGINED THE ENEMY'S HIDEOUT WAS HIDDEN HERE?

LOOKS LIKE IT WAS SMART TO PLANT SOME SPIES IN THE PARLIAMENT AFTER WE TOOK OVER.

NOW THE FIRST MOVE IS OURS TO MAKE.

HEH-HEH-HEH.

THE U.N. COMES LATER. BACK TO THE LAB FOR NOW!

RIN!

IYO!

DAN (DASH)

!

I THE FIELD'S WORN OFF!?

I'VE GOT MY POWER BACK!!!

B-BUT!

GYUO (RUSH)

KYAH!

DAN (TMP)

YEAH! LET'S GET TO THAT COIL!

OO (WHOOSH)

GOOD THING AYAHITO LEFT BEHIND OUR EXIT ROUTE.

RIGHT!

.....

EIJI-SAMA, WE HAVE TO PROTECT THE COIL, THE COLONEL, AND EVERYONE ELSE!

GOOD THING...? NOT REALLY! SEEMS LIKE A BONEHEAD MOVE!

HMPH.

NOT A PROBLEM.

MY, MY. ANOTHER FAMILIAR-LOOKING BARRIER. HOW FOOLISH.

LIQUID BOMBER!!!

ORDER!!!

DOGGOO (FWOOSH)

DON (BAM)

"LIQUID BOMBER"
ALFRED BELL'S BOMBING ABILITY. THE EXPLOSIVE LIQUID CAN SCATTER ABOUT OR SEEP INTO CRACKS BEFORE DETONATING.

TA (TMP)

SOME KINDA EXPLOSION!?

THE HECK HAPPENED HERE!?

HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE LABORATORY #1
UNDERGROUND LEVEL B12
ALL-PURPOSE HALL

SHIT. BETTER FIND ANOTHER WAY!

!

EIJI-SAMA, THIS IS A DEAD END!

!?

HUH ...!?

BUN (FLICKER)

I'll guide you, Hoshi-miya!

The nearby gate A-13 should provide a detour.

Ain't just Igawa. S'me too.

E-EVEN YOU, KAGEKIYO ...!?

IGAWA ...!?

PA (FLASH)

Kagekiyo's Rock God is the only reason we're not dead.

We survived, no thanks to you.

A13

D-DIDN'T YOU TWO... DIE BACK AT MT. FUJI?

.....

OOO (WHOOSH)

But... unlike Hakim, I'm a realist, so I know how to make decisions on the fly.

You're the only one who can protect the coil now.

...Am I right?

If you're saying the world still needs you...

...then take action and prove it!

LITTLE BY LITTLE...

...THINGS ARE STARTING TO WORK OUT.

BUT...ARE YOU SURE ABOUT THIS, EIJI-SAMA?

TAKING THIS PATH WILL FORCE YOU INTO A FIGHT AGAINST SENA-SAMA.

TA (TMP)

YEAH!

...AND AN EVEN NASTIER HIIRAGI WAITING ON US!

'COS WE'VE GOT SOME NASTY ENEMIES ...

THEN KEEP HUSTLING!

THE ENEMY HAS SMASHED PAST BARRIER #5! THEY'LL REACH US WITHIN TEN MINUTES!!

BAN (BAM)

FLOOR B17

COIL CONTROL ROOM

C-COLO-NEL!!

GASHAN (CLANG)

GASHAN

Y-YES!

AYAHITO! ACTIVATE THE RE-MAINING BARRI-ERS!

A—

JUO (FWOOSH)

ANOTHER BARRIER, GONE!

ACTIVATE THE TURRETS!

DON (BOOM)

TURRETS DESTROYED ...!

N-NO GOOD, COLONEL. WE CAN'T STOP THEM!

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO (BLAM)

THEY'RE NOT SLOWING DOWN. WHAT TO DO...!?

AN ABILITY THAT GRANTS HIGH PAYLOAD LIQUID EXPLOSIVES ...!

!

EIJI!

I'm headed your way, so guide me!

ZA (KZZT) ZA ZA ZA

Hey, you hear me, Hiiragi?

COLONEL, WE'VE GOTTA DO SOME-THING!

AGAIN...? THE DAMN HOSHIMIYA BLOOD-LINE...

HII-RAGI!

O (WHOOSH)

ALWAYS GETTING IN THE WAY OF MY HOPES! MY PLANS ...!

ABSO-LUTELY NOT!!

I REFUSE TO RELY ON A HOSHI-MIYA...!

BAN (BAM)

I WILL STOP THE INTRUDERS MYSELF!

HIIRAGI, YOU DUMB-ASS...!

...IS THE ENEMY WITHIN!

LIKE I THOUGHT, OUR BIGGEST PROBLEM ...

DA (DASH)

TCH.

BAN

NO!

I-I REALLY THINK WE SHOULD LET EIJI-SAMA HELP US OUT...

COLO-NEL.

WHAT-EVER THE CRISIS, I WILL NOT RELY ON HOSHIMIYA BLOOD EVER AGAIN ...!

PUT UP MORE BARRI-ERS! AND GO BUY US AS MUCH TIME AS YOU CAN!

COLONEL ...! THE ENEMY KEEPS ADVANC-ING!

DO (STOMP)

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

TH-THEY'VE NEARLY REACHED THE COIL!

NEITHER OF US IS REALLY SUITED FOR FULL-ON BATTLE!

BUT ...

...MY POWER IS SPATIAL WARPING!

AND YOURS IS THE ABILITY TO UNDO REALITY!

WE SIMPLY HAVE TO ENDURE FOR NOW...

THE WORLD'S BEEN DEFILED BY THE HOSHIMIYAS FOR TEN YEARS.

IT CAN'T AFFORD A REPEAT OF THEIR PAST MISTAKES.

BUT THESE ENEMIES ARE ALL FIGHTERS IN THEIR OWN RIGHT!

ONCE WE RUN INTO THEM... WHAT THEN!?

AND NEITHER CAN I.

I THOUGHT YOU WERE MORE RATIONAL THAN THAT!

COLO-NEL...

...YOU'RE JUST TAKING YOUR HATE FOR GENNAI ...

...AND PROJECTING IT ONTO EIJI-SAMA, AREN'T YOU?

THE RADAR !?

!

PIII (BEEP)

PIII

To Coil

ENEMY 1

COLONEL ...!

THE...

THE ENEMY HAS SPLIT IN THREE DIREC-TIONS!

ENEMY 2

ENEMY 3

Original Route

DO (BOOM)

HMPH.

THEY SPLIT UP...!?

HARUAKI ABENO

AND I SHALL DESTROY THE FACILITY'S POWER SUPPLY.

HEH-HEH-HEH. I'LL GO BACK THE WAY WE CAME AND STOP THEIR REINFORCE-MENTS!

MOROSUKE

NO NEED FOR US ALL TO TARGET THE COIL.

I'M MORE THAN ENOUGH FOR THAT JOB.

ALFRED BELL

WE HAVE TO PROTECT THE POWER ROOM...!

TCH.

I SEE... THEY'RE AFTER BOTH THE COIL AND THE POWER SUPPLY!

AYA-HITO!

THESE BASTARDS ARE TRYING TO CATCH US IN A DOUBLE CHECK-MATE.

EIJI'S GROUP, RUSHING TOWARD THE COIL

DA (DASH)

HUH ...!?

THE THREE ENEMIES SPLIT UP !?

I'LL BE THE ONE...TO GUARD OUR POWER SUPPLY!

GOT IT, COLONEL!

JAA (ZZZIP)

BUT THAT LEAVES US SHORT-HANDED ON THE COIL!

YOU ABSOLUTELY SURE YOU DON'T WANNA TRUST EIJI-SAMA WITH THIS?

SHIT. THIS JUST GOT EVEN MORE COMPLI-CATED...

THIS IS NO TIME FOR HIIRAGI TO BE HIS STUBBORN SELF...!

YES... ACCORDING TO MY DIVINING.

ONE IS HEADED OUR WAY, SO WE'RE SURE TO CLASH MOMEN-TARILY...

WHAT A DRAG.

.....

THAT MAKES SEVERAL TIMES NOW THAT MY PREDICTIONS CONCERNING SENA-SAMA HAVE BEEN LESS THAN ACCURATE...

I WONDER ...

THE STRANGEST THING, THOUGH...

...IS THAT I WASN'T ABLE TO DIVINE ANYTHING ABOUT SENA-SAMA'S WHERE-ABOUTS.

!

(WHOOSH)

OHH, EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

ZA (STEP)

HELLO.

THE ENEMY!!!

NOW I'M GLAD I DECIDED TO HANG BACK!

DON (BAM)

WHAT AN HONOR TO FINALLY MEET YOU!

DON

EIJI.

I SHOULD BE THE FIRST ONE TO TEST AN UNKNOWN ORDER, GIVEN MY IMMOR-TALITY!

WHO'S HE...!?

DA (DASH)

NOW ...

TA (TMP)

HEH HEH.

YOU WORM! LEARN TO SPEAK PROPERLY TO YOUR BETTERS !!!!

ZAN (SLASH)

WHOOPS!

...DIE !!!

PIN (FWIP)

! A WIRE ...!?

DOSHA (THUD)

GYAAAAH!!!

.....

DOGOOOO (KABOOM)

HER LEG...

R-RIIIN!!!

WE'VE SENT THEM REINFORCE-MENTS... BUT...

...WHO CAN SAY IF THEY'LL MAKE IT IN TIME?

SECRETARY GENERAL HAKIM, IT SEEMS THAT EIJI HOSHIMIYA HAS ENTERED THE BATTLE!

SO HE'S STILL WORK-ING WITH HIIRAGI!?

U.N. HEADQUARTERS

IT'S JUST AS EIJI AND HIS FRIENDS SAID...

THEY'RE THE ONLY FIGHTERS WE CAN COUNT ON AT THE MOMENT!

SHIT!

ENEMY 2

Eiji Hoshimiya

BUT WHAT DO I DO...!?

TA (TMP)

THE ENEMY'S NOT HERE YET...

I KNOW THE COLONEL ORDERED ME TO, BUT HOW'M I S'POSED TO FIGHT!?

CHA (CHAK)

ALL I'VE GOT ON HAND IS THIS GUN AND A KNIFE...

POWER SUPPLY

BA (LEAP)

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

WHOA, THERE. DON'T MOVE CARE-LESSLY NOW!

THE AREA IS CHOCK FULL OF BOOBY TRAPS.

RIN...!

U FU FU.

YOU SHAN'T GET PAST ME!

MY TASK IS TO STOP REINFORCE-MENTS FROM PRO-GRESSING.

!

TRAPS ...!?

PACHI (SNAP)

NOW THEN ...

PIN (FWIP)

HEH-HEH-HEH-HEH-HEH

HEH-HEH-HEH-HEH-HEH.

...HOW ABOUT A WAGER!?

THE BET CONCERNS YOU MOVING PAST THIS ROOM, EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

OOOOOOO (WHOOSH)

MY "FINAL JUDGE" ABILITY ALLOWS ME TO ENFORCE THE OUTCOME OF ANY GAMBLE!

LIKE THIS!

HYOI

JUST TRY IT IF YOU THINK YOU CAN.

HYOI (CHOP)

NO ONE'S GAM-BLING ON ANY-THING, YOU IDIOT!

WE'RE JUST GONNA BEAT YOU AND MOVE ON!

OHH, TOO BAD!

ONE WRONG MOVE, AND...!

DAMN. SO MANY TRAPS. AND THOSE'RE JUST THE ONES I CAN SEE...

THOSE SCARS ...

WERE YOU HURT IN THE GREAT DESTRUC-TION?

YOU KNOW IT WAS SENA WHO CAUSED THAT, RIGHT?

STILL... I'M SO VERY GLAD.

I CAN FINALLY REPAY MY DEBT OF GRATITUDE TO SENA-SAMA!

SU (FWIP)

I WAS CHOSEN AND BLESSED AS AN ORDER!

AND I AM BLESSED TO PARTICIPATE IN THE WORLD'S SALVATION!

MY, MY. YES, OF COURSE I KNOW.

INDEED, I USED TO HATE MY APPEAR-ANCE, BUT NOW, FU-FU... NOW I WEAR THIS FACE WITH PRIDE.

HMPH.

NOW ...

...DIE FOR ME, "BIG BROTHER"!

JAKIN (KACHAK)

THIS IS MY MOMENT TO PROVE MY LOYALTY!

DON (BLAM)

DA (CLICK)

SHIT.

HE'S GOT A SHOT-GUN!?

!?

FOR SENA-SAMA! YES, YOUR DEATH WILL SHOW THE EXTENT OF MY FEELINGS FOR SENA-SAMA!

PI (TRIP)

BIND DOMI-NATOR!!!

DOOOO (FWOOSH)

DAMMIT! ORDER!

NO. THERE'RE TOO MANY. DODGING THEM ALL WOULD BE IMPOSSIBLE!

CAN IYO'S PREDICTIONS GUIDE US THROUGH ...!?

IT'S TAKING ALL I HAVE TO PROTECT US WITH THIS AIR RESISTANCE BARRIER ...!

AND STAYING HIDDEN LIKE THIS IS JUST GIVING THEM MORE TIME...!

I CAN'T EXTEND MY TERRITORY FAR ENOUGH TO SINK MY ANCHORS INTO HIM.....!

ZA (STEP)

ZA

ZA

HE'S BEYOND THE TRAPS!

...AND MAKE IT TO THE COIL, OR WE'VE GOT NO FUTURE ...!

GOTTA BEAT THIS GUY QUICK, FIND THAT BASTARD, HIIRAGI...

ZA (KZZT) H..

H" ZA H"/o..

WHAT DO I DO ...!?

WHOA!

What do you think you're doing, Eiji Hoshimiya !?

You can't hide there forever !!

GYO (GLARE)

I'm sending a diagram now!

GU (TENSE)

GU

If you can't break through there, take another route!

AND I'VE STILL GOTTA BEAT THIS GUY IN THE END...

W-WAIT A SECOND! I APPRECIATE THE HELP, BUT I CAN'T ABANDON RIN.

SO NOISY.

GU (PUSH)

!?

SECRETARY GENERAL !?

Yeah... Hakim wants to speak with you.

Utility Maintenance Passage

Exit

ENEMY 2

"UTILITY" .....?

Entrance

.....

THIS PATH.....

Eiji Hoshimiya

HE'S GONE ...?

HMPH.

OOO (WHOOSH)

PICHA (SPLASH)

WATER ...?

THINKS HE CAN HIDE IN THE SMOKE...

...BUT THAT WORKS OUT SPLENDIDLY FOR ME!

AFTER ALL, MY GOAL WAS SIMPLY TO DELAY HIM!

CHORO (OOZE)

CHORO

WHAT'S THIS...?

!

DO
(PIERCE)

GII
(CREAK)

HAH. NO TRAPS ON THIS SIDE, LOOKS LIKE.

DO

GAH .....!?

DO

DO

TH-THE SEWAGE TUNNEL!?

PRETTY STANDARD ARCHITECTURE, YEAH?

BUT I KNEW YOU'D APPROACH IF YOU THOUGHT SOMETHING WAS WEIRD, SO I LURED YOU OVER.

Exit

Entrance

Utility Maintenance Passage

NOT SEWAGE.

THERE'S A UTILITY MAINTENANCE ROUTE RUNNING UNDER THAT PASSAGE.

SEE?

OHHHH.

ドシャッ!!

DOSHA (THUD)

BAN (BAM)

AND NOW... ORDER!

"YOU WON'T HURT ANYONE ELSE"!!!

NO NEED FOR ANY WAGERING.

PIKU

PIKU (TWITCH)

SIGH.

The U.N. is not your ally.

Make no mistake.

I only fed you that informa-tion for tactical reasons.

STILL... GOTTA KEEP MOVING.

EITHER WAY, THANK YOU.

RIGHT, OF COURSE...

OW, OW, OW.

TA (TMP) ﾀﾀｯ TA

EIJI-SAMA, LET'S CARRY RIN!

WHAT TOOK YA SO LONG?

YEAH!

SHUUUU (SIZZLE)

Hurry on ahead, Eiji!!

Know this.

Time is short!

TCH ...

Reinforce-ments from the U.N. will arrive momentarily.

PISH! (CRACK)

I'LL TRY TO CONFUSE THEM AND END THIS THING QUICKLY!

I'M AT A BIG DISADVANTAGE. GOTTA TAKE MY SHOT THEN WARP AWAY!

WHERE'RE THEY GONNA HIT FROM...!?

DOGOOO (SMASH)

ドォォ

HEY, HEY.

AYAHITO.

FROM ABOVE!!?

THE TEN HANDS ARE ON THE SCENE!!!

DO

WHAT'S WITH ALL THE SNEAKING AROUND?

STRIKE A POSE, MAN!

DO

DO

DO

DO (RUMBLE)

BENKEI ...!?

Subject 46:END

BIG
ORDER

YOU REPRESENTED MY IDEALS IN EVERY WAY.

GENNAI HOSHIMIYA.

WHY DID YOU HAVE TO GO AND CHANGE ...?

SO WHY...?

!

Hiiragi...!

Can you hear me, Hiiragi?

PI (BEEP)

CONNECT

U.N. Secretary General Hansan Hakim

BIII

BIII (BZZT)

BAN (BAM)

Yes. I've sent you Benkei, Lauryn, Kokudo Soumoku, and Mari Kunou of the Ten Hands!

HOSHIMIYA INSTITUTE LABORATORY #1

COIL OPERATIONS ROOM

!? REIN-FORCE-MENTS ..... YOU SAY?

They only just made it in time.

BENKEI AND THE OTHERS .....

THIS IS GOOD...!

AND THEY'VE GONE TO HELP AYAHITO!

BUT THE REAL TARGET IS STILL THIS COIL!

I'VE NO DOUBT THEY'LL MANAGE TO PROTECT THE POWER SUPPLY NOW.

OOOOOOO (WHOOSH)

NOT TO MENTION ...

...THE OTHER UNWANTED GUEST.

IT'LL TAKE ME ANOTHER FIFTEEN MINUTES TO PREP THE COIL FOR ACTIVATION. NO, MAYBE TWENTY.

Coil

Alfred Bell

Power Supply

Haruaki Abeno

Morosuke

Eiji Hoshimiya

Eiji Hoshimiya

BUT THE ENEMY'S GOING TO REACH ME BEFORE THEN!

DA (DASH)

ダッ

EIJI HOSHIMIYA!

THE TEN HANDS HAVE ARRIVED AS BACKUP ...!?

Yeah.

Subject 47:
“Counterattack at Hoshimiya Institute Laboratory #1”
Place: Tokyo

THOSE GUYS...

BUT THEY TOTALLY IGNORED ME WHEN I WAS CRYING OUT FOR HELP...!

BA (BAM)

MARI ...!

THE SITUATION AND OUR ROLES HAVE CHANGED.

TA (TMP)

FU!

IT'S BEEN A WHILE, EIJI!

YOU TOO, IYO AND SECOND LIEUTENANT RIN.

FU-FU.

!

LIEUTENANT COLONEL...? WHY ARE YOU HERE!?

ARE YOU HERE TO BACK US UP TOO?

I HEARD THE COLONEL IS IN TROUBLE!

PA (FLASH)

COLONEL!

We're connected, Mari!

HIIRAGI ...!

So here's the plan!

I'm grateful to have you all here.

Benkei! Lauryn! Kokudo! Ayahito!

HMPH!

Benkei, Lauryn, Ayahito, and Kokudo ...

...will repel Haruaki Abeno! Don't let him damage the power supply room!

UNDER-STOOD!

DON (BAM)

Now listen. Right now, the coil's core system isn't even operational.

Activating the coil comes first! To that end, we have to remove every possible threat!

BAN (BAM)

Mari!

You'll come straight to the coil and rendezvous with me!

YES!

First Lieutenant Iyo and Second Lieutenant Rin...

...will both launch a counter-attack on Alfred Bell!

THIS IS ALL-OUT WAR!!!

DON'T LET ANYTHING GET IN THE WAY OF ACTIVATING THE COIL!

DESTROY THE ENEMY!!

(WHOOSH)

HEY...

WAIT A MIN-UTE!

GOT IT!!!

HEY, HIIRAGI ...!!!

WHAT'S MY JOB .....!!?

GAH.

DA (DASH)

KURU (TURN)

Those omitted have no role to play.

HOLD IT RIGHT THERE, HIIRAGI!

You're not needed here!

THIS WAY, EIJI! COME WITH ME TO THE COIL!

THE MORE FIGHT-ERS, THE BETTER!

MARI!

THIS IS SERIOUSLY NO TIME FOR US TO BE FIGHT-ING!

FOR REAL... HOW MUCH DOES THAT GUY HATE EIJI?

PISHI (CRACK)

DESTROYING ALL THOSE BARRIERS WEAKENED THE CEILING ...

THE COIL WILL BE IN TROUBLE IF WE DON'T HURRY.

GO (RUMBLE)
GO
GO
GO

Be careful. Haruaki Abeno... used to be an elite assassin for the Security Council.

They say he single-handedly dealt with about half of Japan's criminal Orders.

STILL...HE SHOULD BE NO TROUBLE GIVEN OUR CURRENT LINEUP!

THERE... HE'S COMING!

PISH! (SLICE)

ZA (STAND)

HOLD ON, NOW!

<I> DON'T FEEL LIKE DYING TODAY!

HMPH. BEST TO ENTER THE GATES OF HELL WITH COMRADES BY ONE'S SIDE!

WHO KNEW ...

...WE'D HAVE A TEN HANDS REUNION.

OOOO (WHOOSH)

DO
DO
DO
DO
DO
DO
(STOMP)
AVA-TARS...
NNGH.
NO. PAPER DOLLS !!?
DON (BAM)
HARUAKI ABENO!!!

BATTLE ON!!

!!! NO

ORDER !!!

SOLDIERS MEAN NOTHING !!!

BUT AGAINST MY FIST, YOUR SOLDIERS MEAN

DO (POW)

MEKYAA (RIP)

FORMER MEMBER OF THE SECURITY COUNCIL, HARUAKI ABENO! YOU MANIPULATE PAPER DOLLS WITH YOUR ABILITY!!

HMPH. OUR INTELLI-GENCE WAS CORRECT!

DON (BAM)

HARA (FLAP)

!?

BA (TURN)

SADLY FOR YOU...

NOTHING CAN WITHSTAND THAT FORCE!

BENKEI'S ATOMIC PUNCH...!

DOZA (FWUMP)

ZA

...I HAVE AN ENDLESS SUPPLY OF PAPER TO CREATE NEW DOLLS WITH!!!

ZA

ZA

ZA

(WHOOSH)

LEAVE THIS TO KOKU-DO!

BENKEI! PULL BACK FOR NOW!

THERE'S NO END TO THEM...!

ZOZO

ZOZO

ZOZO (SHIFT)

NNGH!

THEY'RE REGENER-ATING!?

ORDER !!!

PRIMAL BANYAN ZONE!!!

DO (FWOOM)

"PRIMAL BANYAN ZONE"
KOKUDO SOUMOKU'S ABILITY TO CONTROL ALL PLANT LIFE. HIS WISH WAS "TO RESTORE NATURE."

I SEE. KOKUDO SOUMOKU CONTROLS THE GROWTH AND MOVEMENTS OF PLANTS!

DO (CLAMP)

DO

DO

DO

DO

THESE ROOTS ...!?

TA (TMP)

IF YOU CAN'T BEAT 'EM, WRAP 'EM ALL UP!

!!?

HOW-EVER...

SUPA (SLICE)

IT SEEMS YOU ARE WOEFULLY UNAWARE ...

...OF THE SHARP-NESS OF PAPER !!!

!!! !!!

"INFINITE DUMMIES" AND "CUTTING POWER" ...!

THIS IS BAD...!

TCH. A POOR MATCHUP FOR BOTH BENKEI AND KOKUDO...!

Wait ...

Don't forget that Haruaki Abeno isn't our only opponent.

!

DO (STOMP)

Mari Kunou is about to run into Alfred Bell...

THERE'S THE ENEMY ...!

He's another top-class mercenary who rarely emerges from the shadows!

DO

DO

BOFU (PUFF)

ボフッ

KYUUUU (HUMM)

キュウ

ウウ...

FU (PSST)

フー

!!?

A "LIGHT"-BASED ABILITY, JUST AS YOUR PROFILE SAID.

LIGHT IS WEAKENED BY A SMOKE-SCREEN!

HEH-HEH... YOU'RE NO MATCH FOR MY POWER!

DOON (BAM)

ドン

LIQUID BOMBER!!!

ORDER!!! CURVE RAY!!!

オー!!

BA (TURN)

DON'T STOP, EIJI-SAMA. YOU NEED TO GET TO THE COIL...!

EIJI, YOU RUSH ON AHEAD AND ERECT A BARRIER AROUND THE COIL!

MARI ...!

BARA (CRUMBLE)

BARA

CRAP. THE CEILING'S STILL FALLING APART...

PISHI (CRACK)

MARI.

LOOK AFTER RIN AND IYO...!

SHIT ...!

!

THEIR LIVES MIGHT BE THE PRICE TO PAY FOR THE TIME I NEED TO ACTIVATE THE COIL...!

KATA

KATA

KATA (CLAK)

BENKEI, LAURYN, AYAHITO, KOKUDO ...!

AND NOW, MARI TOO ...!

...MEANS THAT SENA HOSHIMIYA MUST HAVE LEARNED OF THE COIL'S EXISTENCE ...!

THE FACT THAT THE ENEMY IS HERE...

GO

IT'S NOT GONNA HOLD...!!

GO (RUMBLE)

GO

WE WERE ALREADY SHORT ON TIME, BUT NOW ...!

SHIT. AND NOW THIS PLACE IS ON ITS LAST LEGS...

GO GO

HIIRAGI ...!!!

I'LL KEEP THE COIL SAFE !!!

DO DO

BIND DOMINATOR !!!

DO DO

DO (RUMBLE)

ORDER !!!

"PROTECT THE COIL WITH AIR BARRIER" !!!

DO

DO

EIJI ...!?

ZU

ZU

ZU

GUH!

OH.

OHH...

ZU (SHAKE)

THE WEIGHT OF THE WHOLE FACILITY'S COMING DOWN...!

ZU

ZU

MAKES SENSE...

GU (STRAIN)

GU

GU

DAMN. THIS IS TAKING A HUGE TOLL ON ME...!

...TCH.

GU

GU

GU

GEEZ...

WHO EVER THOUGHT I'D HAVE TO CLEAN UP YOUR MESS...?

YOU'RE A NUI-SANCE!

MY PLAN... DOESN'T REQUIRE AN UNSTABLE ELEMENT LIKE YOU!

ARE YOU STUPID !?

YOU... YOU'RE STILL SPOUTING THAT CRAP, EVEN NOW?

YOU ...!

WHETHER IT'S NOW OR LATER, "GOD"'S STILL GONNA ATTACK...!

GOBA (CRASH)

DIDN'T YOU NEED ME TO LURE "GOD" HERE IN THE FIRST PLACE?

I SIMPLY DIDN'T EXPECT THE PLAN TO LEAK THIS QUICKLY ...

THAT ROLE ENDED FOR YOU THE MINUTE THE ENEMY LEARNED OF THIS PLACE.

YES...

...IF YOU'RE ONLY GOING TO BETRAY ME, LIKE GENNAI DID!

ARE YOU SAYING I SHOULD JUST GO AHEAD AND DIE RIGHT NOW ...!!! !!?

ゴオ

ゴオ

.....MY DAD?

000 (WHOOSH)

ゴ

GO

GO

GO

GO

GO (RUMBLE)

WHAT'S THAT GOT TO DO WITH ME, ANYWAY?

MY DAD'S DEAD! WHAT'S DONE IS DONE!!

SO ISN'T THE GUY YOU HATE REALLY JUST THAT "IDEALIZED" VERSION OF HIM!?

DIDN'T YOU TELL ME HE WAS YOUR IDEAL BOSS OR SOMETHING ...?

AND THEN HE WENT AND BETRAYED YOU...!

THE OPPOSITE.

HE WAS ONLY HUMAN.

SO THOSE IDEALS OF HIS THAT I EMBRACED...

...WERE THE REAL "LIES."

CLAIMING IT WAS FOR ALL OF HUMANITY WAS PURE CHICANERY.

IN ORDER TO CURE HIS DAUGHTER'S ILLNESS, GENNAI HOSHIMIYA...

...BEGAN HIS RESEARCH ON WISH-GRANTING...

WHEN HE SOUGHT TO RECREATE THE EXPERIMENT AFTER EFFECTIVELY CAUSING THE FIRST GREAT DESTRUCTION...

THAT WAS JUST HIM TRYING TO MAKE UP FOR HIS PAST FAILURES. NOTHING MORE.

YOU TOO, WITH GENNAI'S BLOOD IN YOU!

YOU'LL MAKE YOUR MISTAKES TOO!!

IT'S HUMAN TO ERR! PEOPLE MAKE MISTAKES!

...IDIOT...!

YOU...

PI (BEEP)

Five minutes until activation of DAISY system.

I DON'T GIVE A CRAP ABOUT MY DAD!

ISN'T HELPING YOUR FRIENDS MORE IMPORT-ANT THAN ALL THAT OTHER CRAP?

YOU CAN COME UP WITH AN EVEN BETTER PLAN IF YOU USE ME...

DO YOU... WANT THEM TO DIE!!?

!

DO (PIERCE)


Subject 47 : END

BENKEI !!!

BE—

DOSSUU (PIERCE)

ZU ズズズ ZU ズズズ ZU (RUMBLE)

!

MEANWHILE, AT THE U.N.

SECRETARY GENERAL!

FUJI'S SEISMOGRAPH READINGS ARE OFF THE CHARTS!!

ZU (RUMBLE) ズ ズ

ズ ズ ズ ズ…

……!

THE GATE WON'T HOLD ANY LONGER!

"GOD" IS GONNA BREAK THROUGH!

BUT THERE'S SOME DISTANCE BETWEEN FUJI AND THE COIL FACILITY.

WE'VE ALREADY REACHED THIS POINT...!

MEKI MEKI

MEKI (CRACK)

YOU MUST ERADICATE THOSE UNDER-LINGS...!!!

LISTEN UP, HIIRAGI!

EVEN IF THAT THING MAKES A BEELINE FOR IT, WE'VE GOT A BIT OF TIME.

SOUNDS LIKE DESTRUCTION...

BAN (BAM)

AND YOU MUST ACTIVATE THE COIL!

LURE "GOD" THERE AND TURN IT INTO PHYSICAL MATTER !!!

THEN WE CAN DROP A NUKE ON IT!!!

POTA (DRIP)

TA

Subject 48: "Day of Destruction"
Place: Tokyo

ALL OUR CAREFUL PLANS ARE FALLING TO PIECES.

THE SOUND OF DESTRUC-TION...

KOKUDO! BENKEI !!!

YOU GOTTA BE KIDDING ME!?

THEY'RE DEAD...!?

AHH-HA-HA-HA.

WEAK!

TOO WEAK. WAS THAT ALL YOU HAD, TEN HANDS?

DOSHA (THUD)

HAH.

AS A MEMBER OF THE SECURITY COUNCIL MYSELF, I WAS NATURALLY CURIOUS ABOUT HOW STRONG OTHER ORGANIZATIONS WERE.

BUT THIS IS ALL THE ORDER WHO WISHED TO BE "STRONGEST" COULD MUSTER...?

BICHA (SPLAT)

I'M SHOCKED!

HIIRAGI !!!

BAN (BAM)

CHECK THE MONITOR. BENKEI AND KOKUDO, THEY'RE...!

I DON'T THINK AYAHITO AND LAURYN CAN PROTECT THE POWER SUPPLY ON THEIR OWN!

TELL THEM TO GET OUTTA THERE!

NO!

KATA... (CLAK)

KATA

KATA

KATA

I ENTRUSTED THE POWER SUPPLY TO THOSE FOUR.

I HAVE TO BELIEVE THEY CAN DEFEAT THE ENEMY!

WHATEVER SACRIFICE MAY BE NECESSARY...

WHA—?

ZAN (SLASH)

HA HA HA.

ACK...

NOW I JUST HAVE TO DESTROY THAT DEVICE!

WEAK, SO WEAK!!

THERE'S NO WAY I'D SACRIFICE MY FRIENDS IF I WERE IN YOUR SHOES!

BA (BAM)

ARE YOU GOING CRAZY, HIIRAGI!?

EVEN AYAHITO NOW...!!

Coil preparation at 97%. Three minutes until activation.

HUH .....

DON'T INTER-FERE, EIJI!

GASHI (GRAB)

I KNEW YOU WERE HOPELESS. ALWAYS LETTING YOUR EMOTIONS RULE AND LOSING SIGHT OF WHAT'S AT STAKE!

YOU...

SO STOP PANICKING, EIJI.

IF YOU DON'T PROTECT THIS PLACE NOW...

...THEIR DEATHS WILL BE MEANING-LESS!

GARA (RUMBLE)

MEANING-LESS...

RIGHT NOW, THE PRIORITY ISN'T THEIR LIVES.

IT'S THE WORLD!

!!!

DID YOU SAY...

...
"STRON-GEST"
...!!?

GASHI! (GRIP)

!!?

!

ORDER !!!

BATTLE OFF!!!

DON (BAM)

"BATTLE OFF"

ANOTHER MODE OF BENKEI'S ABILITY. FORMS THE ULTIMATE, IMPREGNABLE DEFENSE.

BENKEI !!?

DOSU

DOSU

LET ME SHOW YOU, BOY!

DOSU

DOSU (PIERCE)

TCH. WHY WON'T YOU JUST DIE!!?

GU (STRAIN)

!?

GU
GU
GU
BEING THE STRONGEST...
...MEANS RISKING ONE'S LIFE TO PROTECT ONE'S FRIENDS !!!!!!
I-I CAN'T PULL THEM OUT!?
HE TOOK THE DOLL'S BLADE ATTACKS ON PURPOSE TO PIN ME DOWN...!?
CAPTAIN LAURYN...!
HE'S MAKING THE LOGS I CUT UP... FLOAT IN THE AIR!?
HE'S REROUTED ALL OF HIS ABILITY'S ENERGY TO "DEFENSE" ...!!
HIIRAGI!
EIJI.

(WHOOSH)

YOU MEAN TO CRUSH US ALL?

NO— STOP!

I BELIEVE THAT YOU TWO CAN DEFEND THIS WORLD.

I'M ONLY SORRY I COULDN'T SEE IT THROUGH TO THE END...

THE REST IS UP TO YOU!

NO!

DO

DO

DO

GIRO (GLARE)

DON'T PRETEND YOU'RE BLAME-LESS HERE!

THE ONE WHO KILLED BENKEI WAS YOUR SISTER, SENA HOSHIMIYA!

WHY'S ...

...IT GOTTA BE LIKE THIS?

BAN (SLAM)

DO (POW)

100%!

Coil primed.

System: all clear!

GIRI (GRIND)

ギ…

I TOLD YOU, HIIRAGI— I'M GONNA MAKE UP FOR MY SISTER'S FAILINGS!

AS LONG AS YOU'RE DOING IT FOR HER, I JUST CAN'T TRUST YOU!

GU (STRAIN)

ヴヴ…

GU

RIGHT...

!

MY SPARE.

CHA (CHAK)

ガ

...WE SHOULD BE ABLE TO BRING DOWN ALFRED BELL.

GARA (SLIDE)

WE'VE GOT THE ADVANTAGE, SO ONCE WE GATHER OUR REMAINING FIGHTERS ...

NOPE. NO EXCUSES.

LET'S HOPE YOU FEEL THE SAME WAY ABOUT YOUR SISTER.

I THOUGHT I WASN'T ONE OF YOUR "FIGHTERS"?

IF YOU MAKE SOME EXCUSE ABOUT ALFRED BEING OUTSIDE YOUR TERRITORY...

...YOU'VE NO RIGHT TO MOURN BENKEI AND THE OTHERS.

SENA.....

BUT THAT'S NO EXCUSE FOR TRYING TO SLAUGHTER EVERYONE!

I GET IT. SHE'S LIKE A DIFFERENT PERSON ENTIRELY.

TEN WHOLE YEARS' WORTH OF MEMORIES WERE OVER-WRITTEN.

This is the U.N.! Fuji's crater is crumbling!

IF THAT'S REALLY HER GOAL, THEN...

GO GO GO

GO (RUMBLE)

GO

GO

ZAWA (CHATTER)

THAT'S...

...

"GOD"...!

BUT NOT SOMETHING HUMANITY NEEDS!

TRUE... DIVINITY.

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA

HOW DIVINE...

S-SEC-RETARY GENERAL ...

BASED ON "GOD"'S MOVE-MENTS...

HMM?

LUCKILY, THOUGH... HA-HA.

THEIR SNEAK ATTACK FAILED, AND THE COIL IS READY TO ACTIVATE!

WE HAVE NOTHING TO FEAR ANYMORE!

DAN (STOMP)

ZU (TENSE)
ZU
ZU
ZU
GU (PRESS)
GU
WHAT THE...?
IT'S CROUCHING ...!?
NO.
PLEASE, NO...

WHAT THE HELL !!?

!? !? !?

THIS AURA ...

!

GOO (ZOOM)

ヴォォ

IT'S JUMP-ING !!! !!! !!!

DON (BAM)

DAAN
ISLAND

DO (RUMBLE)

KI

DO

KI

DO

KI

DO

KI

The beast... it leaped straight to your location ...!

Faster than any of us expected!

WH-WHAT THE—!?

THIS WEIGHT ...!!

GU (STRAIN)

GU

Hiiragi !!!

Activate the coil at once!!!!

DOES THAT MEAN...

...SENA IS HERE NOW!?

THIS ONE..... IS FOR OUR FRIENDS WHO GAVE THEIR LIVES!!!

BARI

BARI

BARI (CRACKLE)

TRANSFORM THE TARGET ENERGY!!!

BARI

BARI

BARI

KA (FLASH)

EAT THIS !!! !!!

GOPO (BLUB)

WE'LL MAKE IT IN TIME!

ACTI-VATE THE COIL !!!

DESIRE ACCESSIBLE INFOR-MATION SYSTEM!

THIS IS HUMAN-ITY...

IT'S PHYS-ICAL NOW !!!

PAKI

PAKI

PAKI (CRACK)

PAKI

...STRIK-ING BACK !!!

THE MISSILE'S ABOUT TO HIT...!

DON (FWOOSH)

BA (TURN)

SECRETARY GENERAL HAKIM, WE HAVEN'T RUN SAFETY CHECKS ON THE NUKE JUST YET ...!

NO TIME FOR THAT! SAFETY OVER-RIDE!

TIME ...

...TO LAUNCH!

GASHA (SMASH)

GASHI!
(GRAB)

PAKI
(CRACK)

PAKI

PAKI

PAKI

OOOO (WHOOSH)

WHA—
.....

.....

BAKUN
(GULP)

DON
(FWUMP)

URP.

SHE STOPPED IT...!!?

SHE
ooo

H—

HUMANITY'S LAST HOPE...

ZO (SHUDDER)

IT...

IT ATE IT...

UH...

FURA (SWAY)

OOOO (WHOOSH)

GO (FWOOM)

UWAHHH!

AHHH!!!

DO
(SLAM)

DOGGOO
(SMASH)

!!!

"GOD"'S PHYSICAL HAND PUNCHED RIGHT INTO THE EARTH ...!?

IT'S COMING THIS WAY!

OO

ALWAYS THE SAME WITH YOU PEOPLE ...

OOO (WHOOSH)

OOOOO

YOU STRUGGLE...

...AND END UP HURTING ALL THE WORSE FOR IT.

...IT'S YOU.

EIJI, SHOOT HER!!!

GARA (CRUMBLE)

ガラ..

GUH.

TCH.

(WHOOSH)

SENA...

GOOD EFFORT, BIG BROTHER...

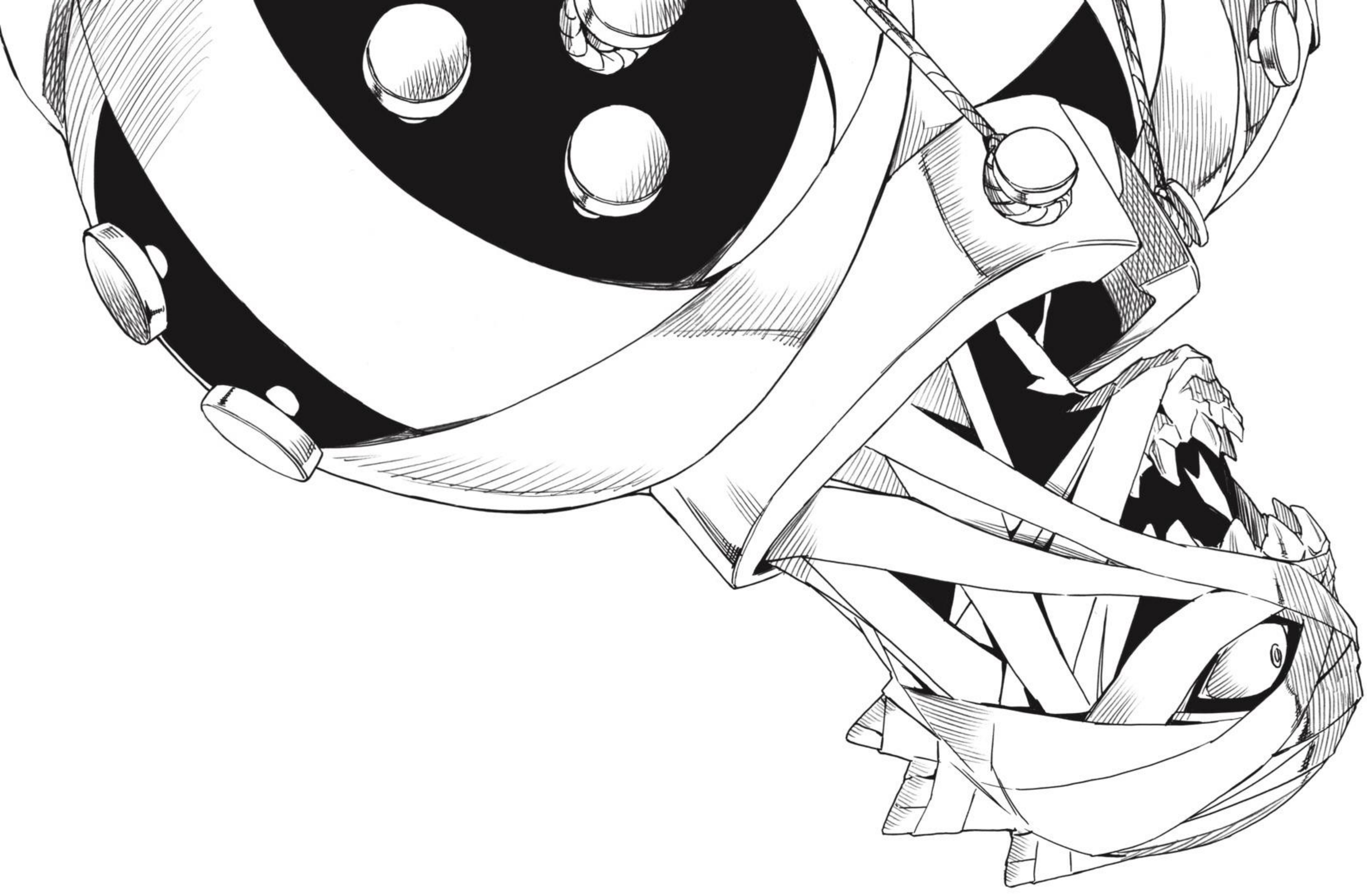
...BUT THIS IS THE END!

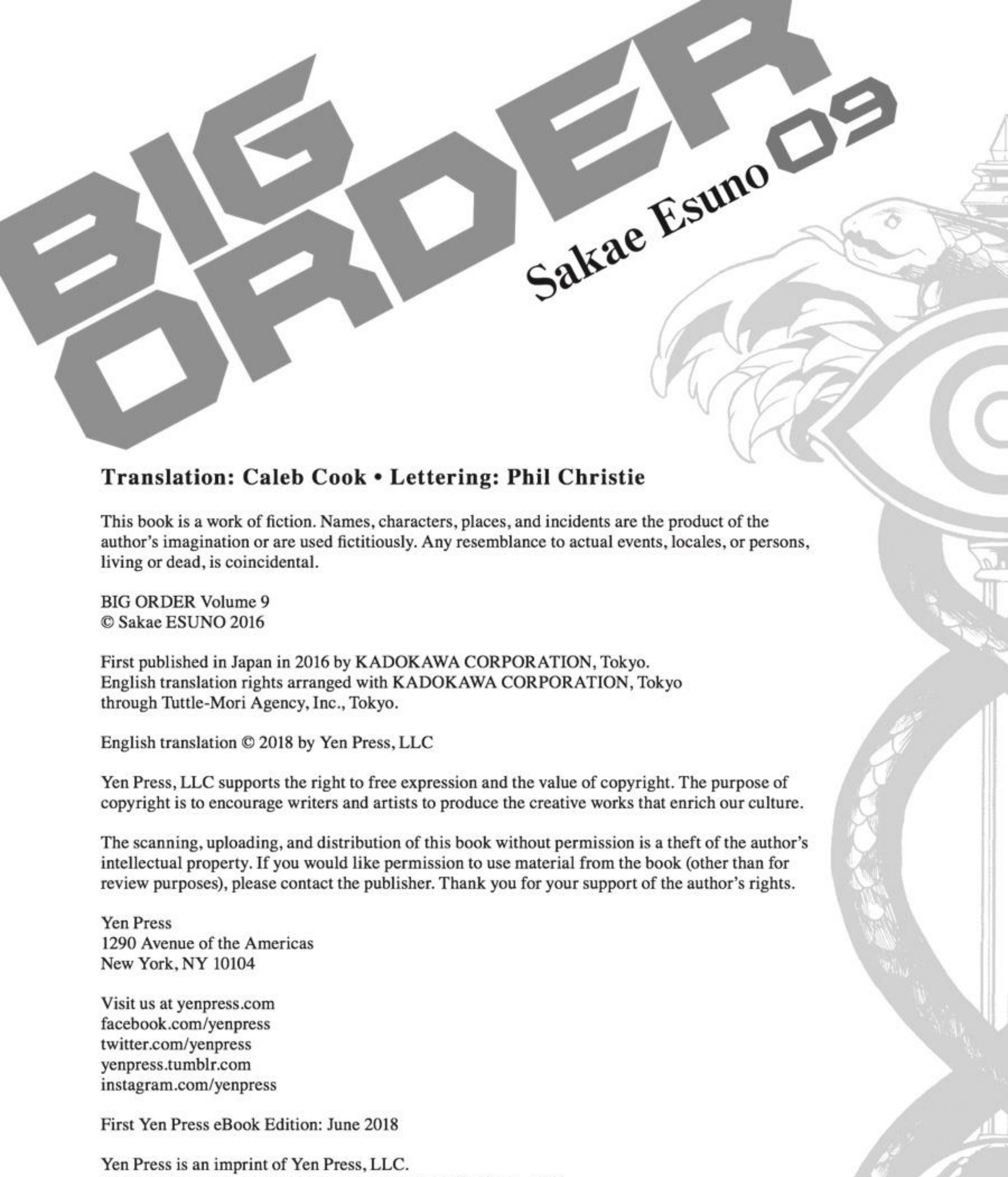
TSU (DRIP)

!...

Subject 48 : END

BIG
ORDER





Translation: Caleb Cook • Lettering: Phil Christie

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, or persons, living or dead, is coincidental.

BIG ORDER Volume 9
© Sakae ESUNO 2016

First published in Japan in 2016 by KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged with KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo
through Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., Tokyo.

English translation © 2018 by Yen Press, LLC

Yen Press, LLC supports the right to free expression and the value of copyright. The purpose of copyright is to encourage writers and artists to produce the creative works that enrich our culture.

The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book without permission is a theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like permission to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), please contact the publisher. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Yen Press
1290 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10104

Visit us at yenpress.com
facebook.com/yenpress
twitter.com/yenpress
yenpress.tumblr.com
instagram.com/yenpress

First Yen Press eBook Edition: June 2018

Yen Press is an imprint of Yen Press, LLC.
The Yen Press name and logo are trademarks of Yen Press, LLC.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

Library of Congress Control Number: 2016958579

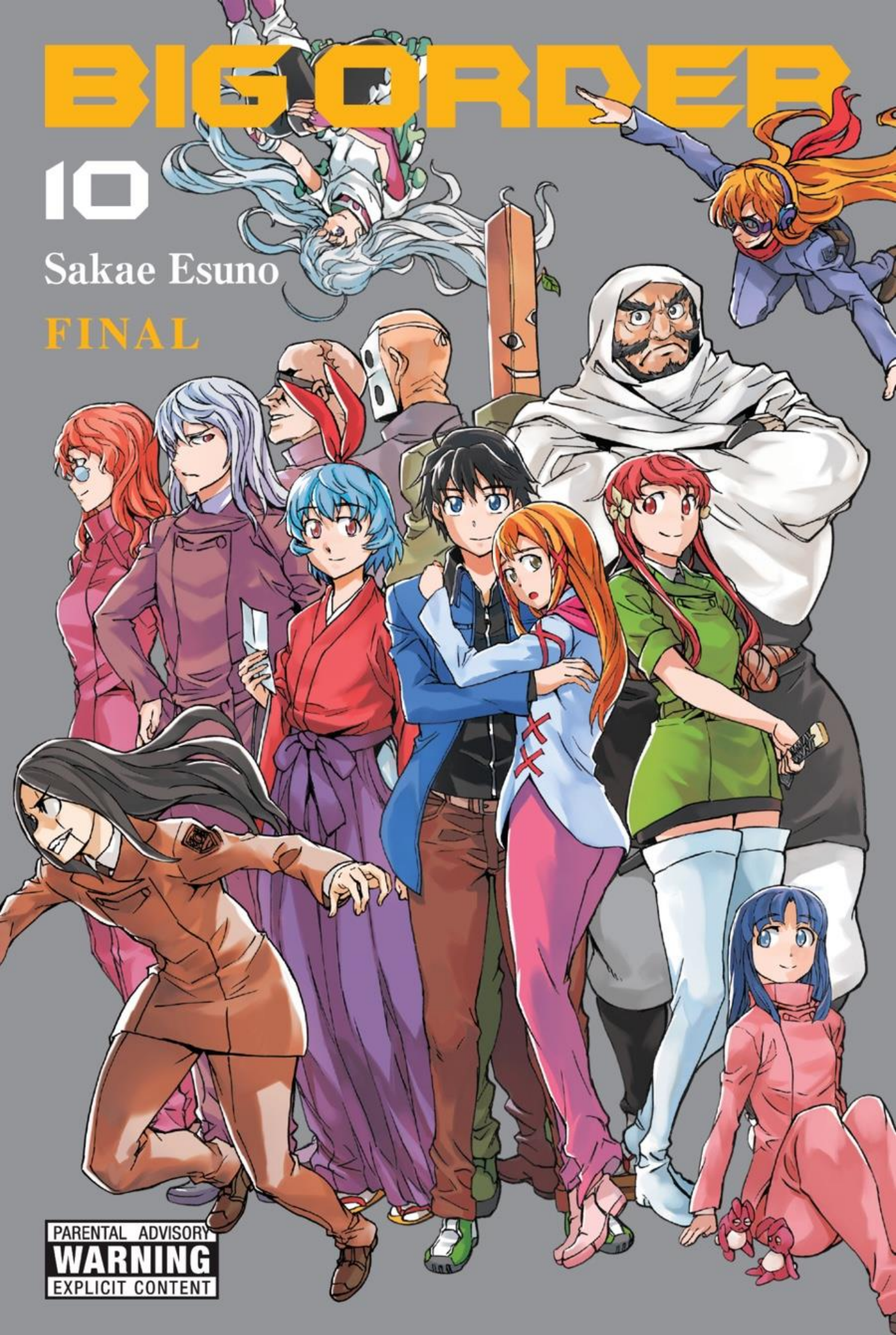
ISBN: 978-1-9753-5419-0 (ebook)

BIG ORDER

10

Sakae Esuno

FINAL



Subject 49

DO ドドド

Subject 49: "Beyond the End"
Place: Tokyo

BIG ORDER



BIG ORDER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

001 **Subject 49: “Beyond the End”**
Place: Tokyo

033 **Subject 50: “At the Heart of Lies and Atonement”**
Place: Pacific Ocean

065 **Subject 51: “Dominator Zero”**
Place: Pacific Ocean

102 **Subject 52: “Wish”**
Place: Pacific Ocean

137 **Subject 53: “Hero”**
Place: Earth

179 **Epilogue: “All the Best, Everyone”**
Place: Amakusa

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

...SHOOT HER!!!

EIJI...

WH-WHY'RE YOU HERE, SENA!?

CHA (CHAK)

NO.....

GARA (CRUMBLE)

ガ...

EIJI!

THIS IS MY LAST CHANCE NOW THAT SHE'S STOPPED THE MISSILE!

THE WORLD WILL BE DOOMED IF I DON'T BEAT SENA NOW!

ANYWAY, I'VE COME HERE TO RETRIEVE SOME-THING THAT BELONGS TO ME...

#MAE。

...WHAT COULD YOU BE PLANNING TO DO WITH THAT GUN?

GUI (RUB)

YOU'RE NOT CAPABLE OF IT, SO KNOCK IT OFF, BIG BROTHER.

ZU (CREEP)

ZU

DON (BAM)

THAT "BIND DOMINA-TOR"!

!?

SO I'LL BE TAKING THAT BOTHERSOME ABILITY BACK NOW!

WITH THE WORLD ABOUT TO END...

...THAT POWER MIGHT RUN RAMPANT AGAIN LIKE IT DID TEN YEARS AGO...

...AND I CAN'T HAVE THAT.

GU (STRAIN)

GU

SHE WANTS THIS...? SHE'S GONNA STEAL DOMINATOR FROM ME!

ZU ZU

.....!

NOT WHEN YOU'RE CRAZY LIKE THIS!

I WON'T LET YOU MAKE THINGS WORSE!!

BAN (BAM)

I'LL NEVER ...

...GIVE IT TO YOU!

WERE YOU JUST PRETEND-ING TO COVER FOR ME ALL THIS TIME!?

UGH...

CHA (CHAK)

DO YOU ADMIT IT WAS ALL A LIE!?

AH-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA-HA.

WHAT A BRAVE FACE YOU'RE PUTTING ON!

AH-HA-HA.

BUT YOU WON'T REALLY SHOOT ME, BIG BROTHER !!

NOT IN A MILLION YEARS ...!

IF YOU'RE GONNA SHOOT ME, THEN DO IT!

I HAVE TO KILL SENA!

I HAVE TO SHOOT HER...!

GOHO (COUGH)

I HAVE TO...

I HAVE TO...

BIG BROTHER!

OOO (WOOO)

OOO SHOOT SENA...!

LET'S GO HOME TO AMAKUSA...

CHA (CHAK)

...SENA.

PITA (HALT)

DA (DASH)

WHERE'S THIS COMING FROM ...?

.....HUH?

THERE'S STILL A WAY TO TAKE IT ALL BACK, SENA!

EVEN IF YOU CAN'T, I'LL FIGURE SOME-THING OUT!

YOU CAN STILL... MAKE ALL THIS RIGHT.

SOME-THING'S ...

... STRANGE.

BA (FWIP)

EIJI!

ENOUGH WITH THE NAIVE CRAP ...!

WAIT, RIN!

YEAH, I GOT THAT...

...AND I KNOW I SHOULD KILL YOU.

...THIS ISN'T ABOUT WHAT'S LOGI-CAL.

BUT ...

GASHI (GRAB)

ガシ

ARE YOU THAT BIG OF AN IDIOT!?

YOU SERI-OUSLY STILL DON'T GET IT...!?

I'M NOT THE SENA HOSHIMIYA YOU THINK YOU KNOW!

IF YOU PROTECT ME NOW .....

...THEN IT WON'T BE FAKE THIS TIME.

YOU'LL BE TRULY EVIL!

FOR YOU...

...I'LL BECOME EVIL ITSELF!

HMPH.

AH HA HA HA HA HA HA HA.

YORO (SWAY) ヨロ…

I SAY I'M A DIFFERENT PERSON, AND STILL YOU PROTECT ME...

YOU ...

YORO ヨロ..

YOU'RE SICK IN THE HEAD...!

TA (TMP) タッ

ヨロ〃

!

UGH.....

TEARS ...!?

COME WITH ME, SENA.

I'LL STAY BY YOUR SIDE FOR HOWEVER LONG YOU'VE GOT LEFT!

BA (REACH)

KA (FLASH)

NO WAY AM I COMING WITH YOU!!!

I GUESS I CAN'T STOP SENA AFTER ALL...!

SHIT. IT DIDN'T WORK...

SENAAAA !!!

DON (BANG)

THIS IS WHO I AM!!!

DOZZAAA (SPLASH)

JUST ...

...SHUT UUU... UP!!!

KIN
(PLINK)

TCH.

.....

I DIDN'T MEAN TO DEFEND .....

!

THAT RING ...!?

ZA

EIJI!

RIN!

IYO !!!

ZAAAAA (SPLASH)

AHHHHH!!!

DAMN.

LOSING IYO...!

CAN'T REACH HER...!

ARGHH!

DAMMIT !!!

ドドド

BICHA (SPLAT)

ZA (STEP)

WE'RE DONE, EIJI.

WE CAN'T GO BACK THERE!

SH-SHIT.

IYO, SHE'S ...

DO DO DO DO DO DO DO DO DO

THIS WAY, EIJI!

I COULDN'T CONVINCE SENA...!

OR KILL HER...!

HFF. HFF. HFF.

THE WHOLE CITY.....

GOOOOO (FWOOM)

BA (TURN)

YOU GET AHOLD OF IYO, RIN?

AH.

DAISY'S WHOLE SYSTEM MUST BE DOWN...

CAN'T CONNECT TO ANYONE AT ALL.

ZA (KZZT)

ZA

NO CONNEC-TION...

NOT TO HIIRAGI EITHER.

YORO (SWAY)

ヨロ...

IT'S MY FAULT.

ZA (STEP)

WHAT ABOUT YOUR AVATAR, EIJI...?

IT LOOKS UNHARMED.

...I WAS SELFISH AND TRIED TO CONVINCE HER INSTEAD.

THAT WAS OUR LAST CHANCE TO BEAT SENA, BUT I...

DO (RUMBLE)

DO

DO

DO

THE CITY'S ...

...BEEN SWALLOWED UP.

DO

IT'S...

...MY FAULT...

THE PULSE LINES EXPANDED AS THEY CONSUMED ALL.

GO

GO

GO

GO

GO

GO (RUMBLE)

TOKYO

GO (RUMBLE) ゴゴ GO

GO ゴゴ GO

PEOPLE AND CITIES ACROSS THE WORLD...

...WERE SWALLOWED WHOLE.

NEW YORK

U.N. HEADQUARTERS

GOOOO ゴオオオ

PARIS

GO GO GO GO ゴゴゴ

LONDON

GO ゴゴ

SYDNEY

ZUOOOO (FWOOM)

IT'S THE END...

...OF THE WORLD...

GO (RUMBLE) ゴゴゴ

GO ゴゴゴ

GO ゴゴゴ...

TWO DAYS LATER

DO (RUMBLE)
DO
DO
DO

This is a crisis situation! The world continues to be engulfed!

All we can do is wait for death...

UWAAAH!

DO

Inter-national organi-zations worldwide have suspended operations.

DON (POW)

!?

YOU WANNA DIE THAT BADLY!?

HMPH.

QUIT SPACING OUT ALREADY, EIJI!

GRAB THAT CABLE OVER THERE!

HUP.

R-RIN!?

HUH !?

YOU...

BIRI (TINGLE)

BIRI

DORURURUN (VROOM)

ITS POWER SOURCE IS BUSTED, BUT IF WE USE THIS THING...

A GENERATOR ...? WHAT'RE YOU TRYING TO DO, RIN?

LOOK. SEE WHAT'S RIGHT OUTSIDE THAT WINDOW?

THAT ANTENNA LOOKS USABLE.

CHA (CLICK)

OKAY. THIS WAY, EIJI.

GABIII (BZZZZT)

ガビー…

IF WE CAN REACH OUR FRIENDS, WE'VE STILL GOT A FIGHTING CHANCE!

GA (KZZT)

ガ"ガ"…

NICE. WE'VE GOT A SIGNAL …!

BA (BAM)

ガビ

WH- WHAT'RE YOU SAYING, RIN?

LOOK AROUND US. YOU THINK THERE'S ANY HOPE OF WINNING …!?

AND EVEN IF I'M ALONE, I SAY BRING IT ON!!

I'M JUST NOT THE TYPE TO CURL UP, CRY, AND WAIT TO DIE!

SO GIVE IT ONE LAST PUNCH, EIJI!

RIGHT UPSIDE SENA'S STUPID HEAD!

BAN (BAM)

Subject 49: END

BAN

HUUH ...!?

YOU DON'T WANNA FIND SENA...?

WHADDAYA MEAN, EIJI?

WHAT DO I MEAN ...!?

JUST LOOK, RIN!!

CHA (CLICK)

GO

GO

NO MATTER WHERE WE GO...

...THERE'S NO ONE LEFT TO HELP US!!!

GO

GO

GO

'COS I COULDN'T KILL HER.

THAT'S WHY WE'RE IN THIS DEEP!

IT'S ALL 'COS I COULDN'T STOP SENA...

EIJI...

ZA (STEP)

HA HA HA HA HA...

HAH...

I GOT CARRIED AWAY AND TRIED TO CONVINCE SENA INSTEAD OF KILLING HER...

HE KNEW IT.

HIIRAGI WAS RIGHT, WASN'T HE?

COME ON.....

...GET UP!

OR IS YOUR PLAN TO JUST SIT HERE AND DIE!?!?

GUI (TUG)

OF COURSE A BROTHER WOULD HESITATE TO SHOOT HIS SISTER.

THAT'S ONLY NATURAL.

DOSA (THUD)

BUT THAT'S THE PROBLEM!

GA (GRAB)

AND IF ANY OF THE OTHERS ARE ALIVE...

...THEY CAN HELP US COME UP WITH SOME IDEAS.

IF THERE'S A WAY...WE'LL FIND IT!

GU (STRAIN) GU

GUGU...

IT'S TOTALLY HOPE-LESS.

IYO...!

YOU WATCHED IYO GET SUCKED INTO THE PULSE LINE, RIGHT!?

IF YOU DON'T SAVE HER, WHO THE HELL WILL!?

WHO ON EARTH WOULD HELP ME AT THIS POINT!?

IT'S NO USE...

JUST LOOK AT THE WHAT THE WORLD'S BECOME.

IT'S OVER...

EVEN IF WE REACHED SENA, I'D JUST DO THE SAME THING ALL OVER AGAIN.

BA (YANK)

.....

NO ONE...

ZA (STEP)

...

ZA ZA ZA

!

NOBODY WILL EVER FORGIVE ME AND MY SISTER !!!!!!

NO ONE...

NO ONE...

NO ONE...

NO ONE ...!!

(WHOOSH)

I...

...
FORGIVE
YOU!

I FORGIVE YOU!

SENA TOO!

I FORGIVE YOU BOTH!

WHA—!?

.....

THIS WHOLE MESS...

...AND TEN YEARS AGO TOO— BOTH TIMES WERE JUST ACCIDENTS!

SHE DOES .....!?

YOU FORGIVE ME...?

YOU AND SENA WERE VICTIMS, EIJI.

I WAS SURE YOU WERE TO BLAME FOR PAPA'S AND MAMA'S DEATHS, SO I CAME AFTER YOU...

...BUT I WAS WRONG.

JIRI (INCH)

...YOU SAYING, RIN?

WHAT ARE .....

BA (BAM)

AN ACCIDENT...? HOW CAN YOU POSSIBLY ACCEPT THAT!?

YOUR PARENTS ARE DEAD...!!

IT'S TOO LATE ...!!

THERE'S NO WAY...!!

I FORGIVE YOU.

.....

IT'S TOO LATE ...

ZA (SWIRL)

ZA

ZA...

ZA (SWIRL)

...HOW COULD SHE FORGIVE US THAT EASILY ...?

EVEN THOUGH RIN KNOWS THE TRUTH...

O (WHOOSH)

HUH !?

FUWA (FLOAT)

!

HOW COULD SHE POSSIBLY ...?

SENA AND I HAVE BEEN LIVING OUR LIVES AWAY FROM THE WORLD FOR TEN YEARS.

GO (RUMBLE)

GO

GO

GO

GO

GO

HEY, YOU TWO. GLAD TO SEE YOU'RE SAFE.

WHA...!?

THE COLONEL AND THE U.N. HAVE BUSINESS WITH YOU, EIJI-SAMA!

<YEAH>! RIN'S MESSAGE GOT THROUGH.

LAURYN ...!?

YOU'RE ALIVE...!

LAURYN, I-I...

HIIRAGI ...?

IT'S JUST LIKE THAT ARK THAT SAVED HUMANITY IN THE OLD TESTAMENT.

THIS NUCLEAR-POWERED AIRCRAFT CARRIER—THE "ENTERPRISE"!

AN AIRCRAFT CARRIER ...!?

SORRY, BUT YOU'VE STILL GOT YOUR LEADING ROLE TO PLAY!

CAN'T HAVE YOU BACKING OUT ON US NOW!

!

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

ZA (SPLASH)
ZA
ooo

TCH...
DOYO ドヨ
IT'S HOSHIMIYA ...!
DOYO ドヨ
DOYO (MUMBLE) ドヨ
IT'S EIJI HOSHIMIYA ...!

NO WAY THEY'RE GONNA PULL A RIN AND SUDDENLY FORGIVE ME.
SHIT...!
KAI
THERE'S NO WAY HIIRAGI DIDN'T TELL THE U.N. ALL ABOUT MY STUPENDOUS FAILURE...
PLUS, THESE GUYS ALREADY HAVE AN ACTUAL GRUDGE AGAINST ME...!
KA (STEP)

ZAWA
ZAWA
ZAWA
ZAWA (CHATTER)
I'M PROBABLY HERE.....
...FOR SENTENCING!
YOU'VE SEEN, BY NOW... THE STATE OF THE WORLD.
KI (GLARE)
YOU'VE COME, EIJI HOSHIMIYA.
LOOKS LIKE...
...THIS IS THE END FOR ME...
TCH.
SORRY, RIN.....

SAVE THE WORLD!

I IMPLORE YOU, EIJI HOSHIMIYA.

HIIRAGI'S PLAN TO USE THE COIL FAILED.....

IF ONLY WE'D WORKED WITH YOU FROM THE BEGINNING, THINGS MIGHT HAVE TURNED OUT DIFFERENTLY...

YES, WE'RE COMING TO YOU NOW BECAUSE WE'RE OUT OF OPTIONS, BUT BE THAT AS IT MAY!

!!?

H—

HOLD ON...

WHAT'S THIS ABOUT ...!?

ZAWA (CHATTER)

PLEASE!

PLEASE!

EIJI HOSHI-MIYA!

YOU'RE THE ONLY ORDER LEFT WHO CAN OPPOSE SENA HOSHIMIYA AND HER "GOD."

BAN (BAM)

YOU MUST SAVE HUMAN-ITY...!

I WAS SURE THEY'D PUT ALL THE BLAME ON ME...!?

WHAT'S GOING ON HERE...!?

SU (STEP)

I IMPLORE YOU AS WELL.

HIIRAGI ...!?

I DECIDED NOT TO TELL EVERYONE ABOUT YOUR FAILURE TO KILL SENA.

DOING SO WOULD ONLY MAKE THE SITUATION WORSE, AND STOPPING SENA TAKES PRIORITY NOW.

GOON (FWOOM)

GOON ゴォン

GOON ゴォン

WHAT'S HAP-PENING, HIIRAGI ...!?

I DON'T HAVE VETO POWER HERE.

BUT.....I'LL PROBABLY JUST FAIL AGAIN.

YOU'RE THE ONE WHO SAID I COULDN'T DO IT TO START WITH...

YOU WILL BE THE ONE TO SETTLE THINGS.

GATA ガタ

GATA (CLAK) ガタ

COLONEL... SHOULD I PLACE THE PROJECTOR HERE?

!

NENE... AND RAIDOU!

...WHAT'S ALL THIS FOR?

THOSE TWO...HAVE KEPT THE ENTERPRISE SAFE THIS WHOLE TIME.

AYAHITO ...!

EIJI.

I'M GOING TO KEEP ASKING THE IMPOSSIBLE OF YOU.

TO (TAP) トン

GENNAI DEVELOPED THE DEVICE UNDER THE CODE NAME "LAUREL WREATH."

SHOULD WE MANAGE TO DESTROY IT, "GOD" WILL TURN INTO A LIFELESS DOLL AND NO LONGER RESPOND TO SENA'S COMMANDS.

.....!

THAT RING .....!?

PA (FLASH)

Top Secret

THE THING THAT DELIVERS SENA HOSHIMIYA'S WISHES TO "GOD" AT HIGH SPEED.

THE "DIFFUSION READER"!

LUCKILY, THAT SINGLE SHOT YOU FIRED OFF...

...REVEALED A CLUE AS TO "GOD"'S WEAK POINT.

WEAK POINT...!?

RIGHT.

BUT THIS IS OUR LAST SHOT.

IF IT FAILS, YOU HAVE TO KILL SENA!

SO...

WE CAN END IT WITHOUT KILLING SENA?

EIJI...!

IT'S WORTH TAKING THIS GAMBLE IF THERE'S EVEN A CHANCE!

IS THAT IT?

DAMN...

BAN (SLAM)

I UNDERSTAND YOU'RE SCARED, BUT IN THE END, YOU DID FAIL.

JUST AS I PREDICTED ...

EIJI... WHY MUST I CONTINUE TO RELY ON YOU, OF ALL PEOPLE!?

WHY IS IT ALWAYS YOU?

HOW MANY TIMES WILL THIS WORLD BE DECEIVED BY THE HOSHIMIYA BLOODLINE ...?

DO (CRASH)

TEN YEARS AGO, YOU SHOULD HAVE ABANDONED SENA TO HER FATE.

BUT YOU WERE A CHILD, SO YOU CONCOCTED AN ABSURD LIE!

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO (RUMBLE)

BACK THEN...

...I DIDN'T HAVE A CHOICE!

WHICH IS WHY...

...YOU SHOULD FIX THIS MESS WITH A BETTER LIE!

THAT'S WHY YOU HID MY FAILURE AND WANT ME TO FACE SENA AGAIN ...!?!?

I JUST CAN'T...!

I CAN'T DO IT!!!

DO

!

STOP BEING A CHILD!

EIJI HOSHI-MIYA!

I'M...!

EIJI!!!!

GO (FWOOM)

(WHOOSH)

KA-

I'M...!

Subject 50:END

DO
DO
DO
TCH...
DO
(RUMBLE)
DO
DO
DO
DO
DO
DO
DO
EIJIII!!! YOU GOTTA DO SOME-THING!!!
THE PULSE LINES MADE IT THIS FAR...!
DO
DO
DO
.....
WE CAN'T LET IT END LIKE THIS WITHOUT EVEN FIGHTING BACK!

DO (RUMBLE)

EIJI!

DO

EIJI!

EIJI-SAMA!

HA HA.

AH HA HA...

DO DO DO DO

I WAS LOOKING SENA RIGHT IN THE EYE, AND I STILL COULDN'T ACT.

IN THAT MOMENT, I REALIZED THAT.

THEY'RE ASKING TOO MUCH...!

GIMME A BREAK...!

I JUST GOTTA DESTROY THAT RING...?

TCH.

WHAT HAP-PENED TO EIJI HOSHI-MIYA?

DO DO DO DO DO

SECRETARY GENERAL!! EVACUATE TO A HIGHER LEVEL!

...NO RIGHT TO FACE SENA ANYMORE...

I'VE GOT...

!

PAAA (SHINE)

EIJI!

IS THAT REALLY TRUE...

...EIJI?

Subject 51: “Dominator Zero”
Place: Pacific Ocean

DAISY!?

TARGET RETRIEVED.

GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO (RUMBLE)

...AND WE'VE JUST ABSORBED THE FINAL ELEMENT OF THE RESISTANCE.

MOST OF THE SURFACE IS SUPPRESSED ...

...
SENA-SAMA.

IT'S CHECKMATE ...

OOOO (WHOOSH)

LIVE
INSIDE GOD

UNTIL THEN, I CAN'T CLAIM TO CONTROL THIS WORLD.

NOT UNTIL I TAKE THE KING...

...AND STEAL HIS "DOMINATOR" ...!

NOT JUST YET, HATORI.

LIVE
INSIDE GOD

(WHOOSH)

SO VERY THOROUGH.

HMPH.

THAT'S RIGHT!

BUT SENA-SAMA, WE HAVE YET TO ...

OW. OW.

AH. THAT MAKES MY OLD WOUND STING, SO I'LL KINDLY ASK YOU TO KEEP IT DOWN...

...FIRST LIEU-TENANT IYO.

EIJI-SAMA HASN'T LOST JUST YET!

AND I KNOW... HE'LL BEAT YOU PEOPLE!

HEH HEH.

WE TOOK YOU AS A HOSTAGE JUST IN CASE, BUT...

...YOU MAY NOT BE NEEDED AFTER ALL!

THEN IT WILL ABSOLUTELY BE <GAME OVER>!

HEE HAH.

ALL THAT'S LEFT TO DO IS RETRIEVE THE DROWNED EIJI HOSHI-MIYA!

.....
.....!

HOW KIND OF HER TO LET ME ENJOY IT LIKE THIS.

THE WORLD'S DESTRUC-TION... SHE'S THE ULTIMATE SADIST!

ZU (SINK) ズ ズ..

I NEED TO REST... YOU HANDLE EVERY-THING ELSE, HATORI.

UNDER-STOOD.

!

SENA HOSHI-MIYA!

...REALLY TRYING TO ACHIEVE ...!?

WHAT ARE YOU.....

PIKU (TWITCH)

ZU (SINK) ZU ZU

ズズズ

I ALWAYS THOUGHT YOUR PROXIMITY TO THE GATE WAS THROWING THINGS OFF, BUT NOW...

ZU

I'VE TRIED TO MAKE PREDICTIONS CONCERNING YOU COUNTLESS TIMES NOW...

...BUT THE RESULTS ARE ALWAYS UNCLEAR ...!

BIRI (TINGLE)

BIRI

NOW THAT I'M HERE, I UNDER-STAND!

YOU'RE... HIDING SOME-THING, AREN'T YOU!!?

ZU

ズ...

GOPO (BLUB)

ゴポ...

CHA (CHAK)

チャ...!

SHEESH... DIDN'T I TELL HER TO PIPE DOWN?

!?

FRAN! ALFRED!

ORDERS FROM SENA-SAMA. MOVE TO RETRIEVE THE TARGET...

THE ENTERPRISE...

...IS AFLOAT!!!

DON (BAM)

!!?

HOW'S IT STILL FLOATING ...!!?

COUGH

COUGH

I NEVER GAVE AN ORDER. DID DOMINATOR ACT ON ITS OWN!?

HOW?

COUGH

ZA (SPLASH)

ZAN

GET OUTSIDE. WE CAN'T STAY IN HERE!

OW ...

IT SEEMS...

...THE LIMITER KEEPING YOU AT A TEN-THOUSANDTH OF YOUR POWER WAS RELEASED.

TCH.

THIS IS UNEX-PECTED!

BA (TURN)

Fran, Alfred— switch over to "Plan B"!

The objective: eliminate Eiji Hoshi-miya!!

DA (DASH)

UNDER-STOOD!

ORDER!

WRONG ...!!!

GO (WHOOSH)

DOGGOOO (KABOOM)

IT'S NOT LIKE I WISHED TO SAVE EVERYONE!

GOOOO (BOOM)

I.....

...DON'T CARE WHAT HAPPENS ANYMORE ...!

BAN (BAM)

FACT TO FICTION!!!

ORDER!!!

BARA (CRUMBLE)

BARA

HIIRAGI ...!?

THIS DEBRIS IS TOO MUCH FOR ME...! I CAN'T NEGATE IT ALL!

GET OUT OF HERE, EIJI!

DO (RUMBLE)

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

BUT YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WHO CAN TURN THINGS AROUND NOW!

IT'S A DISGRACE THAT I'VE GOT TO RELY ON YOU!

!

DON (BAM)

GO!!

BUT...

IF DEATH AND DE-STRUCTION ARE INDEED ALL THAT AWAIT US...

...THEN YOU CAN AT LEAST DIE HAVING BEEN A USEFUL PART OF MY PLAN, EIJI!

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO

H-HIIRAGI !!!

EIJI! THIS WAY!

TA (TMP)

HE SAVED ME...!?

GOOOOO (FWOOM)

DON (SHOVE)

WHA ...!?

WE'LL HOLD DOWN THE FORT HERE!

DAMMIT! JUST GO, EIJI-SAMA! WE'VE STILL GOT RAIDOU AND HIS SLEEPING SHEEP.

DO

DO

DO

DO

DO (RUMBLE)

GO ON, EIJI-SAMA.

YOU'RE MY HERO, Y'KNOW?

OO (WHOOSH)

AYAHITO ...!

OUCH!

GAN (WHAM)

HANG ON! WE'RE GETTING OUTTA HERE, EIJI.

DOSA (FWOOM)

オオオ OOO (WHOOSH)

EVEN THOUGH SENA AND I SUFFERED BECAUSE OF IT...!

GIRI (GRIND) ギリ..

EVEN THOUGH THEY ALL HATED ME AND SENA.

ooo

THEY WENT TOO FAR FOR ME...!

...ARE RIDING ON YOU.

...EVERY-ONE'S HOPES...

...I'VE GOTTA DO SOME-THING ABOUT IT...

THAT'S WHY...

BA (TURN)

EVEN YOU, RIN...!

JUST FORGIVING ME 'COS IT WAS CONVE-NIENT FOR YOU...!

YEAH, BUT EVERYONE'S JUST IN IT FOR THEM-SELVES!!

YOU'RE S'POSED TO TAKE REVENGE ON ME AND SENA!!

I DID HATE YOU.

YOU'RE S'POSED TO HATE US!

NOT FORGIVE US! THERE'S NO WAY!!!

GUH.

HEH HEH.

BEFORE WE MET, I TRIED TO IMAGINE .....

...WHAT SORTA COWARD YOU'D BE.

MAYBE YOU'D BE A GRIM, OLD BASTARD.

BUT THEN...

...YOU TURNED OUT TO BE THIS BUMBLING KID.

...AND HATED!

I HATED YOU.

I HATED AND HATED...

...AND HATED, AND HATED, AND HATED, AND HATED, AND HATED, AND HATED...

AND HATED SOME MORE!

BUT IN THE END, THAT HATE...

...TURNED TO LOVE.

ACK.

DON'T SAY IT!

WHAT-EVER YOU WERE GONNA SAY...!

RI...

LOOKS LIKE WE DON'T HAVE MUCH MORE TIME TO TALK.

ZA (SPLASH)

ZAN

THAT WAS JUST ME TAKING A SHOT IN THE DARK...SO FORGET IT!

ME...

ZABU

...ANYWAY, FORGET ABOUT ME!

THE PROBLEM NOW IS YOU, EIJI!

I MEANT WHAT I SAID ABOUT FORGIVING YOU!

GOT IT.

YOU'VE GOTTA SETTLE THINGS WITH SENA...

...FOR YOUR OWN DAMN SAKE!

GU (TENSE)

LET'S GO, RIN.

NO ONE'S EVER FORGIVEN ME FOR MY CRIMES BEFORE...

OOOOOO (WHOOSH)

THERE IT IS!

THE CORE, I GUESS ...!?

ZA (SPLASH) ZA ZA

SO THIS LITTLE RUBBER LIFE RAFT IS THE LAST PIECE OF TERRITORY YOU'VE GOT TO WORK WITH!!

ZA ZA

THIS OCEAN OF PULSE LINES ISN'T TURNING INTO YOUR TERRITORY!

LOOK, EIJI!

NOT FOR ANYONE ELSE. FOR MYSELF...

YEAH!

YOU GOTTA DESTROY THAT RING, EIJI!

THAT'LL PUT AN END TO ALL OF THIS FOR SURE!

IF I CAN CONTROL SENA...

...THEN DESTROYING THE RING WILL ACTUALLY BE POSSIBLE...

ooo

HATORI ...!?

!

BAN (BAM)

WHOOPS, TOO BAD!

YOU WON'T BE SEEING SENA-SAMA ON MY WATCH!

IN FACT, YOU'RE BOTH GONNA DIE HERE!

TRY TO RESIST, AND IYO DIES FIRST!

IYO...!

YURA (SWAY)

BUT YOU'RE TOO BUSY WORRYING ABOUT THE HOSTAGE TO NOTICE!

THERE'S A FIELD OF SEA MINES DOWN IN THE PULSE LINES!!

ZA ZA ZA ZA (SPLASH)

KU-HA-HA. YOU SHOWING UP HERE WAS WELL WITHIN OUR CALCU-LATIONS.

I HAD ALFRED CHASE YOU RIGHT INTO MY HANDS!

BINGO!!!

DON
(BOOM)

!

(o)

HEH...

HA
HA
HA
HA
HA...

REBIRTH FIRE!!!

ORDER!!!

GOO (FWOOM)

JUOOO (SIZZLE)

THEY USED THE RESTORED PLATING AS A SHIELD...!

METAL PLATING!!?

GOOO (F.WOOSH)

ゴオオ

MOVE IT, HATORI! WE DON'T HAVE TIME TO MESS AROUND WITH YOU!!!

WE SAW RIGHT THROUGH YOUR TIRED OLD TRAP!

GOOD THING WE BROUGHT SOME OF THAT DEBRIS!

I'VE GOT A BAD FEELING ABOUT THIS...!

NO, EIJI-SAMA!

MMGH...

GYUO (ZOOM)

ZU (SLINK)

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

ORDER!!!

...RETRIEVAL COMPLETE!

BUCHIN (WHIP)

DOMINATOR...

I THOUGHT YOU TRUSTED ME TO...

!? SENA-SAMA ...!?

ZU (CLINK)

ZU

ALL ACCORDING TO PLAN.

YOU MADE EXCELLENT BAIT, HATORI.

AND NOW DOMINATOR IS MINE!

GUOOO (F.WOOSH)

KYAHHHHH!?

SE..... GUWAHHHH!?

!!?

DO (PIERCE)

BIND DOMINATOR ZERO!!!

ORDER!

"CONTROL MY BIG BROTHER" !!!

.....

WHA ...!?

Subject 51:END

RIN!

IYO!

SHE STOLE DOMINATOR!?

ZU ZU (KZZT)

SHIT.

FU (FADE)

YOU GUYS! I'LL FIGURE OUT A WAY TO GET TO YOU!

DO

S-SENA-SAMA-AAAAAA!!?!!?

DO (RUMBLE)

DO

DO

DO

KYAAAAAA...

...AAAAAAAAH!!!

DO

Subject 52: "Wish"
Place: Pacific Ocean

GO
GO
GO
GO (RUMBLE)
GO
GO
GO

NOT WITHOUT DOMINATOR...

NO GOOD. I CAN'T SAVE THEM...!

TCH.

BIG BROTHER, STOP HIDING AND COME OUT.

NOW!

SO I'M POWERLESS ...!?

CHA (CHAK)

HOW'M I S'POSED TO DESTROY THE RING NOW?

BACHI (KRAKL)

NOW THAT I'VE STOLEN DOMINATOR BACK, I'VE NO USE FOR YOU!

YOU'RE GOING TO DIE, HERE AND NOW!

CHI

CHI

OOOO (FWOOSH)

!

THE RING...!

GU (STRAIN)

GU

!

MY BODY'S MOVING ON ITS OWN .....!?

SHIT. IT'S SINK OR SWIM...

I'VE GOTTA DESTROY THE RING, NO MATTER WHAT.....

NOW, "POINT THE GUN AT YOUR-SELF"!

GU

WHAT !?

OOO (FWOOSH)

ORDER!

"STOP HIDING AND COME OUT, BIG BROTHER"!

GO (RUMBLE)
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO
GO

THIS IS PERFECT. I'LL JUST HAVE YOU KILL YOURSELF.

NOW, NOW.

YOU WOULDN'T HAPPEN TO BE THINKING, "IF ONLY I COULD DESTROY THAT RING," WOULD YOU?

GU
GU

SHE READ ME PERFECTLY ...!

SENA ...!

YOU'RE SO SWEET, BIG BROTH-ER.

...MAN.

SU (SWF)

I SUPPOSE YOU DON'T CARE A BIT ABOUT ALL THESE PEOPLE?

!?

GO
GO

BUT WHY...!? WHAT'S THE POINT IN KILLING ME!? WHAT'S THE POINT IN DESTROYING THE WORLD!?

IT'S NOT TOO LATE, SO JUST STOP, SENA!

GO
GO
GO

ZAWA

THESE PEOPLE HATED YOU WHEN IT MADE SENSE TO, AND NOW THEY ASK FOR YOUR HELP.

ZAWA

ZAWA

ARE YOU REALLY THEIR FINAL HOPE?

GU (STRAIN)

YOU AND I REALLY SHOULD'VE DIED TEN YEARS AGO BIG BROTHER, GIVEN HOW ROTTEN THIS WORLD IS!

GUH...!

ZAWA

ZAWA

ZAWA

SAVE US...!

ZAWA

SAVE US...

PLEASE SAVE US...

SAVE US...

PLEASE SAVE US...

ZAWA

QUICKLY...

THE WORLD ...

...IS DONE FOR...

QUICKLY ...!

WHATEVER IT TAKES, JUST SAVE US, EIJI HOSHIMIYA...

ZAWA (MOAN)

DON

DON (BLAM)

I'M NOT DOING THIS FOR THE WORLD!

I'M DOING IT FOR YOU!!!

NOT GONNA LET YOU KILL ME...!

DON

DON

YOU EMPTIED THE GUN INTO YOURSELF ...!?

!

GWAHH...

BOTA (DRIP)

BOTA

BOTA

DOBA (GUSH)

YOU'RE JUST BUYING TIME?

ZURU (SLUMP)

ズル..

WHAT'S THE PLAN, BIG BROTHER ...?

USE UP ALL THE AMMO SO I CAN'T MAKE YOU KILL YOUR-SELF...?

THAT WON'T WORK!

MAYBE.

MAYBE I'M JUST... BUYING TIME.

HA-HA ...

BA (FWIP)

ESPECIALLY THAT DAY, TEN YEARS AGO...!

WHY DO YOU ALWAYS, ALWAYS HAVE TO GO SO FAR OVER-BOARD, BIG BROTHER...? WHAT GETS INTO YOUR HEAD?

I HAD TO.

BECAUSE OF BACK THEN...WHEN I DECIDED TO BE YOUR BIG BROTHER!

YOU SHOULD'VE LEFT WELL ENOUGH ALONE!

IF YOU HADN'T PRO-TECTED ME...!

NONE OF THIS WOULD BE HAP-PENING NOW!!

DON'T EVEN HAVE THE STRENGTH ...

...TO THINK...

ZU (SLUMP)

ZU ZU ズズ...

SHIT... LOSING TOO MUCH BLOOD...

TCH...

GOBO (BLUB) ゴボッ

GOBO BO ゴボボ

BO BO BO ボボボ

!

IYO!?

IDIOT. WHY'S SHE SWIMMING TOWARD THE BOTTOM ...?

GOOOOOO (FWOOSH)

THE CURRENT'S TOO STRONG ...!

WITHOUT HIS POWERS, EIJI'S DONE FOR IF I DON'T GET BACK UP THERE SOON...!

...MY RIBBON'S DOWSING IS TELLING ME TO GO DOWN...!?

EIJI-SAMA AND SENA ARE UP TOP, BUT...

!

WHICH MEANS THAT SENA'S SOUL IS MIXED IN HERE SOME-WHERE...

THE PULSE LINE IS A CURRENT OF SPIRIT ENERGY.

AA

AT THE BOTTOM ...?

PAAA (SHINE)

WHAT'S THIS...!?

ZAAAAAA (SWIRL)

IS IT WHAT'S IN SENA'S HEART, INSANE AS SHE IS.....?

NO, THAT'S NOT IT.

IT'S.....

BUT BEYOND THIS LIE SENA'S TRUE INTEN-TIONS ...?

KAAAAA (FLASH)

IT'S ALL ABOUT EIJI-SAMA...!

COULD IT REALLY BE!?

!

OH NO! I HAVE TO GET BACK AND TELL EIJI-SAMA ...!

IF WE DON'T STOP HER, IT'LL BE TOO LATE...!

YOU'RE ...

...STILL ALIVE...

UGH...

GOHO (COUGH)

NOW, THE PEOPLE OF THIS WORLD HAVE BEEN ABSORBED WITHIN THE PULSE LINES...

...AND I'VE TAKEN BACK DOMI-NATOR.

.....I'VE SACRIFICED HATORI, FRAN-SAN, AND SO MANY OTHERS TO MAKE IT THIS FAR.

IT'S BEEN A LONG ROAD.

DID YOU REALLY THINK I WOULDN'T BRING A GUN OF MY OWN?

SO STUPID, BIG BROTHER.

!!

TSU (DRIP)

I CAN'T DIE JUST YET...!

ZURU (SLUMP)

NO...! DAMMIT!

I CAN'T GIVE UP NOW...!

WELL, EIJI...

ZA

ZA

ZA (KZZT)

WHAT'S YOUR WISH NOW?

TEN YEARS AGO, YOU WISHED TO PROTECT YOUR SISTER.

WHAT'LL IT BE THIS TIME?

PLEASE.

THAT'S THE ONLY THING THAT CAN STAND UP TO SENA'S DOMINATOR...

GIVE ME DOMINATOR ONE MORE TIME, DAISY...!

OOOO (WHOOSH)

SIGH.

.....IS IT? I WONDER.

ZA (KZZZT)

ZA

DAISY!

LET ME TELL YOU SOME-THING, EIJI.

YOU SIBLINGS WERE MY FIRST ASSIGNMENT, AND AS FOR YOUR WISHES ....

I'M AN INTERFACE CREATED BY GENNAI TO HELP PEOPLE ACHIEVE HAPPINESS.

ONE WAY OR ANOTHER.

AND EIJI, YOU MADE A WISH NOT FOR YOURSELF, BUT FOR SENA.

SENA NEARLY DESTROYED THE WORLD.

ZA

AND...

...HOW'D THAT TURN OUT?

ZA (KZZT)

ZA

DID YOUR WISH COME TRUE, EIJI? DID YOU FIND HAPPINESS?

IS SENA HAPPY?

.....

NO. OF COURSE ...

...IT WOULDN'T.

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

WOULDN'T LETTING IT ALL END HERE...

...MAKE BOTH OF YOU HAPPY?

HOW DO I EXPLAIN IT? THIS FEELING ...

IS IT... "FEAR," PERHAPS?

AT FIRST, I THOUGHT YOUR WISHES WERE INTER-ESTING.

BUT NOW...

WHEN YOUR WISH CLASHES WITH SENA'S...

ZA

ZA

IT'S TRUE... I NEVER SHOULD'VE MADE THAT WISH TEN YEARS AGO.

... WHAT LIES BEYOND... COULD VERY WELL BE MISFORTUNE AND SORROW.

..... BUT...

BUT WHAT?

EVEN IF I WERE TO DIE AND COME BACK TO LIFE TEN TIMES...

...I STILL WISH TO PROTECT SENA.

WRONG OR NOT ...

...THAT'S WHO I AM!

I'VE ONLY GOT ONE WISH!

I NEVER CHANGE.

"I WISH FOR THE POWER TO STOP SENA!"

...CAN REACH HER.

I ONLY HOPE YOUR WISH...

I KNOW IT WILL!

BACHI (CRACKLE)

"CUT THE CONNECTION WITH THE PULSE LINES!"

WHY'S IT IN MY HAND ...!?

A NEW GUN ...!?

ORDER!

DOTTAA (SPLASH) ドッサァ

EIJI!

DON'T DO IT, EIJI-SAMA. THAT GUN IS PROBABLY .....!

WHAT SENA-SAMA WANTS IS...!

CHA (CHAK)

!!?

...TO KILL HER, EIJI-SAMA !!!!!!

SHE WANTS YOU...

(WHOOSH)

ORDER!

"SHOOT ME DEAD, BIG BROTHER"!

BA (DIVE)

DO (BANG)

REBIRTH FIRE!!!!

UGH...

DOSHAA (THUD)

ドシャ

アー!?

SENA !!?!!?

(WHOOSH)

WHAT'S THE BIG IDEA...!?

AH HA...

AH HA HA HA HA.

FINALLY CAUGHT ON? YOU'RE SUCH A BLOCK-HEAD.

I'M HERE TO FIX EVERYTHING THAT'S GONE WRONG!

I'M THE ORIGINAL DESTROYER OF THIS WORLD, AFTER ALL!

NOW THAT I'VE GOT DOMINATOR BACK...

...I'M GOING TO HAVE YOU KILL ME, BIG BROTHER!

AND THEN YOU...

...WILL BE THE WORLD'S HERO!

Subject 52:END

BIG
ORDER

SENA-SAMA'S GOAL IS TO MAKE YOU KILL HER YOURSELF, EIJI-SAMA ...!

ZABA (SPLASH)

UGH... EIJI!

...ME TO KILL HER...!?

SHE WANTS .....

"LOAD THE NEXT ROUND"!

ORDER!

TCH.

OH NO...!

DON

BIND DOMINATOR ZERO!!!

ORDER!!!

"KILL ME"!!!

DON (BAM)

BIND DOMINATOR!!!

ORDER!!!

"DON'T MAKE ME KILL YOU"!!!

GYUO (FWOOSH)

O (WHOOSH)

(WHOOSH)

Subject 53: "Hero"
Place: Earth

SENA'S ANCHOR IS IN ME.....!

DOSUU (PIERCE)

ドスッ!!

GUH...

AS LONG AS MY OWN ANCHOR IS EMBEDDED IN SENA...!

BUT I MADE IT JUST IN TIME!

I DIDN'T ACCOUNT FOR THAT...

...I SEE. SO DAISY IS STILL OPERA-TIONAL, THEN?

HOW-EVER...!

STOP THIS, SENA!

WHY? WHY'RE YOU DOING ALL THIS ...?

!?

ZUBU (SHIFT)

ZUBUBU ズゥゥ…

SHIT. IS HER POWER TO CONTROL STRONGER THAN MINE ……!?

ZUBU ズゥ

HER ANCHOR'S DRIVING DEEPER …!?

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

I NEVER WANTED TO HAVE TO COME CLEAN LIKE THIS.

…I WAS PLANNING TO JUST DIE QUIETLY.

HF...

WHAT...

...ARE YOU SAYING?

HF.

ZU (SWIRL)

ZU

ZU

ZU

ZU

ZU

ZU

YOU PROTECTED ME FOR TEN YEARS, BIG BROTHER...

...AND FOR TEN YEARS, I WAS A TERRIBLE LITTLE SISTER WHO CAUSED YOU NOTHING BUT PAIN.

BUT YOU CAN'T GO ON LIVING IN ANGUISH FOREVER, BIG BROTHER!

YOU HAVE TO KILL ME AND PROUDLY CLAIM YOUR STATUS AS A HERO!

OOOO (WHOOSH)

SO I DECIDED TO MAKE PEOPLE HATE ME.

THEN, NEAR MT. HOUEI ...

Mt. Fuji

Mt. Houei

AGAIN AND AGAIN, I KEPT DOING EVERYTHING IN MY POWER TO MAKE YOU KILL ME...

BACK IN HEIJOUKYOU, AT THE GATE, I STABBED YOU WHEN I KNEW RIN WAS WATCHING.

IT WAS ALL...

...TO TURN YOU INTO A HERO, BIG BROTHER!

REMEMBER FATHER'S QUESTION TO YOU?

EVEN IF YOU COULD SAVE ME, WHAT THEN? WHAT WOULD YOU DO...?

THERE'D BE NO PLACE IN THE WORLD FOR YOU AFTER THAT...!

KNOWING YOU COVERED FOR ME FOR TEN YEARS.....

DID YOU REALLY THINK THAT'D MAKE ME HAPPY?

.....

WELL, I.....

MAKING EIJI-SAMA KILL YOU WILL JUST CAUSE HIM MORE SUFFERING!

GU (STRAIN)

BUT LISTEN ...!

HE'LL FORGET.

HMPH.

TIME HEALS ALL.

ZA (FSSHH)
ZA
SENA, YOU...
GIVE IT TEN, TWENTY, THIRTY YEARS...
THE DAY WILL COME WHEN YOU'LL ADMIT IT WAS NECESSARY.
FOR ME...?
...SENA TOOK IT UPON HERSELF TO SET ME UP AS A HERO
.....
ZA
THERE'S NO PLACE LEFT FOR ME IN THE WORLD, SO...

SHE MADE HERSELF THE VILLAIN SO I CAN KILL HER. THAT'S HOW SHE'S GONNA COVER FOR ME...

CHA (CHAK)

JUST LIKE WHEN I FOOLED MYSELF IN ORDER TO PROTECT HER...

IYO.

RIN!!

KYAAAH.

DOZAN (CRASH)

ENOUGH OF THIS.

ONCE MORE!!

OO (WHOOSH)

NOW ...!

S-STOP IT, SENA !!!

NO. I CAN'T STOP HER...

SENA'S ABILITY IS STRONGER...!

GU (PRESS)

GU

ORDER !!!

IT'S TIME TO END IT!!

DON'T DO IT !!!

"AND FORGET ABOUT ME, BIG BROTHER"!

"KILL ME."

DON (BANG)

O (WHOOSH)

GOOOOOO (FWOOSH)

!?

THE PULSE LINES STOPPED MOVING ...?

DOES THAT MEAN ...?

SHIN (SILENT)

THAT CAN'T BE...!

GARA (CRUMBLE)

HA-HA.

ALL RIGHT. EIJI-SAMA REALLY DID IT...!!

THAT CAN'T BE.

ﾅﾅﾅﾅ

FRAN! YOU...!

YORO (SWAY)

JO...

HUH !?

.....

IT WASN'T ABOUT THEM!

HAH. SERVES YOU RIGHT ...!

YOU REALLY THOUGHT THAT CRAZY GIRL WOULD REVIVE YOUR WIFE AND KIDS?

I JUST NEEDED THAT GIRL TO LIVE...

WHAT KIND OF MERCENARY HAS NO ONE TO PROTECT ...?

WHAT KIND OF KNIGHT?

ZUN (THUD)

!

WHAT THE...!?

ZU (SWIRL) ZU ZU

ズ ズ ズ..

YOU...

DO (CRASH) DO DO DO DO

ドド ドド

!?

N-NWAH-HHHHHH !!?

DO

ドド

ZABA (SPLASH)

ザバ

TCH.

SHIT. I'M REALLY SCREWED NOW!

GUESS I SHOULDN'T HAVE FOLLOWED THAT GIRL AFTER ALL...

SENAAAAAAAAA!

DO

DO

DO

DO

NOOOOOO!!!

GET OUTTA HERE... BIG BROTHER.

THIS PLACE IS FALLING APART.

KOFU (COUGH)

UH...

BOTA (GUSH)

BOTA

BOTA

I'M THE ONE WHO SUMMONED "GOD," SO NOW THAT I'M DONE FOR...

...NOW THAT THE ONE WHO WISHED FOR THIS BEING IS DYING...

DO

DO

DO

DOSHU (RIP)

I COULD NEVER FORGET YOU!!!

NO WAY I COULD EVER OBEY AN ORDER LIKE THAT!

WHAT'RE YOU...!?

I REJECT YOUR CON-TROL!

I WON'T ABANDON YOU, AND I WON'T FORGET ABOUT YOU!

HOW COULD I FORGET...

...SOMEONE I LOVE?

BAN (BAM)

THERE'S STILL A WAY!

!?

I..... WAS WRONG.

BIG BROTHER ...!!!

TAKE ALL THE ENERGY IN THIS CRUM-BLING "GOD"...

...AND LET MY DOMINATOR CONTROL IT VIA THIS RING!!!

IT'S TIME TO CREATE SOME HAPPINESS OUT OF ALL THIS MISERY...!!

(WHOOSH)

DAISY!!!

"RELEASE THE LIMITER KEEPING DOMINATOR AT 1/10,000 OF ITS POWER" !!!!!!

GOOOOO (FWOOSH)

EIJI'S DOMINATOR ...

...JUST MIGHT SAVE THE WORLD.

EIJI!!!

IT WON'T WORK, EIJI-SAMA !!!

ZAN (SPLASH)

EVEN WITH DOMINATOR UNINHIBITED, YOU CAN'T POSSIBLY CONTROL "GOD"...!

!

NO, THAT'S NOT IT.

SENA NEARLY CAUSED IT TO DESTROY THE WORLD.

DOMINATOR DID RUN RAMPANT TEN YEARS AGO.

THE PULSE LINES ARE BECOMING HIS TERRITORY... BUT HOW!? I THOUGHT THE POWER WAS RUNNING WILD!?

(WHOOSH)

HOWEVER... WHO WAS IT WHO STOPPED ALL THAT RAMPAGING ENERGY?

WHO STOLE DOMINATOR AND MANAGED TO CONTROL IT...?

(KZZT) ZA

ZA...

EIJI WASN'T THE ONLY ONE WITH FALSE MEMORIES. EVERYONE ELSE REMEMBERED INCORRECTLY TOO.

EIJI'S DOMINATOR IS FULL OF POSSIBILITIES.

YOU MEAN...?

ゴゴゴ

STOP THIS...BIG BROTHER!

THIS HEAVY BURDEN... ISN'T SOMETHING YOUR BODY CAN TAKE...!

EIJI WANTED TO KEEP THE TRUTH HIDDEN, SO I HAD NO CHOICE BUT TO OBEY...

GUH...

WHEN YOU SAID YOU WERE OKAY WITH DYING...

...THAT WAS A LIE, YEAH?

...HEY, SENA.

ゴゴ

OF COURSE YOU WOULD.

AH.....

WOULDN'T YOU PREFER A WORLD WHERE WE CAN LIVE TOGETHER ...?

SO BELIEVE IN YOUR BIG BROTHER.

MY "WISH" IS TO LIVE WITH YOU.

SENA.

OOOO (WHOOSH)

WHAT'S YOUR WISH?

I...

...WANT TO LIVE WITH YOU TOO, BIG BROTHER.

KA (FLASH)

"GOD: GRANT OUR WISH" !!! !!!

ORDER!

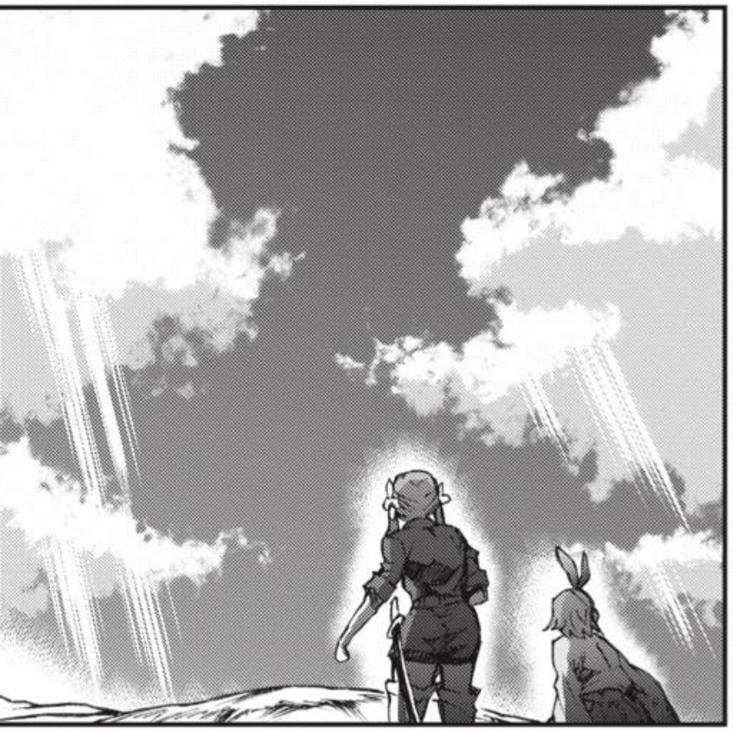
YES.

TEN YEARS AGO, EIJI SAVED THE WORLD.

EIJIIII!!!

EI...

(WHOOSH)








THAT IDIOT.



KATA (CLAK)

FROM THE VERY START...

...HE WAS A TRUE HERO.

Subject 53: END

Epilogue: "All The Best, Everyone"
Place: Amakusa

THREE YEARS LATER

ZA (SKRITCH)

SOMEWHERE IN AMAKUSA CITY

GASHA (CLAK)

GASHA

WHADDAYA SAY, MISS? WE'VE GOT DEALS ON FISH!

FRESH FISH

WEL-COME.

WEL-COME.

FRESH FISH

BIG SALE

WAIT FOR ME, MAMA!

COME NOW, SHIN-CHAN. THE BUS IS ABOUT TO LEAVE.

.....HMPH.

A WORLD WITHOUT ABILITY USERS...

TA (TMP) TA

Darn it, Rin!

How long do you expect us to wait for you!?

PI (BEEP)

GOOD TO SEE SIGNS OF LIFE RETURN-ING...

...IN THIS TOWN.

CALM DOWN, IYO.

GASHA ガッチャ

GASHA ガッチャ

Excuses!

I CAN'T HELP IT. HAVEN'T BEEN BACK TO THIS TOWN IN A WHILE.....

SIGNS: EIJI HOSHIMIYA

EIJI HOSHIMIYA

PRAISE HIS NAME!!

ON THAT DAY, THREE YEARS AGO...

MEMORIAL MEETING FOR EIJI-SAMA THE SAVIOR

HATORI

IF YOU SEE THIS MAN, CALL 110!!

NOTE: 110 IS JAPAN'S 911.

...DISAPPEARED WITH A FLASH INTO THE GATE.

PRAISE HIS NAME!!

EIJI AND SENA...

IN REACTION TO THE GATE CLOSING, ALL ORDERS WORLDWIDE LOST THEIR ABILITIES.

"GOD" AND THE PULSE LINES VANISHED INTO THE GATE TOO.

ガッチャ
GACCHA

ガッチャ (CLAK)
GACCHA (CLAK)

A DEAD HERO? I CAN'T ACCEPT THAT!

SOME PEOPLE WORSHIPPED EIJI AS THE HERO WHO SAVED THE WORLD...

WHAT A JOKE!

THAT'S WHY I'VE BEEN SCOURING THE GLOBE FOR THREE YEARS...!

I WANNA SEE EIJI AGAIN...!

I JUST KNOW EIJI IS STILL ALIVE...!

YEAH!

Call in progress:
Iyo

Right. We won't let Eiji-sama be forgotten like that!

TIME TO DO THIS, RIN.

IT'S TIME TO SAVE EIJI AND SENA!

I'M HERE TO BRING YOU THE REST OF THE WAY.

IYO!

SO PRE... I MEAN ...

...YOUR HAIR'S GROWN.

IT'S BEEN QUITE SOME TIME, RIN.

ZAWA (FWOOSH)

TCH.

ALMOST SLIPPED AND ADMITTED IT.....

SHE REALLY DID GET PRETTY ...

.....

IYO HAD BEEN TRAINING HARD TO MAKE UP FOR LOSING HER POWER, AND SHE DIVINED THIS LOCATION.

SO WE ALL GATHERED ...

...ON A CERTAIN HOLY MOUN-TAIN.

THE COLONEL'S HERE TOO.

LET'S GET STARTED!

HEYYY.

YO, YOU'RE LATE.

GET OVER HERE, YOU TWO!

IF WE'RE TO BELIEVE IYO'S DIVINATION, THEN THIS SPOT HERE TODAY IS WHERE AND WHEN THE BARRIER BETWEEN THE TWO WORLDS IS WEAKEST.

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

BY COMBINING THE MACHINERY RIN'S GATHERED FOR US...

...WITH THIS MINI COIL FROM THE HOSHIMIYA LAB RUINS, WE CAN CONNECT TO THE SPIRIT WORLD.

HMPH.

I'M NOT THE TYPE TO LET OUR FRIEND VANISH WITHOUT SETTLING THINGS ONCE AND FOR ALL.

EVEN YOU...? YOU'RE SURE IN A HELPFUL MOOD.

THE ODDS OF EIJI FALLING OUT OF THE SKY AREN'T GREAT.

HOW-EVER...

AND HERE I AM, JUST WORRIED ABOUT HIM...

AS FRANK AS EVER, COLONEL.

WHOA.

H-HEY, YOU'RE GONNA JINX US!

MY PREDICTIONS NOW AREN'T 100% ACCURATE, SO IT'S NOT A SURE THING, BUT STILL...

EVEN SO...

ZAN (STAND)

...WE STILL GOTTA TRY!

YEAH!

BECAUSE OUR "WISH" IS TO SAVE EIJI AND SENA!

OOOOO (WHOOSH)

BECAUSE HE AND I HAVE AN EVERLASTING BOND.

HEY, RIN. IF EIJI-SAMA DOES RETURN TO US, I WON'T BE HANDING HIM OVER TO YOU.

I'LL BE TAKING EIJI FOR MYSELF.

HUH? RIGHT BACK AT YA!

OOOOOO

OOOO

INDEED.

WE STILL DON'T KNOW...

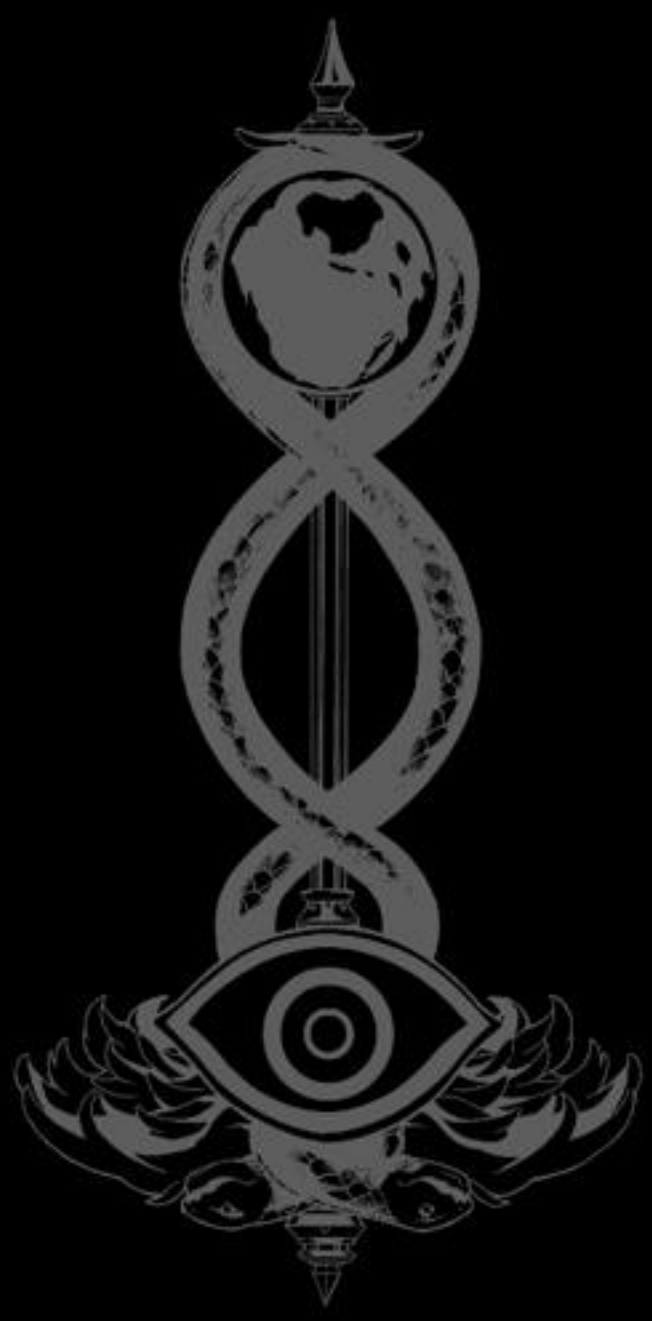
...WHAT THE FUTURE HOLDS!




I'M GLAD I GOT TO SEE THIS THROUGH TO THE END...
ZA (KZZT) ZA
.....HUMANS SURE ARE INTERESTING.
THE "WISHES" OF HUMANITY...
MAY THEY BRING HAPPINESS TO ALL.
ZA



THE END







Translation: Caleb Cook • Lettering: Phil Christie

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, or persons, living or dead, is coincidental.

BIG ORDER Volume 10
© Sakae ESUNO 2016

First published in Japan in 2016 by KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged with KADOKAWA CORPORATION, Tokyo
through Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., Tokyo.

English translation © 2018 by Yen Press, LLC

Yen Press, LLC supports the right to free expression and the value of copyright. The purpose of copyright is to encourage writers and artists to produce the creative works that enrich our culture.

The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book without permission is a theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like permission to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), please contact the publisher. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Yen Press
1290 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10104

Visit us at yenpress.com
facebook.com/yenpress
twitter.com/yenpress
yenpress.tumblr.com
instagram.com/yenpress

First Yen Press eBook Edition: June 2018

Yen Press is an imprint of Yen Press, LLC.
The Yen Press name and logo are trademarks of Yen Press, LLC.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

Library of Congress Control Number: 2016958579

ISBN: 978-1-9753-5421-3 (ebook)